



GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 11

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Eat Meat

Fu Wei, Shi Yan, and the others gathered at the control center of the battleship.

A bright, big mirror showed the star area around. The walls of this control center had many marks. Each of them had fiercely surging energy. Fu Wei was calmly looking at the bright mirror. Her fingers shot out light beams from time to time.

Slowly, a black shark battleship emerged in the mirror. It was right ahead of them, hiding like a shark waiting for its prey.

Fu Wei's blue eyes sparkled with a brutal light. A light beam shot out from her palm, hitting a lozenge imprint.

The imprint became brilliantly dazzling.

Almost one million divine crystals at the bottom of the battleship released their turbulently abundant energy at the same time. Blinding light fired from a long pole that looked like a drill bit in the front of the ship. A formidable light grumbly shot out.

The light column moved like a mad dragon, bringing along endless torrential energy. Just like a meteor chasing after the moon, it hit the black shark battleship violently.

Boom!

The dim galaxy was suddenly illuminated brilliantly. The black shark battleship exploded at the moment of the impact.

At that moment, the black shark battleship was fragmented and the dozens of warriors on the ship died in that crazy flow of energy. Many members of the Ghost Mark Clan were wounded and bleeding. They evacuated from the shattered battleship. Some of them risked their lives and flew towards the massive battleship.

Boom!

Countless barriers and restrictions of the big battleship were

activated. A massive halo covered the entire battleship. While bombarding the warriors flying around, Fu Wei's gigantic battleships wantonly moved like a huge monster.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. Seeing the black shark battleship get shot down in just a blink of an eye, he now knew how terrifying the power of Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleship was.

That crystal artillery used divine crystals as the source of energy. It absorbed energy from millions of divine crystals to create a light column that blasted and crushed the black shark battleship.

It was evident that Potion and Tool Pavilion had varied and profound applications of divine crystals. They could use them to load the crystal artillery to break anything. This kind of powerful lethality was enough to crush even a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The engine hissed loudly inside the battleship as if the artillery was reloading.

The Ghost Mark warriors scattered to everywhere and then risked their lives by attacking the light curtain on the battleship directly.

That halo was created by dozens of barriers and restrictions, which provided the ship with a tremendous defensive ability. More than ten Ghost Mark warriors at King God Realm and Original God Realm urged their powers Upanishad. Fire, Ice, Storm, and Thunderbolts showered on the light curtain protecting the ship.

The light curtain distorted a little, but it wasn't broken. Beautiful sparks were sent into outer space like brilliant fireworks that touched people's souls.

Shi Yan flew out quietly from the control center, descending on the deck.

He sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes slightly. His Soul

Consciousness extended like magical tentacles. They found the broken bodies of the Ghost Mark warriors, pulling them near the light curtain of the battleship.

After a while, he got more than ten pieces of broken bodies hovering above the light curtain. The Essence Qi of these flesh bodies hadn't vanished yet.

Flows of murky energy with negative moods from those bodies pierced through the light curtain and flooded Shi Yan's acupuncture points.

The vortexes inside his seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points started to revolve. They dragged the Essence Qi of the dead and refined it.

Shi Yan grinned, laughing evilly. His laughter was cruel and yet happy. His acupuncture points were taking in the Essence Qi of more than ten dead bodies of the Ghost Mark warriors. This wonderful feeling made him smile. The murderous intention in his heart was heating up. He felt his blood boiling.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo observed the commotion. They followed him flying out of the control center. They now surrounded him to protect him.

They saw that more than ten broken bodies hovering above the light curtain were dried as if the water and blood inside were all sucked out. Fei Lan's team was shaken. They had a high expectation this time.

They knew this time that they would be able to eat meat.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Shockwaves created by the powers Upanishads of the Ghost Mark warriors continually struck the protective halo like an unceasing thunderstorm.

The magical light curtain rippled like water, shielding the battleship from all kinds of attack. In outer space, it sparkled

radiantly like a beautiful star, sending sparks everywhere.

"Kill!"

From the deck of the battleship, several hundred guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion shouted and flew out.

Instantaneously, powers Upanishads including Metal, Lightning, Ice and Mist, gusts of Wind, Sound, and Light appeared. Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards stayed inside the protective halo and struck their attacks through the halo, aiming at the Ghost Mark warriors outside the halo.

Shortly after, five or six Ghost Mark warriors were shot down. They swayed like willow catkin and fell on the barrier.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He stooped and smiled, pulling the void.

The shattered bodies of the Ghost Mark warriors gathered on the light curtain above Shi Yan's head. Their blood had dyed a large area of the light curtain. The thick scent of blood seemed to diffuse through the curtain, nauseating people.

Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards didn't know why Shi Yan wanted to gather the dead bodies. They didn't bother with his commotion anyway and just hid under the protective halo and attacked others.

The light curtain of Fu Wei's battleship was made of a combination of different barriers and restrictions. It had a terrific defensive ability. If they wanted to attack this battleship, they had to break this protective halo first.

At the same time, Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards were able to stay inside the protected area and attack the others. This kind of protection didn't stop their attacks, anyway.

Among hundreds of Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards, most of them were at King God Realm and Original God Realm. There were also a few Ethereal God Realm experts.

When they had attacked with all their abilities, powers Upanishads exploded like a thunderstorm in the void. Lightning strikes blasted. Icy snowstorms twirled. They were wreaking havoc above the protective halo, shading the sunbeam and moonlight.

Shi Yan and Fei Lan's team hadn't done anything yet. They sat quietly on the deck, watching the magnificent fireworks blooming out there above the light curtain. Looking at the dead Ghost Mark warriors, they were enjoying the absorption of thick Essence Qi. They were indeed so happy.

Pieces of broken bodies fell on the light curtain above Shi Yan's head. There were around twenty pieces this time. Blood puddled and dripped, creating an area of blood red light that people could not turn their eyes from.

Squinting and pressing down negative moods in his body, Shi Yan's acupuncture points were madly filtering and refining Essence Qi. Gradually, he felt his acupuncture points get swollen and aching. It was a sign of the brimming energy.

Grinning fiendishly, he stooped and spoke to Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. "We've harvested big this time!"

The other three nodded eagerly.

Rumble! Rumble!

The energy of countless divine crystals was released one more time. The battleship moving at breakneck speed accelerated again. It flew like a crazy monster, heading in a direction.

Layers of light curtain expanded and covered the entire battleships. At this moment, it became tough and sharp that it could break everything.

The wrecked black shark battleship hovering in its way was smashed into debris or even powder if impacted directly with Fu Wei's battleship.

Fu Wei's battleship was excellent in both defending and attacking with divine crystals as the fountain of energy. Its lethality was terrifying, indeed.

Shi Yan didn't dare to underestimate this battleship's competence anymore. He believed that if he got shot by such crystal artillery, his God Body would burst into pieces.

Although the battleship was moving fast and fiercely, Fu Wei didn't look comfortable in the control center. She frowned as she had a premonition that the next wave of Mad Shark battleships would be more furious.

"It's not easy to deal with Du Lin," An Yun sounded serious. "The Mad Shark Fleet has forty-nine battleships. Although their defensive ability isn't good, their speed is incredible. I think while we had a fight over there, they have formulated a new plan already."

Fu Wei nodded. She sounded calm as usual. "I understand."

"Young Elder, you have used her soul to lock the battleship and control the attacking formations of the battleship. You've consumed a lot of soul energy, and you can't do that for a long time, right?" asked An Yun.

Fu Wei gave a forced smile. "It's alright. I'm going to adjust my condition."

While talking, she took out refreshing green pellets and swallowed. Her pale cheeks had some colors afterward.

This excellent defensive and attacking battleship had thousands of formations, imprints, and restrictions that needed the soul energy to control. It wasn't an easy task, though. When Fu Wei controlled the battleship, she was like the brain of this ship as she had to manage all details of this massive ship. She had to consume her soul energy every minute.

Their quick triumph this time was thanks to her concentrated

control. However, it cost her soul energy.

If the combat became fiercer, each wisp of her Soul Consciousness had to create a connection with the barriers, imprints, and restrictions. When that happened, her soul energy would be consumed massively.

"Did they get out there?" After Fu Wei had swallowed the pellets, she took a short period to digest. When her energy was restored a little bit, she had time to ask about Shi Yan's team.

An Yun nodded with an odd countenance. "They have soon left to the deck."

Fu Wei was surprised. "He joined the combat?"

"No," An Yun's face became even stranger. "We don't know why he gathered the bodies of our enemies and looked at them from under the light curtain. I don't know what he had done."

Fu Wei became skeptical. She didn't know what Shi Yan was doing. Pondering for a while, she said begrudgingly. "Never mind them. They know what to do. If they agree to stay, I think they won't have any bad intention towards us."

"Yes. I think they have some plans, but they won't harm us," nodded An Yun.

Fu Wei didn't say more. She concentrated on the bright mirror to observe and arrange for the next attack wave of the Mad Shark.

She understood clearly that the next wave wouldn't be as easy as this time. She knew how excellent Du Lin was. It wasn't going to be easy to defend the next time then.

Chapter 1002: The Blood Blade Comes Out of its Sheath

Shi Yan shot up from his seat. His eyes were blood-red while murderous auras in his body soared up into the sky.

Lifted up his head to look at the light curtain dyed in the red hue of blood, Shi Yan grinned and spoke to Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo, "Let's get out there."

The other three nodded quietly.

This group of four pierced through the protective halo like four electric beams and headed towards the Ghost Mark warriors lagging behind.

More than ten warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan were struck helter-skelter. After the gigantic battleship had smashed their battleship and flew away quickly, they were left behind.

At this moment, Shi Yan's group of four was aiming at those left warriors.

While his thought was flickering, a desolate aura diffused from Shi Yan.

Blood floating in outer space gathered, creating a blood sea. The thick scent of blood permeated the place. Shi Yan immersed in that blood sea, his eyes blood-red and his face icy cold.

The divine ability of Death power Upanishad – the Blood Soul Sea!

The blood sea extended, covering each of the remaining Ghost Mark warriors. Negative moods including despair, fear, bloodthirstiness, and brutality flooded their minds violently. Shortly after, the Ghost Mark warriors went crazy. They started to attack anybody near them.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo hunted them down like three brutal

dragons. They activated their powers Upanishads and started to kill those Ghost Mark warriors.

In that group of Ghost Mark warriors, there were only two Ethereal God Realm experts. One was at Second Sky and the other was at First Sky. Fei Lan released her Ethereal Extent, which was a space of erosive energy, to roll the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert who was damaged by Potion and Tool Pavilion's guard.

Staying in a block of the darkness as thick as ink, Leona eyed the other First Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior. Leona disappeared as if she had completely mixed with the dark. She then sent darkness to the other's soul.

Ka Tuo urged his Chaos power Upanishad. With his body as the eye, he created a formidably horrifying meat-grinder field, which attracted the Ghost Mark warriors.

Shi Yan controlled the Blood Soul Sea and made it move towards Ka Tuo, shrouding all the warriors attracted by Ka Tuo's chaotic, twisted energy.

Painful screeching arose from the Ghost Mark warriors. They were filled with despair and fear as if they were watching the most terrible things in their lives. Their screams rose the hair on people's napes. Usually, the scream came together with a person's death.

His God Body disappeared in the Blood Soul Sea while his soul altar was sent out. The black hole in his soul altar had swallowed the others' souls discreetly.

The massive battleship halted.

An Yun discolored, crying in fear. "They got out there and hunted down the others!"

Fu Wei gritted her teeth and scolded in a low voice. "Impulsive!"

"They will affect our progress. Du Lin will have more time to arrange his formation to block us!" An Yun paled. "Damn! They didn't notify us. They act so rashly. So what if they can kill all of them? We'll still be trapped!"

Fu Wei nodded. "They will affect our progress for sure."

"Young Elder!" An Yun took a deep breath, speaking resolutely. "We can't wait for them. We have to break their besiege at our max speed. If we delay, bad things will happen!"

Fu Wei furrowed her bold brows. She touched the bright mirror floating above her head. The mirror then showed a dark area and a blood sea. They couldn't see Shi Yan, Ka Tuo, and Leona. They only saw Fei Lan who was using her Corrosion power Upanishad to attack one Ghost Mark expert.

Watching for a while, Fu Wei was frightened. She shouted, "Look!"

An Yun looked at the mirror. She was shocked immediately. "They... They attacked too fast!"

There was around twenty Ghost Mark warriors remained. Most of them were at Original God Realm. Even if Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards wanted to kill them, they couldn't do it in a short time.

However, the four of Shi Yan's group had killed half of the Ghost Mark warriors shortly after they had left the battleship. The remaining warriors inside the blood sea were all crazy as they were killing each other.

At this speed, perhaps all of the Ghost Mark warriors would be killed all in just a short time.

This frightened Fu Wei and An Yun. They were fearful because of the fighting competence of Shi Yan's group.

Only four warriors...

Fu Wei was baffled. She pondered for a while and then ordered. "We'll wait fifteen minutes for them. When the time's up and they haven't returned, we will leave."

An Yun was surprised. She nodded, "Their fighting competencies are so frightening. They... They are powerful individuals, indeed. It's a waste to leave them."

She was surprised a lot seeing the performance of Shi Yan's team. She immediately wanted to change her plan.

From the bright mirror, Fu Wei and An Yun could see the Ghost Mark warriors get killed one after another. Their God Bodies exploded in the blood sea. They were screaming and roaring. Gradually, they forgot who they were. Their vitality was taken away and their bodies dried up in the end.

Inside the darkness, Leona was invisible. The First Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, her opponent, was perplexed. His eyes turned pitch black as if darkness had covered his brain. He appeared so painful and pathetic.

The Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert didn't know why his energy was decreased unceasingly. The corrosive energy had seeped into his body. He was soon killed.

Fu Wei and An Yun watched everything in silence. They became aghast. Sometimes they stooped and cried in fear.

"Who... Who are they?" After a while, An Yun whispered as if she was sleep talking. "The four of them all have the capacity to challenge warriors whose realms are higher than theirs. Their individual powers Upanishads are so special. They aren't popular, indeed. Their fighting competencies are enough to kill warriors at higher realms! Oh my God, who are they? Aliens?"

Fu Wei was also bewildered. "Their powers Upanishads are evil and rare. Their energy is abundant and much more than people at the same realm. They can resist higher-realm warriors, indeed!"

The powers Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were cultivating were extremely rare. They were the inheritances of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. The cultivating path they followed was an extreme, cruel one. People would never tolerate their powers. Once they used their powers, if their opponents didn't know about those special powers Upanishad, they would be killed shortly.

In just a blink, the last scream arose on that battle site, putting an end on this combat.

More than twenty Ghost Mark warriors were killed. No one escaped. Their God Bodies and Soul Altars were annihilated, leaving nothing behind.

Shi Yan's eyes were garnet. At this moment, he emerged from the blood sea. Glancing at the big battleship behind, he adjusted his condition.

Shortly after, his eyes resumed their normal colors. The brutal, evil aura was still being diffused from his body. After circulating his energy for several rounds, he flew towards the battleship.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were covered in blood. They looked like three savage beasts, closely following behind Shi Yan.

The light curtain of the battleship slightly shrank. Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion stood on the deck, looking at the four of them with complicated countenances.

The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion all felt a vague fear looking at them. They were shocked, watching their performance. When the four of them landed on the deck, Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors couldn't help but step back and maintain a distance from them.

Fu Wei walked to them from the control center. Her blue eyes had rippling light as she studied the four of them. "Thank you for your labor."

An Yun stood by her, discreetly gathering her energy. She was cautious as she was afraid that the other four who had been excitedly killing the enemies, would have some wild commotion.

"You don't look good," Shi Yan glanced at her, frowning. "You must be drained controlling this big battleship. But it's okay. Later on, I'll help you."

Fu Wei and An Yun were bewildered.

Shi Yan walked towards his cultivating room inside the battleship and didn't bother to explain more. Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo followed him silently. Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors along the way would instinctively step aside to make their way.

Shortly after, Shi Yan's team had disappeared into the battleship and from Fu Wei and An Yun's sight.

Feng An emerged from nowhere. He lowered his voice, talking with a complicated visage. "This man is absolutely not a fish in the stagnant pond."

Fu Wei and An Yun nodded, totally agreeing with him.

"Young Elder, he said he would help you. What does he mean?" An Yun was still baffled, asking.

Shaking her head, Fu Wei didn't understand his intention, either. "I don't know what he meant."

"I think Du Lin didn't know about this kind of assistance on our battleship." An Yun recalled something, her eyes glittering. "Perhaps we can escape this time."

Fu Wei relaxed and nodded. "Yeah, maybe we can resist until Uncle Duo comes."

Everybody was cheered up.

Deep in the sea of stars.

Black and blue shark battleships hovered, aligning in a conical formation. They blockaded one of the most critical checkpoints of this galaxy.

Du Lin was smiling gently on the leading battleship as he was listening to his subordinate's report. Sometimes, he nodded.

It seemed that the wrecked battleship with its several hundred dead warriors couldn't affect his mood. He was still calm and he smiled as usual. "Resolute and cruel enough. Not bad. Not bad. Seems like she doesn't mind our old relationship."

"Young Master," hissed a man kneeling in front of him.

Waving his hands to indicate that he knew it, Du Lin said, "Don't worry. I know what to do. The Canon is our top priority this time. I know how to solve this."

The other didn't say more.

"Be prepared," Du Lin took a deep breath. The smile on his face ceased. "There are six hours left. After six hours, they will be arriving here. Haha, at that time, what they have to face isn't only one battleship. It's our whole Mad Shark Fleet!"

The other warriors replied to him. Their enthusiastic shouts echoed from each battleship like loud thunderclaps.

Chapter 1003: Better Not to Meet

Inside the battleship.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo sat neatly while the blood lines from Shi Yan's body connected the other three. Energy fluctuated like a flowing river and seeped into their bodies.

The magical energy in this cultivating room was so thick that it couldn't vanish quickly. The blood marks on the forehead of Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were like eyes that sparkled in blood-red halo. Through this mark, they collected abundant and pure energy from Shi Yan. It gave a tonic to each of their soul altars and filled their Essence Qi Ancient Tree.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming were observing them from the other side of the room with surprised faces.

He didn't ask Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming to leave when he transmitted the energy to the other three. He wanted the two of them to witness something magical in this world.

Xuan Ming was struck. He studied the four of them while a storm arose in his heart. This was the first time he saw the energy transmission. And the originator was Shi Yan!

He didn't know why Shi Yan's body could endure such dominant energy fluctuations. This situation was beyond his knowledge, giving him a new cognition of power.

Zuo Shi's small face was filled with surprise. Her line of sight fixed on Shi Yan. She said excitedly, "Hey old man, don't you think he's brilliant?"

Xuan Ming nodded bitterly, "Indeed."

Zuo Shi smiled.

After an unknown period, Leona and Ka Tuo woke up with excited faces. They looked at each other and saw happiness in their

faces.

What a big harvest!

Shi Yan and Fei Lan were still meditating in silence. Their breaths were long and steady. Shi Yan's body started to emit marvelous space energy.

It seemed like his soul was trying to create some kind of magical resonance. This kind of energy fluctuation frequency was dense. It seemed like he wanted to build a space channel.

Pallid air currents swirled around Fei Lan like spirit snakes. A discernible Ethereal Extent hovered behind her head. It made Fei Lan look like she was staying in a different space.

Leona studied Fei Lan. After a while, her eyes glistened.

"Precursor... she's about to break through, right?" Ka Tuo also sensed something. He licked his lips, asking with excitement.

Leona nodded. "Seems like she's breaking to the new realm. She's been at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm for a long time. This time, she had beaten up a higher-realm warrior, which advanced her power Upanishad. Well, as she has received enough energy, her breakthrough happened naturally and logically."

"It's so good," Ka Tuo was sincerely happy.

He respected Fei Lan a lot. If Fei Lan hadn't helped him a lot in Land of God Punishment, he would have been killed already.

Although Fei Lan had taken care of him because of his Inheritance, Ka Tuo did get good things. She allowed him to survive before he was strong enough to take care of himself. He had the chance to meet up with Shi Yan and reach his current realm. He appreciated Fei Lan a lot and he had considered her as his precursor whom he serves and respects.

In some aspect, Fei Lan's favor for him was much more significant than Shi Yan's.

Strange space energy fluctuated from Shi Yan's soul altar. Gradually under the others' gazes, Shi Yan disappeared from time to time as if his soul had escaped his body to some marvelous domain. Ka Tuo and Leona were surprised.

After a long time, Fei Lan woke up. She took a deep breath while her ten fingers diffused the pallid erosive air currents, which were wiggling like snake tongues.

Fei Lan was amazed looking at ten currents of erosive air. She smiled, getting up and looking at Shi Yan.

"You... Precursor, have you...?" asked Ka Tuo.

Fei Lan nodded and admitted it, "Thanks to his grace, I'm at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Seems like fighting and killing helps us understand our realms better."

Ka Tuo and Leona were baffled, but they were happy for her.

Xuan Ming observed quietly, listening to their conversation. He couldn't help but look at Shi Yan who was sitting still. Xuan Ming had a lot of complicated feelings.

His... His energy could help even Ethereal God Realm expert to break through?

Xuan Ming was astounded.

"Phew!"

Exhaling a murky blow of breath, Shi Yan woke up, still sitting. With a calm visage, he slowly got up. His eyes lay on Fei Lan when he said to her, "Congratulations!"

Fei Lan didn't say anything. She just smiled and then unnaturally bent her body slightly to show her gratitude to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan chuckled. He didn't say anything else and nodded to Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming before leaving the training room.

Soon, he arrived at the control center of the battleship.

Fu Wei was sitting cross-legged. She had taken in pellets and digested them to give a tonic to her soul.

Seeing him, Fu Wei opened her eyes, smiling. "You're here."

"I'm here to help you a little bit," Shi Yan said. He didn't wait for Fu Wei to respond. Just like an electric beam, he appeared right behind her. One hand of his was placed on her beautiful back. Vigorous life energy poured into Fu Wei's God Body like a refreshing stream in a mountain.

Fu Wei's beautiful eyes brightened. Her stiff body relaxed and she had a happy smile on her face.

Her exhausted body recovered shortly after receiving Shi Yan's vitality. Fu Wei felt like she was soaking her body in a hot spring. Her sore muscles were relaxed. Her mind, Qi, and Soul were refreshed. She felt so comfortable that she couldn't describe when that flow of vitality had invigorated her.

An Yun stood in a corner and watched. She used to want to stop Shi Yan. Seeing Fu Wei and her comfortable countenance, she exhaled in relief.

"Is it okay?" Placing his hand on Fu Wei's voluptuous back, Shi Yan looked calm, asking.

Fu Wei looked so relaxed as she enjoyed it a lot. With a weak smile, she told him, "A little more."

Shi Yan was surprised, beaming a forced smile. "Do you think the vitality I release is really cheap?"

While talking, he retrieved his hand. Looking at Fu Wei's white neck and her updo hairstyle, he said, "The damages inside your body recovered. I can feel that..."

Fu Wei gritted her teeth. She got up reluctantly, giving a tender smile. "I can see you have abundant life energy. The more I receive, the better I feel. Thus, I have to seize the chance, right?"

Shi Yan felt funny, shaking his head reluctantly. "When will we encounter the other?"

Talking about that, Fu Wei's visage darkened. "Soon. This time, we won't see only one battleship but instead, his entire Mad Shark Fleet. We will face Du Lin. Sigh. It's hard to deal with Du Lin... He's such a headache..."

"Du Lin? Who is he?"

"The new generation's commander of the Kroc family of the Ghost Mark Clan. He's at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. I heard he has touched the threshold of Incipient God Realm. He's the captain of the Mad Shark Fleet. He's careful, good at fighting, and planning."

"Why can they find you guys precisely each time? As your battleship can cut off Soul Consciousness detecting, normal people can't find you. Why do they always know your location every time?"

Fu Wei forced a smile. She pondered and then explained. "Du Lin was sent by Great Elder Zuo Lou. Great Elder knows our battleship well... Although people can't find us, it's simple to target and lock us down if they get the treasures from Great Elder. We basically can't be invisible under their sensing."

An Yun sighed in her corner.

"Oh, that's it." Nodding, Shi Yan's face was stern. "So we have to fight them? We don't have any chance to avoid this?"

"Well, we used to have a chance to get rid of the besiege," Fu Wei glared at Shi Yan. "But because you guys got out of the protective halo to kill those Ghost Mark warriors, we had to pause for fifteen minutes. We lost that precious chance. Of course, you don't need to blame yourself. I said it was a chance, so I'm not even sure if we could have escaped with the given fifteen minutes."

"Seems like I have to take responsibility then," Shi Yan couldn't

help but laugh.

"Of course, you have to take responsibility," Fu Wei nodded and smiled. "You gave us the Canon. Our danger is related to the Canon. I've paid one hundred million for the Canon. You should protect us and ensure our safety then."

"Alright, I will try my best to protect you guys," Shi Yan smiled reluctantly.

The big battleship halted.

Fu Wei, An Yun, and Shi Yan stood on the deck of the ship, watching the area ahead of them. Their faces became stern.

Black and blue shark battleships were approaching from the galaxy afar at an arrowhead formation to block them. A handsome Ghost Mark man with his hands clasped behind his back was standing on the leading battleship. He had tender eyes and a natural smile on his face.

"That's Du Lin!" hissed An Yun.

Fu Wei looked unnatural. She looked at the young man from a distance and sighed.

Those battleships didn't stop. The Ghost Mark captain named Du Lin took a deep breath and then pitched his voice, "Miss Fu Wei, I didn't want to meet you in such situation. Allow me to apologize in advance. I don't want to do this. I hope you understand."

"I don't want to see you either," Fu Wei walked forward reluctantly. Standing several thousand meters away from Du Lin, she said gently, "Can you retreat, please?"

"I can," Du Lin nodded resolutely and then said, "Give me the Canon. I will leave immediately. For you, I can even violate the order. I just need the Canon. I won't kill any of you."

"Can I keep the Canon and leave?" smiled Fu Wei.

"No, you can't. I agreed with him. I can't do that." Du Lin bent his body to express his apology. He smiled reluctantly and said, "I can do my best to protect you. Believe me. As long as you give me the Canon, I'm sure you will all be safe and sound."

"Young Master!" hissed one of his subordinates.

Du Lin waved his hand, shouting impatiently. "Don't speak nonsense! If Miss Fu Wei agrees with me, I'm willing to violate his order for her!"

The other didn't dare to say more.

"I can't give you the Canon," Fu Wei said begrudgingly.

Du Lin wasn't startled. He still smiled tenderly. "I know I'm making it difficult. Yeah, don't worry. I will show mercy. I won't let anything bad happen to you."

He turned his head, looking at the Mad Shark Fleet behind and gave his order, "Go. Pay attention. Anyone who attacks Miss Fu Wei will lose their life."

The Ghost Mark warriors then urged their battleships, moving like a frenzy of sharks chasing after their preys. Their auras and momentum were so intimidating.

Fu Wei sighed weakly and said, "Return to the control center. Prepare to struggle through a furious battle."

Chapter 1004: Giving Energy

Ferocious black and blue Mad Shark battleships moved like cruel big fish with divine crystals as their source of energy. They quickly approached.

Du Lin stood firm like a rock on the deck of a battleship, clasping his hands behind his back. He looked calm with a warm smile. Apparently, he wouldn't join this battle immediately.

The Mad Shark Fleet under his command was moving fast forward. They diverged, creating a circle to surround the massive battleship and blocking any possible exit.

Fu Wei was stern while she sat in the control center. Each wisp of her Soul Consciousness had created a subtle connection with each mark on the walls. The magnificent halo expanded and covered the entire battleship.

Crack! Crack! Crack

Sharp gears emerged from two sides of the battleship. With cold light, they started to roll rapidly and created sharp and shiny spikes.

The energy of countless divine crystals was released. At this moment, Fu Wei had connected all the barriers of the battleship. With her Soul Consciousness, she controlled her ship and made it like a sharp blade comes out of its sheath or like a beast opening its bloody mouth. The energy fluctuation from the battleship was now so sharp.

Boom!

Light column shot out from different corners of the battleship like electric dragons. They crazily attacked everywhere.

This earth-shaking commotion rampaged the galaxy like an exploding life star or a meteor shower. The shockwave this attack created could smash everything.

Some black and blue shark battleships approaching first got hit as they weren't cautious. The light columns pierced through the shark battleships, killing dozens of Ghost Mark warriors. Their broken bodies were blown away. Their blood dyed the area red.

Fu Wei paled. She hurried to take some pellets. Her Soul Consciousness gathered energy and controlled the attacking formations of the battleship.

The dim-lit universe now had pieces of broken bodies floating. Those bodies weren't intact. They were just like the pulp of meat floating in the void. Warriors of the pierced battleships changed their countenances, flying away from their wrecked battleships. They released powers Upanishads and God Domains. Bunches of light beams shot out as thick as clouds of locusts bombarding Fu Wei's battleship.

The halo of the battleship sparked dazzlingly and beautifully. However, it was perilous and it scared people.

The massive battleship suddenly trembled under the furious attacks. The sharp gears on the sides revolved faster. The massive battleship was like a spear that could pierce through everything, moving directly forward.

Fragments of gigantic battleships turned into powder and vanished upon impact with the sharp gears on Fu Wei's battleship. Any warrior who came near the battleship was killed by experts of Potion and Tool Pavilion hiding inside the protective halo.

The battle was extremely fierce right at the beginning.

Du Lin changed his countenance. Looking at the black and blue shark battleships shattering and his subordinates being killed, his warm smile disappeared.

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo stood on the deck mingling with the other warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Looking at the Mad Shark battleships attacking them, their visages were

extremely stern.

Shi Yan knew that the light curtain above their head couldn't resist for a long time.

That light curtain was created from many barriers and restrictions, which were linked with Fu Wei's soul. She had controlled them right from the beginning.

To maintain that protective halo, Fu Wei had to use her soul energy continually, which would weaken her fast.

Fu Wei also controlled the crystal artilleries at each salvo. As she had to defend and attack at the same time, Fu Wei had to consume a significant amount of energy each second.

Once Fu Wei couldn't endure it anymore, the halo would disappear and this battleship would have to stop its attack. The Ghost Mark warriors would get onboard. After that, the most brutal combat would start.

Shi Yan didn't know how long Fu Wei could endure this.

On the ship, Shi Yan was strangely cold and calm. His soul altar slowly spun.

His energy extended, gathering corpses and God Bodies of the dead Ghost Mark warriors above the light curtain. After those warriors died, their energy didn't disperse immediately. Shi Yan attracted this kind of energy and took it into his body through his acupuncture points.

Seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points started to refine madly.

Each of his acupuncture points was an immense world with countless vortexes that drew and refined Essence Qi of dead warriors. The vortexes revolved, filtered, refined, and released pure energy for Shi Yan to absorb.

Inside the control center, Fu Wei was pale. Her Sea of

Consciousness seethed like a thunderstorm.

Her soul energy was like countless tentacles that connected the marks of the formations and restrictions in this control center. Both defending and attacking this massive battleship required the soul energy to control it. Her God power was getting consumed rapidly.

She had controlled this battleship alone and knew everything to the details.

She could feel her mind and energy drain quickly.

This kind of consumption happened so fast that no pellet could help her recover shortly. She knew that she must be persistent. Once she couldn't control it anymore, the battleship would be defenseless.

Once it happened, she would have no power to deal with Du Lin. She couldn't keep the Canon and she would become Du Lin's property, a toy of his.

Fu Wei gritted her teeth, trying to focus. Her Soul Consciousness connected to every detail of the ship. She still controlled it.

The light curtain covering the ship thinned because of the bombarding from different forces. It would be torn in any minute.

Crystal artilleries shot the light columns that looked like spikes of a hedgehog. This kind of attack was a significant threat to Ghost Mark warriors surrounding the ship. After a salvo, some warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan were killed.

The gears on both sides of the gigantic battleship rolled, crushing the Mad Shark battleships impacted with them. They crushed the shark battleships into pieces while Fu Wei's battleship was still flying fast forward. It broke any warrior and anything in its way, grinding them into powder. No Ghost Mark warrior could stop it.

Fu Wei was so tired. She had sweat all over their body. Her bangs in front of her forehead were damp.

Shi Yan stood still on the deck of the massive battleship. He squinted, looking at the bodies hovering above the light curtain. His eyes had the light like ghostly flames.

Fei Lan and the other two surrounded him. They were stern, watching him and waiting for his direction.

Since Shi Yan didn't nod to order them to attack, Fei Lan's team stood still. No matter how hard An Yun, Feng An, and Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards resisted the enemies, Shi Yan's team just stood and watched them coldly.

"You guys, go help them. Remember that before the light curtain breaks, you can't fly out of the battleship." After a long time, Shi Yan suddenly ordered Fei Lan and the other two. Then, he walked alone to the control center of the battleship.

"You can't get in!"

One of Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards stopped him in the passage leading to control room.

At the critical moment, Fu Wei was the soul and the heart of this gigantic battleship. She shouldn't be disturbed. Compared to the breaking the bottleneck in cultivation, her situation now was much more dangerous. If someone attacked her, she couldn't do anything to defend herself.

If Shi Yan had a bad intention and attacked Fu Wei while she was concentrating on controlling the battleship, Fu Wei would be killed easily.

"I can help her," stopping by the control center, Shi Yan spoke to An Yun honestly.

An Yun had a struggle in her mind. At the moment when their situation became so perilous, she made a right decision. "Let him in!" she waved her hand at the guard.

Some Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards who protected the control center listened to An Yun. They stooped and left.

"Pay attention to this place." An Yun talked to Feng An and then walked to the control center. "I'm going with you."

"After you." Shi Yan knew her worry. He nodded and stepped aside to give her way, asking her to go first.

An Yun stormed into the control center, landing next to Fu Wei. She took a deep breath and spoke to Fu Wei, "Shi Yan said he came to help you."

Fu Wei was sweating a lot. Her long blue dress was damp on her body, revealing her voluptuous features. She was controlling the formations with closed eyes. Listening to An Yun, she opened her eyes, her face ashen. "He came to help me?"

An Yun nodded.

"Let him in," said Fu Wei.

Shi Yan appeared like a dark shadow. He checked Fu Wei's situation. "You should focus on controlling the battleship. I'm here to help."

He extended his left hand and placed it on Fu Wei's damp back. Beams of mysterious energy seeped out from his finger and entered Fu Wei's God Body like refreshing streams.

A cool feeling flooded her body. Her exhausted Essence Qi Ancient Tree was refilled. Her tired spirit revived as if she had taken a panacea. This fantastic feeling was like soaking the body in ice water in the middle of a hot summer day.

Fu Wei's heart had a vibe. She gave a sincere smile. She gritted her teeth and couldn't help but let out a moan of pleasure.

Shi Yan was bewildered, looking at Fu Wei enjoying it. He shook his head, chuckled and then advised her. "Don't get distracted. You must focus. Everything on this battleship depends on your control. Do not get distracted."

"Got it." Fu Wei answered gently. She thinned her lips, beaming a

smile. Her pale cheeks recovered its colors. Her God Body felt like a dry well that was receiving water. The flames of her life burst up.

Fu Wei's energy refilled.

The mysterious energy flowed through Shi Yan's fingers to her body. As he was touching her back, he could see every ability of Fu Wei's God Body. He could clearly see her bones, blood, and flesh. Everything was reflected in his heart.

Sensing quietly, Shi Yan suddenly understood something.

Although it was the same kind of energy transmission, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona could absorb every bit of energy that Shi Yan gave them through the mark on their foreheads. At the same time, they could use this energy to refine their bodies and their soul altars.

To Fu Wei, it was different. Half of the energy Shi Yan had sent to her body was wasted and his energy couldn't help Fu Wei strengthen herself. It could only help her restore and nurture her body to generate energy again.

He understood that the energy he had given her could be effective only when she needed energy. When Fu Wei was at her peak condition, his energy given to her couldn't do anything. It couldn't be converted to her energy to increase her realm and powers.

Anyway, it was not from the same school or source. Shi Yan sighed inwardly.

Chapter 1005: The Thunder God Spear

Boom!

The intensive light column that was as beautiful as a gemstone shot out from the crystal artilleries. After a salvo, they crushed a blue shark battleship into small pieces.

Fragments of the damaged battleships were burned. Shooting flamed fell massively. The scorching flames were sd dazzling as the most brilliant fireworks that were too mesmerizing to the soul.

This was the sixth Mad Shark battleship that they destroyed. Hundreds of Ghost Mark clansmen were killed. Their bodies were gone and their soul altars were broken.

Inside the control center, Fu Wei was calm. Her face glowed in health. Her tiredness was swept away.

Shi Yan stood quietly behind her like the strongest city wall. One hand of his was placed on her back that helped him sense the energy surging in her blood vessels.

Fu Wei beamed a relaxed smile.

The hand on her back continually sent some kind of mysterious energy into her body. It was like a magical stream that could strengthen her blood, vessels, and bones. It had refilled her consumed Essence Qi and allowed her to maintain her full energy condition.

She had a feeling that if that hand didn't leave, she would never be defeated as she could maintain her peak condition forever. She would never feel tired again.

It has been so many years since Fu Wei had felt this kind of care and protection. She felt that the hand was the most important thing in her life. As long as she had it on her back, she was never going to be defeated.

An Yun had a joy that she couldn't hide. She studied the young man, her eyes happy and her face joyfully bright.

The Mad Shark Fleet was the most potent force of the Ghost Mark Clan. Du Lin, their captain, was very famous in Agate Star Area. He was the young and fabulous expert whom the entire Kroc family entrusted its future. At the same time, he was favored and accepted by the Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Du Lin had almost collected all the supports and favors to him. He was the chosen son of heaven and the most prominent star in Agate Star Area.

An Yun would never expect this extremely tough battle to be like this and Fu Wei was still full of energy until this moment.

That year when they built this battleship, An Yun had also participated in the construction. She knew its structure and fabricating method clearly. Fu Wei was the soul of this battleship. Each barrier, formation, and restriction was connected to Fu Wei's soul. She was the operator for every defending and attacking operation.

The bottom of this gigantic battleship had hundreds of millions of divine crystals, which were its source of energy.

As long as Fu Wei didn't consume all of her energy and she maintained her sound mind, she could use the energy of those divine crystals continually to have the protective halo and the terrifying attacks last.

It required Fu Wei's energy and the divine crystals at the bottom of the battleships to endure and resist the enemy. If Fu Wei could stay in her peak condition with the abundant amount of divine crystals, they could always maintain the utmost defense and attack.

Talking about wealth, none of the forces in Agate Star Area could compare to Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Shi Yan's appearance was the most valuable variable and the biggest chance for them. Until this moment, An Yun was still panic-stricken.

She didn't know what method Shi Yan had used to refill Fu Wei's energy. However, she believed that if Shi Yan could help Fu Wei remain at her peak condition, the defensive and attacking operations of this battleship wouldn't be paused and it would be in the best condition until the end.

Fu Wei glowed as she was in a good condition. Her breathing was steady and her blue eyes were bright and happy.

Shi Yan stood still like a mountain. Energy still flowed from him into Fu Wei's body. His flow of energy then diverged into smaller streams, which were sent to every corner of Fu Wei's body. With this support, she would never be exhausted.

Looking at the cold young man and Fu Wei relaxing, An Yun couldn't hold her thoughts: If these two cooperated, would everything be smooth and excellent?

Standing on the only black shark battleship that hadn't engaged in the battle, Du Lin wasn't smiling anymore. He knitted his eyebrows tightly, his eyes getting colder.

Standing behind him were three Ghost Mark experts at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. They kneeled down with their head held stubbornly high. They bit their lips until bleeding. They were anxious and impatient.

The Kroc family had built this Mad Shark Fleet to support Du Lin. To give Du Lin the strongest fleet of the Ghost Mark Clan, the Kroc had used half of the property of the entire family. The Mad Shark Fleet shouldered the critical mission of bringing Du Lin to the Chief position in the future. He was the hope of the Krocs.

Today, six of them were smashed and hundreds of the elite

warriors of the family had fallen into the sea of stars. They would never be able to gather their souls and bodies once again.

All of these were because of Du Lin's rash operation.

"Young Master!" a senile Ghost Mark expert gritted his teeth, a trickle of blood dripping from the corner of his mouth. He said with deep grief, "Our fellows are being killed. They are all your entourage. Young Master, do you want to see more of them die? Young Master, they are the foundation of the Kroc family. They are your most loyal soldiers!"

"If you insist on continuing... I... I will kill myself right here!" Another Ghost Mark warriors shouted, his face resolute and stubborn. While he was talking, a fiery light ball emerged on his palm. He struck it to his forehead.

Du Lin was frightened. He stopped the old man immediately.

Thunderbolts wound around that man's arms, restraining his body.

The Ghost Mark old man who was about to commit suicide couldn't press his hand on his head, halting. His eyes were filled with grief as he looked at Du Lin deep in his eyes. "Young Master, it is worth sacrificing many men to win over that woman's heart?"

His heart was bleeding.

Du Lin pondered for a while. He sighed reluctantly. "I understand."

The three kneeling Ghost Mark experts' eyes brightened when Du Lin changed his attitude. They now had hope, talking malignantly, "We beg you to take action!"

Du Lin turned his head, looking at the gigantic battleship moving away. As he looked at the watery, wave-like protection halo, felt the power of the combination of countless barriers and restrictions, and saw many men of his elite force being killed, Du Lin's indecisive eyes became resolute.

He knew once he attacked them that he would never have the chance to have Fu Wei's heart.

He came all the way here this time with the hope that he could persuade Fu Wei. He hoped he didn't need to go through the last step to win her heart and the Canon.

... But he was wrong. He didn't expect that Fu Wei could resist his attacks up until this moment. She seemed to not be tired at all.

It was a strange situation. Du Lin was skeptical, but he couldn't explain why., now, he had to do what he didn't want to do the most.

One he took action, he and Fu Wei wouldn't have a way to return. He would never have Fu Wei's heart. At most, he could only have her body. He would become a bastard.

Du Lin's disposition was self-important. After Fu Wei had rejected him that year, he had sworn he would make Fu Wei moved one day. He must make Fu Wei like him with all her heart. She would become his wife and help him expand his territory, stepping on the peak of glory in Agate Star Area.

However, he finally knew today that his pledge would never be fulfilled...

He flew out of the black shark battleship, hovering in the immense void and facing Potion and Tool Pavilion's massive, incoming battleship. Although he looked calm, his eyes showed his reluctant and lonely feelings.

Thousands of Ghost Mark warriors halted no matter where they were. They focused, looking at him and waiting for something.

Some senile Ghost Mark experts clenched their fists as they became excited. Their eyes yearned for a victory.

A shining spear made of lightning emerged from Du Lin's sleeve. It glowed in the silver hue of divine light.

His Ethereal Extent was a world of blinding thunderbolts. It revealed above his head like a rising curtain. Tens of thousands of lightning strikes moved inside that marvelous world. The world seemed to collapse as lightning flashed continually like the gossamer, striking here and there.

That shining silver spear was as long as an arm. It had the natural pattern of lightning with the incredible abilities of thunderbolts.

The spear flew out inaudibly, darting towards Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleship like a silky ribbon.

Tens of thousands of lightning strikes in Ethereal Extent above Du Lin's head acted as if they were drawn away from his Ethereal Extent, pouring rapidly into the spear. In just a blink, the silver spear had absorbed thousands of lightning strikes. It moved like a meteor piercing through the universe, aimed at the light curtain protecting Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleship.

Pfff!

The defensive halo created by countless barriers and restrictions was torn. The light curtain covering the battleship was pierced through and created a giant hole. Then, it was ripped apart at a speed that a naked eye could see.

The divine lightning was dazzling as it expanded over the light curtain and tore it apart. Under that light curtain, warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion were struck by lightning. Their God Bodies were charred. Weak warriors were killed at their spots while stronger ones had their souls damaged significantly.

The Thunder Divine Spear was the top treasure of the Ghost Mark Clan. It was an Original Incipient Grade weapon. Du Lin, the chosen Son of Heaven from the Krocs, was the current owner of this divine weapon.

Du Lin's main power was Lightning. He could promote the power

of the Thunder God Spear by giving it billions of his lightning strikes. It could have the God power to destroy the world.

Pfff!

Fu Wei spat out blood from her succulent red lips. Her face was pale.

Her soft body was filled with lightning. Her energy accumulated in the body was smashed. She was trying to resist the lightning invading her body with great pain.

As she had the connection with barriers, marks, restrictions, and formations of this battleship, she also had to bear the power of the lightning strikes. She was hurt severely after this attack when the light curtain got torn.

Boom!

Azure thunderbolts with deterrent power moved through Shi Yan's hand and to his body. His hand was still placed on Fu Wei's back.

The lightning strikes were like arrows shot out of a strong bow. They attacked his body in various parts, giving him a horrible pain to his muscles and vessels. His arm almost exploded. As it was very sore and numb, he had to move his hand away from Fu Wei's back.

"Level 1 Original Incipient Grade weapon! It's the Thunder God Spear! Du Lin is using the Thunder God Spear!"

An Yun burst out angrily, thundering. "He dares to use the Thunder God Spear! He wants to kill us! Zuo Lou is crazy! After killing another Elder, isn't he afraid of the other Elders' punishment? When that level 1 Original Incipient Grade weapon is activated, it will disorder the lightning and thunder of the surrounding area. When those lightning strikes shoot fast, he won't be able to control them. They would kill a lot of creatures around. They could even crush a life star!"

Shi Yan was frightened.

Chapter 1006: Who Can Endure a Battle?

As the Thunder God Spear had torn the protective light curtain in just one strike, dozens of Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors turned into charcoal. A larger number continued to try resisting the erosive effect of lightning in their bodies.

Du Lin descended on the deck of the battleship, clutching a silver spear. Lightning bolts wound around that spear like tongues of venomous snakes. Although its murderous aura was invisible, no one dared to confront this spear.

The tremendous weapon of Original Incipient Grade!

Although this Agate Star Area was vast, the number of Original Incipient Grade weapons could be counted with a person's fingers. Each of them was well-known and their masters were a small group of influential people who topped the world.

Du Lin grasped the electric spear as if he was holding the entire world. His body expressed some kind of arrogance and confidence, giving a massive pressure that suffocated Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors.

The Ghost Mark clansmen didn't cheer when they saw Du Lin tear through the protective halo of the battleship with one strike as they thought that it was inevitable. They knew Du Lin's competence. They knew that he had the capacity to do that. Thus, the Ghost Mark warriors were calm, approaching and surrounding warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion on the massive battleship from every direction.

Without the protective halo, they were able to jump onto the massive battleship whenever they wanted. Due to the close distance, the crystal artilleries weren't a threat to them anymore.

At this moment, in the eyes of the Ghost Mark warriors, they knew that the result of this battle was determined. They knew

when Du Lin became severe and put his affection for Fu Wei aside, the girl wouldn't have a chance.

On Fu Wei's battleship, Feng An of Potion and Tool Pavilion was pale, gritting his teeth while gazing at Du Lin. However, he didn't dare to come over and challenge the young man. He could only watch the guards of his side trying to resist the lightning strikes. Feng An felt painfully reluctant.

Du Lin was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and he had put one step through the threshold to Incipient God Realm. With the Thunder God Spear, the divine weapon and an Original Incipient Grade treasure, in his hand, who can endure a battle with him on this battleship?

Feng An's face was so solemn.

Du Lin stood alone in the crowd of Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards. He hadn't done anything rashly and just waited in silence. His eyes laid on the control center of this big battleship. He's waiting for someone. He's waiting for that girl to give him the Canon.

As he stood still, none of the Ghost Mark warriors dared to take action. Also, no guard of Potion and Tool Pavilion had the guts to provoke opponents.

The battleship was now so quiet that they would even hear the sound of a falling needle.

Staying inside the control center, An Yun paled, her eyes panic-stricken. A storm arose in her heart.

She suddenly recognized that she was wrong. Totally wrong. She had underrated Du Lin and she had underestimated Zuo Lou's determination to get the Canon!

Although Potion and Tool Pavilion had some unceasing competition. They had all happened in the dark. They weren't going to expose anything and make it accelerate to the extreme

point they had to kill one Elder.

One Elder's death would enrage all the other Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion, which led to the rage of the Pavilion Master. An Yun had assumed that the Great Elder wanted only the Canon and that he wouldn't hurt Fu Wei.

The appearance of Du Lin made An Yun instinctively make the wrong assumption she had made. Because she knew Du Lin loved Fu Wei better than anyone else.

As Zuo Lou had sent Du Lin here, An Yun thought he didn't want to push this mess to the point he couldn't clean it later. Thus, he didn't send a more malignant subordinate. However, she was wrong. She had wronged Zuo Lou's crazy desire of the Canon and Zuo Lou's understanding of Du Lin.

It turned out that in a critical moment, Du Lin could be a savage...

An Yun sighed and couldn't help but look at Fu Wei with blood on her face. Her complicated look switched to the man who stood firm like a rock. She felt utterly hopeless.

Unfortunately, the big difference between their realms couldn't be made up simply... He hasn't reached a profound realm yet...

Fu Wei sat quietly for a moment. She wiped out the blood trickles on the corners of her mouth. She stood up, said nothing, and walked straight outside. Looking at Du Lin standing in between Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards, she sighed weakly, her face bitter.

Du Lin seemed emotional. He clenched his fingers around the spear, sighing. "I didn't want everything to turn out like this."

Fu Wei nodded and her eyes glistened beautifully. "As we're in this situation, we can only meet in a death or life combat. I die and you take the Canon. Or I defeat you and you leave."

"You're not my opponent." Du Lin shivered unnaturally, his

visage distressed. "I really don't want to attack you. As long as you hand me the Canon, I'll leave immediately. I won't trouble you anymore."

"No," Fu Wei sighed inwardly. Looking at Du Lin, she whispered, "You have your principles and I have my stubbornness. I won't step back."

While talking, an emerald ring on Fu Wei's white wrist glowed in the blue light. It rippled, revealing beautiful scenery of mountains and rivers like a monochronic picture. The magical blue energy condensed, exposing that magnificent world little by little.

Ice mountains emerged and shrank right into Fu Wei's palm. The mountain range fabricated by the icy beams created a bitter cold world where glaciers flowed and congregated. Eventually, it created a small ice mountain.

The ice mountain had many magical and mysterious symbols. They looked like some heavenly body had drawn them. Waves of cold air expanded, drowning the real world in its coldness.

Du Lin was stern, looking at the world of the glacier in Fu Wei's hand. He watched the ice mountain with solemn eyes.

It was unknown when Shi Yan and An Yun had walked out of the control center. They now all gazed at the glacier in her hand.

An Yun had a reluctant pain showing in her face.

Shi Yan was bewildered. He turned to ask An Yun, "Is that glacier an Original Incipient Grade weapon?"

Fu Wei was at Second of Ethereal God Realm and she cultivated Fire power Upanishad. It was common to blacksmiths and alchemists. However, Shi Yan didn't know Fu Wei had cultivated Ice power Upanishad as her minor power besides the Fire power Upanishad. Ice and Fire usually couldn't blend together. Fu Wei's decision had surprised Shi Yan.

When Fu Wei at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm had been hurt

by Du Lin's previous attack, Shi Yan didn't have enough time and energy to help her recover.

Du Lin was at Peak of Ethereal God Realm and he also had a divine weapon of Original Incipient Grade. Thunder God Spear was really famous in Agate Star Area. It was the top weapon of the Ghost Mark Clan, which had drunk a lot of blood.

It had shouldered the glory of the Ghost Mark Clan for tens of thousands of years.

An Yun nodded gently. "The Mysterious Heavenly Glacier was refined by the Second Pavilion Master. It has thousands of glaciers in the cold area of the North Pole as the foundation together with several hundred icy materials. To fabricate the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier, the Second Pavilion Master had fallen into bedevilment. Eventually, his soul vanished when he finished creating the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier."

Shi Yan frowned and didn't reply here. His face was getting more serious.

"Your main power is Fire and the Ice power's just a minor power Upanishad. Ice and Fire can't blend together. At the same time, the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier can't control my Thunder God Spear." Du Lin's face was reluctantly bitter. "We shouldn't fight anymore. Give me the Canon and we will end all of this. Okay?"

Fu Wei's furrowed her bold brows, gently shaking her head.

Du Lin's face stiffened. He stood there bewilderedly.

Warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan gathered in four corners of this massive battleship. Before Du Lin ordered, no one dared to reach the deck.

Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards including Feng An and An Yun stood there with cold faces. However, they just looked at Du Lin and intervened with nothing.

The Original Incipient Grade weapons were really intimidating.

Once they were used, they could draw the catastrophe to the entire star area. Du Lin and Fu Wei were holding their divine weapons. At this moment, no one could interfere with their combat.

"Don't destroy my battleship. We should move to another place." Fu Wei took a deep breath. She smiled at Du Lin tenderly and flew out, soaring into the sea of stars.

Members of the Ghost Mark Clan leaned and moved out of her way, letting her fly through their crowd at ease.

Du Lin nodded quietly. He didn't say more and followed her. They floated in the vast galaxy. He shouted at his forces, "Scatter. Without my order, don't make a move!"

The Ghost Mark warrior respectfully left, scattering away from that battleship.

Guards of the Potion and Tool Pavilion exhaled in relief. However, they recalled something so they became sterner.

"Could she defeat Du Lin?" Shi Yan frowned, looking at An Yun. "She cultivates Fire power Upanishad and her realm is lower than his. Even if she gets a divine weapon, her opponent has one. What do you think about this battle?"

An Yun sighed, talking. "Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion have invested their efforts only in refining pellets and forging treasures. Compared to the real fighters, their experience and timing in fighting are so bad."

Shi Yan suddenly understood.

"If she failed, what would happen?" pausing for a while, he continued.

"We can't keep the Canon." An Yun pondered, choosing her words. "If Young Elder can give it up resolutely, maybe she'll be alright. Although she looks tender, she's really stubborn. I'm afraid she...",

Shi Yan's face darkened.

Billions of lightning strikes weaved in the void like a massive spider web expanding everywhere in the sea of stars. Du Lin held the spear in his hand, standing in the center of the lightning web. He was accumulating energy.

Fu Wei was wearing a long blue dress, her palm holding the small glacier. Along with her realm and her increasing energy, the glacier was enlarging, releasing the freezing cold air to everywhere. This woman who used to be as tender as water now had an icy cold aura.

Ssss! Ssss!

Lightning strikes wiggled, congregating into the Thunder God Spear. The electric silver spear of an arm size flashed with exquisite and elaborate drawings and patterns. Gradually, it had the power to release scorching lightning strikes. Billions of lightning strikes in the world seemed to have the same home. They flooded towards the electric spear rapidly.

The blinding electric lights shot out, mingling with each other. They created a lightning web, covering Fu Wei entirely.

The Thunder God Spear became a bunch of lightning strikes sweeping through the galaxy. It aimed at Fu Wei with formidable momentum.

The extremely cold glacier where Fu Wei was sitting released the thick cold mist, which dyed the entire world with white snow. Snowflakes and frost fell on the crystal glacier. All of them made the most beautiful, perfect piece of art. They stood in the way of the spear.

Crack! Crack!

The Mysterious Heavenly Glacier was hit, sending pieces of ice everywhere. The glacier rumbled. Fu Wei paled. Her body shivered as the glacier shook.

Du Lin sighed deeply. His face looked so begrudging. However, the Thunder God Spear he sent away didn't cease. It reloaded the power of billions of lightning strikes, preparing for a new thrusting attack.

Chapter 1007: The Giant Blood Shield

Without beautiful strikes or changes of power Upanishad, the lightning spear continued to thrust at the crystal glacier.

Pieces of ice exploded, shooting away from the glacier and moving to unknown places.

Thunderbolts flashed as if the Lightning power Upanishad was urged to the acme. The power of thunderbolts could even discolor the whole universe. It illuminated the dark area while divine lights flashed and shot far away. It was unknown how many life stars those thunderbolts would attack.

When the Original Incipient Grade weapons released the power, it could trigger some kind of disorderly power Upanishad that could lead to a catastrophe.

This was similar to when Incipient God Realm experts fought each other.

Supernatural experts at Incipient God Realm could destroy an entire life star if they fought to the death. Rumors said that when the tremendous Incipient God Realm experts battled so fiercely that one of them died, they could crush many life stars with them.

Du Lin and Fu Wei hadn't reached Incipient God Realm, but if they could urge the power of their Original Incipient Grade weapons to the utmost, their lethality could even surge towards outer space. It was enough to compare slightly to the Incipient God Realm experts.

Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards on the battleship and the Ghost Mark clansmen kept silent, looking at their battle in a far distance.

No one was in the mood to talk.

Each of them could see that Fu Wei couldn't resist anymore. As the Thunder God Spear kept drilling and thrusting, the glacier exploded bit by bit. The bitter cold aura was decreasing. Fu Wei

looked as pale as a sheet of white paper. She was tired, indeed.

Du Lin had also consumed energy, but he was still full. His energy was as abundant as a rising tide. At this moment, he was still intimidating.

The energy accumulations of a Peak of Ethereal God Realm warrior and a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior were very different. At the same time, Fu Wei wasn't a fighter who was good at fighting. Her lifetime effort had been invested in refining things. In bloody battles, her performance wasn't really excellent.

Du Lin was different from her. Since he was born in the Kroc family, he had to take the mission of strengthening his family. He had to pursue absolute power for the rest of his life. Du Lin had experienced bloody battles and killed many people.

To this kind of bloody fighting, Du Lin got used to it. How to seize the chance to attack, how to utilize his powers and advantages the most... He understood all of these much better than Fu Wei.

Add the gap between their realms and the result of this battle was determined even before it started.

Members of the Ghost Mark Clan had a joy that they couldn't hide on their faces... Du Lin had proven his ability to sweep off all the obstacles one more time. They believed he could bring the Kroc family to the peak of glory.

Looking at Du Lin at this moment, his fellows felt excited as they knew that the distance between Du Lin and the Chief of Ghost Mark Clan position wasn't far away. They believed that if Du Lin could help Zuo Lou to get the Canon, he would receive generous support from Zuo Lou.

With the favor of Potion and Tool Pavilion's Great Elder and Du Lin's competence, the Mad Shark Fleet would become the strongest force in the Agate Star Area. They could help the Kroc family move

further...

Quite the contrary, Feng An, An Yun, and the other guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion had put on stern faces. They felt suffocated as if they had a big stone pressing on their chests.

"If Fu Wei is defeated, what will happen to... you guys?" On a corner of the battleship, Shi Yan contemplated for a while, speaking all of a sudden. In this quiet ambiance, his voice was a bit unpleasant.

Many Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards looked at him with unknown intentions in their eyes.

An Yun's brows slammed together as she looked at Shi Yan and the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She spoke earnestly, "If Young Elder is defeated but remains relatively unharmed, nothing bad will happen to us, I suppose. But if Young Elder forces herself to the point that she perishes, I think Du Lin will massacre all of us in his rage."

She beamed a forced smile, sighing. "If Young Elder is killed, we don't have the face to live anymore as servants."

Shi Yan frowned.

The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion had a dark and gloomy face as if their parents had just passed away.

They seemed to see the end of their lives.

"Senior, what about us?" Ka Tuo grinned oddly. "Would we encounter danger too?"

"You guys insisted on staying." An Yun sighed, looking at Shi Yan. "If Young Elder dies, I'm afraid... you guys can't escape death. After she dies, we can't do anything. Du Lin would never let any witnesses leave alive."

"Senior!" Ka Tuo's face darkened.

Shi Yan nodded quietly. Looking at the immense galaxy out

there, he had a lot of thoughts in his mind.

At the moment Shi Yan decided to stay, he had resonated his soul with the space node. He believed when he used his Space power that he could bring Ka Tuo, Leona, Fei Lan, Xuan Ming, and Zuo Shi away. They could escape this deadly battle in just a blink.

As he had this confidence, he decided to let Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming stay.

In other words, Du Lin couldn't stop him if he wanted to run.

However, he didn't want to run away!

He didn't want to see Fu Wei die!

He had a good impression of this woman especially after he heard her secrets. He had feelings for her. He knew that she was also a miserable girl. As thoughts flashed in his mind, he had a decision.

"Put off your guard and hand the Canon to me. Otherwise, your Mysterious Heavenly Glacier will be smashed. It won't be easy to fix. You know that." Floating in the sea of stars, Du Lin had lightning strikes linger on his entire body. He reluctantly gave her advice.

The Thunder God Spear halted one thousand meters in front of the glacier. Lightning strikes flashed on the spear as if it could gather more lightning strikes of this world altogether. Such an earth-shattering threat made everybody feel powerless.

Du Lin knew Fu Wei wasn't in a good condition. Although the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier was a secret treasure at Original Incipient Grade, its quality and level couldn't compare to the spear he had. Fu Wei's realm was lower than his and she had consumed a lot of energy to operate the battleship...

Honestly, Fu Wei's current endurance was already over his estimation. However, seeing Fu Wei's aura ceasing and her tired eyes, Du Lin knew Fu Wei's energy was now chaotic. She couldn't endure it any longer.

If Fu Wei continued this way, her life would be threatened and her foundation would be damaged. Once its owner was hurt, how can the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier resist the fierce attack from the Thunder God Spear?

"No!" Fu Wei shook her head resolutely, her face calm and faint.

Du Lin frowned. He was finally enraged. "You want to court death? Although the Canon is precious, you can't keep it. Do you still want to use your own life to protect it? You're just stubborn. Useless stubbornness is no different from stupidity!"

Fu Wei said nothing. She continued to gather energy. The Mysterious Heavenly Glacier continued to emit the cold air, generating new ice mountains.

She acted to show her attitude!

Du Lin was infuriated. His tender face had become cold eventually. Fu Wei's attitude had enraged him. He didn't want to kill her. But now, he didn't want to advise her in pain either.

A divine spear with thunderbolts winding around moved like a lightning strike sweeping across the world. It brought together the brutal power of flashes and maliciously drilled into the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier operated by its exhausted master.

The Ghost Mark warriors and the guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion were shocked. They didn't even blink while watching this strike of Thunder Divine Spear.

They understood that this strike would announce Fu Wei's sentence. It would put an end to this battle.

Was it going to end?

An Yun was filled with despair. She hopelessly looked at the battle afar, sighing begrudgingly.

It should be like that!

Some old warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan were so excited. They

clenched their fists with yearning eyes. They were all waiting for this thunderbolt attack to complete the ending they had known beforehand.

BOOM!

Countless divine lightning strikes blended with blood light. Lightning strikes sparked beautifully at the tip of the spear while the blood light became more visible.

People's pupils shrank. They couldn't help but gawk, dropping their jaws. Divine light sparkled in their eyes, all focused on one thing.

It was a scarlet shield...

It stood in front of the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier, shielding the lethal attack of the Thunder God Spear. At first, the shield was just the size of a palm. Under people's gaze, it was enlarging rapidly.

Corpses and blood of several hundred dead warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan flew towards the shield like a bloody shower. The shield took in blood and enlarged fast. As blood was flooding the shield, it became a gigantic scarlet shield!

It looked even more imposing than the several-thousand-meter Mysterious Heavenly Glacier. It had shielded the entire Mysterious Heavenly Glacier, leaving the Thunder God Speak no leak to attack.

A flow of bloodthirsty, brutal aura slowly expanded on that scarlet shield. It was like an evil creature had just descended to this world. All the warriors felt their soul altars being affected. It felt like some bloody, malicious ghost had haunted their souls, making them irritatedly restless.

As blood seeped into the shield, the magical blood mark on it bloomed like a flower. It was indeed cruelly beautiful that touched people's heart and made them shiver at the same time.

Inside the sea of stars, many Ghost Mark warriors were petrified. They couldn't help but rub their eyes as they thought that they were dizzy.

Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards were bewildered as if they were sinking in the deepest and darkest dream. This feeling was so unreal.

No one knows where this blood shield came from. No one knew why it happened to block Du Lin's deadly attack at the critical moment.

Everybody was baffled or petrified. They exchanged looks and then gazed at the massive garnet shield. They even forgot that the battle was at the most dangerous and fiercest moment.

The Thunder God Spear thrust into the Blood Shield. Lightning was sent everywhere from the impact. The spear continued its attack as its energy surged wildly.

However, right when the Blood Shield appeared, it stood firmly like the strongest fortress in this world that would never be broken.

The blood drawing lines on the shield moved like human veins. The blood mark bloomed like the most beautiful but evil flower.

The massive Blood Shield was intact. It wasn't chipped or damaged. On the contrary, the Thunder God Spear was shaking from the impact with the shield.

Chapter 1008: Receive Help From a Savior

The Blood Shield hovered like a mountain. It protected the entire Mysterious Heavenly Glacier as if it was a massive, iron wall that blockaded everything. At the same time, the brutal, bloodthirsty aura surged and expanded fiercely. It covered the area of more than one thousand miles around.

The blood mark on that shield wiggled while the bloodlines moved like worms. It looked like a living object.

Blood from hundreds of dead Ghost Mark warriors flew in the void like the raindrops. They made the Blood Shield dark and cruel to the utmost. It looked as if it had become the source of all evil things in this world.

The sharp tip of the Thunder God Spear stabbed the shield at the center of the blood mark. The silver spear sprung as if some evil energy had attacked it. Fine cracks began to appear on the spear.

Warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan and Potion and Tool Pavilion kept silent as they were all gazing at the shield. They were aghast because none of them knew what was going on.

Fu Wei stood on the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier, her face pale and stern. She furrowed her bold brows, her bright eyes gazing at the Blood Shield. She was so confused.

Du Lin, the chosen Son of Heaven of the Ghost Mark Clan, paled. His keen eyes raked through the area to find something.

Although he was struggling in his mind, Du Lin took a deep breath and spoke respectfully to the dark void, "Who interfered with our Ghost Mark Clan's matter?"

He released his Soul Consciousness, trying to swamp over the Blood Shield. However, as soon as his Soul Consciousness touched it, his consciousness was distorted as if he had sunk into a peat bog that was very tough to get rid of. His soul energy was consumed

massively.

Being grim, Du Lin's heart sank into the abyss. He anxiously looked at the shield that had appeared out of nowhere. He was reluctant that he couldn't move forward or retreat.

No one replied to him.

The massive Blood Shield seemed to be unowned. With his realm and powerful Soul Consciousness, Du Lin couldn't detect the general direction of the owner of this shield. He became sterner and more anxious. He looked around, his eyes panic-stricken.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The subtle lightning flashes shot out from the tip of the Thunder God Spear. However, the Blood Qi immediately burst them off and dissolved them.

The short spear sprung severely...

Du Lin was restlessly terrified. The dim-lit surroundings were absolutely quiet, making his soul uneasy. He felt as if a pair of evil eyes were hiding in the dark, gazing at each of his moves.

"We, the Ghost Mark Clan, will remember this." Taking a deep breath, Du Lin said something curt like that. Then, his mind flickered as he grabbed the void and retrieved the Thunder God Spear. The spear turned into a lightning strike, disappearing into his sleeve.

"Let's go!" Du Lin suddenly shouted, flying toward his Mad Shark battleship.

All the warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan were surprised. They looked at him with great confusion on their faces.

The three elders of the Ghost Mark Clan hesitated. They couldn't help but shout, "Young Master!"

Du Lin's face was dark and cold, shouting at them. "I told you to leave! Did you not hear me?!?"

The three elders of the Ghost Mark Clan discolored. They didn't dare to say more. They spread his order.

Members of the Ghost Mark Clan scattered like fish swimming in the sea. They returned quietly to their battleship. All of them felt as if they had a big rock hanging above their hearts as they looked at the hovering Blood Shield in silence. Du Lin's battleship started leaving quietly.

All the guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion were shocked. Seeing the Ghost Mark Clan's battleships retreat like a low tide, they felt so happy that they burst out cheering.

Standing on the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier, Fu Wei looked at the giant Blood Shield with a complicated countenance. She was bewildered for a while and then she bent her body to thank the mysterious helper. "Thank you for your support, precursor."

She didn't know who was controlling that massive Blood Shield.

Swoosh!

A blood light shot toward the unknown area of the immense outer space. The massive Blood Shield shrank rapidly, flying away with the blood light. It disappeared shortly after.

Five thousand miles away.

Du Lin's face was dark and harsh. He swallowed a red pellet, panting.

The three Elders of the Ghost Mark Clan stood silently by him. They looked confused and complicated.

"... Young Master," one of them called him in a low voice.

Du Lin awoke from his thought. He instinctively took a deep breath, his face pale. "Its level was much higher than the Thunder God Spear!"

The three Ghost Mark elders were frightened.

They finally understood why Du Lin insisted on retreating.

The Original Incipient Grade weapons were classified in seven levels. The Thunder God Spear was at level 2 and it was already a top treasure in the Ghost Mark Clan. Its reputation was well-known around Agate Star Area.

However, the level of that giant Blood Shield was much higher than the Thunder God Spear. What kind of f*cking intimidating character was able to control this weapon?

No wonder why their Young Master decided to retreat even though his question wasn't answered. He even forgot Zuo Lou's order. He didn't keep his mind on the Canon.

In Agate Star Area, there are some unwritten rules that everyone knows. The higher level the divine weapon was, the higher the power and realm of its owner. Those who could control Original Incipient Grade weapons were at least at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. Most of them were at Incipient God Realm.

If the user's realm and energy weren't enough, he couldn't utilize the divine weapon or protect it.

As that shield was a high-level weapon, its owner was also likely an intimidating existence who could stand firm in this world. Du Lin couldn't detect the aura of the Blood Shield's owner. However, he instinctively assumed that that helper's realm and understanding of power Upanishad were beyond his perception from the quality of the shield.

He was scared so he left immediately. The three Elders of the Ghost Mark Clan and Du Lin thought that it was a wise move.

"Each divine weapon at Original Incipient Grade is recorded in detail by Potion and Tool Pavilion. The higher level the weapon is, the more detailed the description will be." Du Lin's voice was tired and husky. "But that blood shield... I have never heard about it before. I don't know its origin and its owner. I don't want the Mad

Shark Fleet and everybody else to get involved in this!"

"Young Master, you're wise!" The three Elders of the Ghost Mark Clan were shocked. They respectfully expressed their opinion.

Under any point of view, Du Lin's decision was unquestionable. Since that hidden expert could control a divine weapon that was stronger than the Thunder God Spear, that helper should be at Peak of Incipient God Realm in their eyes. This kind of expert was strong enough to clean up their Mad Shark Fleet and burn them into ashes!

The other had just shielded the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier and hadn't done anything to attack. Du Lin's side thought that it was the opponent's warning and that they should know their competence...

If they couldn't recognize it, the next attack would crush them all!

Du Lin had a good sense. He initially retreated and gave up the Canon. He wanted to protect himself and his family's force. Even if Zuo Lou felt irritated, he couldn't voice anything.

"Notify the Great Elder. Report our battle in detail. Do not miss any information. Stress about the giant Blood Shield. I think... he may know something." Du Lin waved his hand helplessly. He felt tired. He had traveled thousands of miles, caused a grudge against Fu Wei, and left hundreds of his soldiers behind... To Du Lin, it was an unprecedented attack.

The three Elders left quietly. They all looked sad and dispirited.

In the vast universe, Fu Wei retrieved the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier. She returned to the deck of her battleship with a pale face.

Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards who were scattering around the deck greeted her quietly.

Fu Wei's beautiful body was damp with sweat. She smoothed her cascading long hair. Her bright, complicated eyes swept through the warriors standing on the deck. She asked with surprise. "Where's Shi Yan? I just saw him here."

"Not long after you and Du Lin had engaged in the battle, he quietly left to the training room."

Fu Wei furrowed her bold brows. She contemplated, looking at the vast universe in the direction that massive shield had disappeared. She said, "We've met our savior."

An Yun totally agreed with her and nodded. "I wonder which precursor has just helped us. Otherwise, we would have had a fatal consequence this time. Anyway..." She paused, speaking suspiciously, "We don't have any record of that shield in our records of Original Incipient Grade weapons."

Fu Wei's soft body shivered, "No? Are you sure???"

An Yun nodded again, "I'm sure. We don't have any information."

The light in Fu Wei's bright eyes rippled. She had many thoughts in her mind, so she was absorbed into her thoughts for a long time.

"That shield... is much stronger than the Thunder God Spear."

An Yun was baffled, asking unconsciously, "What level?"

Fu Wei shook her head, "I don't know... It seems to be beyond my knowledge. I think that even our current Pavilion Master doesn't have the capability to refine such a powerful weapon. The formation carved on that shield was really marvelous. It looked so real and it was changing every second. I couldn't see the mysteries of that kind of formation."

An Yun shivered in fear.

She knew Fu Wei's level in refining tools. Fu Wei was a rare talent who came once every ten thousand years in Potion and Tool Pavilion. She was also the prominent candidate for the precious

throne of the Pavilion Master. Her knowledge of refining things was approved by the Elders. They agreed that her attainment was much better than most of the Elders.

If she couldn't understand the changing formation on the Blood Shield, it was enough to prove that the shield was one of the top rarest divine weapons in this world.

"Perhaps... It doesn't belong in our Agate Star Area," said Fu Wei after pondering for a long time.

An Yun was more inexplicably surprised.

"It doesn't belong in our Agate Star Area... It doesn't belong in our Agate Star Area..." Fu Wei was baffled. After a while, she seemed to recall something. Her blue eyes glistened. She whispered instinctively, "... He... Our Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't have any record about him. He's not from Agate Star Area. Right?"

She shook her head, laughing at her own idea. She thought that she was too skeptical then. Maybe be she was so tired that she had tried to link the two things that wouldn't have anything in common.

How could an Original God Realm warrior control a divine weapon that was stronger than the Thunder God Spear?

It was not logical, indeed.

Even if an Original God Realm warrior had such a divine weapon, he shouldn't have been able to parry Du Lin's attack. It's common sense, right?

She tried to reason with her common sense and she came up with the conclusion that she was just overthinking it. She laughed at her silly idea and thought that it was because she was too tired. Thus, she quit mulling over this thought.

Chapter 1009: The Shield has Become Heavier...

Fu Wei and An Yun stood in front of a closed door inside the battleship. They gently knocked.

If Shi Yan hadn't poured energy into her body, Fu Wei wouldn't have been able to resist Du Lin's attack for so long. Fu Wei and An Yun were going to remember Shi Yan's support forever in their hearts. After the battleship had departed again, Fu Wei, who hadn't recovered her powers yet, came to show her gratitude to Shi Yan.

They had knocked on the stone door for a while. However, no one had responded. When Fu Wei and An Yun had lost their patience, the stone door cracked open, revealing a ferociously ugly face.

"He had given you a lot of energy. He's cultivating in seclusion to recover his energy. You don't need to come here and disturb him." Leona said with bad manners. Then, she suddenly slammed the door shut, blocking Fu Wei and An Yun outside.

Both Fu Wei and An Yun could see the cold and evil intentions of Leona's eyes. She didn't like the two of them.

The two exchanged looks with surprised faces.

Being baffled for a while, Fu Wei beamed a faint smile and shook her head. "Never mind. We should leave. I also want to recover first."

An Yun nodded. She didn't give any advice and just left with Fu Wei. They didn't know what was going on in that cultivating chamber.**

**Leona closed the stone door. She didn't say anything and

walked directly towards a secret room.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming stayed in a corner of the training room, looking at her with admiration and respect.

Leona carefully opened the secret door and then got in.

The stone chamber wasn't big. The divine weapon Fu Wei and Du Lin respected as if it was a thing from God lay on the ground like a broken stone. It looked naturally plain without any blood light, brutal aura, or any beams of energy.

Shi Yan sat still on the cushion in the center of the room with an ashen face. His body had many bleeding cuts, some of which were deep to the bone as if he got slashed by many massive knives. It looked very scary.

He looked weak, sitting cross-legged. His body was slowly gathering wisps of energy.

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo were watching over him, their faces stern and anxious.

At the moment Fu Wei and Du Lin fought, Shi Yan discreetly walked off the deck and entered his secret chamber in the cultivating room.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo didn't care about the battle between Potion and Tool Pavilion and Du Lin's force. Seeing him leave, they followed.

They had seen Shi Yan release his power and send the Blood Shield away through the space slit. From that space slit, they had seen Du Lin's thunderbolt attack and the subtle change of the giant Blood Shield, which had stopped Du Lin's extremely fierce attack.

Also at that moment, Shi Yan started to tremble restlessly, his body cracking and bleeding.

Ka Tuo's eyes had a beam of inexplicable respect at Shi Yan. He couldn't press down his excitement.

Du Lin at Peak of Ethereal God Realm had struck his fatal attack with the Thunder God Spear, a divine weapon at Original Incipient Grade, but he couldn't pierce through the shield to damage the Mysterious Heavenly Glacier.

What kind of power was that?!?

Ka Tuo studied the young man who was bleeding with reverence arising from the bottom of his heart.

Also at that moment, he realized that although he was at the same Third Sky of Original God Realm, even if he used his best abilities, he couldn't be an equal match to this young man.

He was worth the successor of the Master of the Cortege of Eight!

"I sent them away," Leona closed the secret chamber, frowning, talking indifferently.

Fei Lan nodded. She glanced at Shi Yan, sighing.

She didn't agree with the idea that Shi Yan would join the battle himself. At the Third Sky of Original God Realm, even if he used the shield to resist Du Lin's attack with force, Shi Yan still got wounded. Since Fei Lan didn't know how severe Shi Yan's wounds were, she was distraught.

Leona was mean to Fu Wei and An Yun because of Shi Yan's lousy condition in the secret chamber. Because of them, Shi Yan got hurt. Leona wouldn't give them a nice face.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were watching the young man in silence. They seemed to be waiting for something.

Gradually, the bleeding cut slowly closed at a speed that the naked eye could observe. After the wounds had begun to heal, all the bleeding cracks on his body were healed within one hour, leaving nothing.

However, Fei Lan and the other two were still severe.

Time flew hurriedly. The young man opened his eyes. He exhaled

and spoke calmly, "Don't worry. I'm okay."

The three of them could finally relax.

"Du Lin at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm with his Thunder God Spear had struck a deadly lightning strike. That one was really formidable." He sighed while looking at the shield near him and grinned. "Luckily we have this shield. We're so lucky. Or else..."

Right at the moment, Du Lin struck his lethal attack. Shi Yan had used space power to teleport the Blood Shield to that specific locus in the void. The blood mark shield in the shield was activated and it connected to Shi Yan's soul. That was how he was able to control it.

Before that attack arrived, the mark on the shield was activated, crazily taking in blood and Essence Qi around. It also absorbed all the key kinds of energy in his body.

At that moment, negative energy of his body, Essence Qi, and even Immortal Demon Blood were sucked away. All of them were poured into the massive Blood Shield.

Eighty percent of his power was taken away including negative energy, God power, and Immortal Demon Blood. That was how the Blood Shield could enlarge and parry that strike.

He didn't expect to consume a considerable amount of energy to use that Blood Shield. At Third Sky of Original God Realm, the combination of all kinds of magical energy in his body could compare to the accumulated energy of the Second Sky or even Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. However, his energy was just enough to perform ten percent of the shield.

Anyway, even if it was just ten percent, it was enough to stop the Thunder God Spear, the strike of Du Lin at Peak of Ethereal God Realm!

After Du Lin struck the giant Blood Shield with Thunder God Spear, the shield still looked intact. It seemed to be unbreakable.

However, its owner couldn't endure that attack. He got hurt badly.

Luckily, as the battle happened, Shi Yan had discreetly absorbed a significant amount of Essence Qi from the dead. His consumed energy was refilled quickly and he was able to have a speedy recovery.

At this moment, Shi Yan was in his best condition, which was because of the marvelous function of his devouring ability. His energy wasn't exhausted, which would prevent him from joining the battle.

He looked at that small shield, his visage complicated. He waved his hand and the shield hissed all the way to his hand. The weight of a mountain fell in his hand. He couldn't hold it so he lowered his hand until he had almost reached the stone ground to steady his body.

"Too heavy!" He took a deep breath, his eyes frightened. "This Blood Shield is as heavy as a mountain. I have enough strength to lift up a thousand-meter-long mountain, but it's very difficult to lift this shield!"

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were baffled.

"It... wasn't like this," said Fei Lan after contemplating for a while.

Nodding, Shi Yan gave a forced smile. "Yeah, when I picked it up before, it wasn't as heavy as it is now. After it has been activated to resist that strike, its weight has doubled."

The other three were surprised.

"Senior, which level is this Blood Shield?" Ka Tuo became excited. "The Thunder God Spear Du Lin used is at Original Incipient Grade. I don't know its level, but I could see that his spear couldn't... attack this shield. So, this shield's level should be higher than his God Spear, right?"

Fei Lan and Leona also wore a complicated look as they looked at

the plain shield.

The expert that cultivated Death power Upanishad had given the Dark Sky family this shield. Fei Lan kept it for so many years. However, Fei Lan didn't know the level of this shield because she had never had its approval to activate it. Thus, she didn't know its mysteries or its power.

However, she was curious to see which level this shield was.

"I don't know its real level," Shi Yan chose his words. Fei Lan and the other two were disappointed, but Shi Yan continued, "but I'm sure that the Thunder God Spear's level is lower than this shield. Because... my realm and power were too low, of course, I can't resist Du Lin by myself. I could only resist him because the quality of the shield is much better than the Thunder God Spear. Or else, I wouldn't have only gotten hurt. My God Body would burst off!"

Listening to him, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo's eyes brightened.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile, looking at the other three. "Seems like our understanding of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight and their master is still shallow. I think... our Inheritances are the absolute powers of this world, the mysterious but marvelous peak powers Upanishads of all galaxies. Our precursors must be the existences that topped all the high-grade star areas!"

The other three became so thrilled.

Waving his hand, Shi Yan muttered, "You guys can leave now. I'm all right. Yeah, I want to study this shield. I will try to see if I can find something..."

The other three nodded, trying to hold the excitement in their hearts. They left with a discreet joy.

Dark, Corrosion, and Chaos were their main powers Upanishads. They knew and they believed that their powers Upanishad were really powerful. If they could prove their belief, they would be more resolute and confident of their powers. It would help

strengthen their belief and their persistence in pursuing their realms.

They closed the door and left. Shi Yan stroked the heavy Blood Shield. He was confused, mumbling to himself. "At the moment that spear impacted the shield, I could sense so many magical changes in the center of the seal. It seems to be the utmost power of that mysterious and complex formation. The one who fabricated this shield had gone against the rules of Nature... He did have delicate attainment..."

While he was talking to himself, his soul altar swayed and spun. His mind relaxed as his Soul Consciousness seeped into the Blood Shield.

The small, plain shield glowed with a red halo. The blood mark, which had disappeared, emerged little by little. It looked mysteriously evil as if it had hidden some astonishing surprise.

Chapter 1010: When Words Get Sore, Adding More Words is Useless

Shi Yan's soul altar slowly revolved. The mark on the glabella of his host soul glowed. Wisps of Soul Consciousness poured into the shield and connected to the marvelous formation on the shield.

Clusters of blood cloud appeared, changing continually. Shortly after, countless mysterious and extraordinary formations emerged on the shield. The clusters of blood cloud had connected to each of the blood clouds of the mark on his forehead perfectly.

Shortly after, the blood mark seemed to turn into a mouth. Inside that mouth, a small vortex appeared and enlarged. It created a fiercely, strong suction force.

The seven hundred acupuncture points on his body made some commotion. The vortexes inside each acupuncture points were revolving with the mark of the shield. They had become the extension to the suction force from the shield.

His eyes brightened.

He stroked the shield unintentionally with one hand. He grinned as he knew he had a good grasp of one ability of the shield.

The blood mark on the shield had that powerful suction of Devouring power Upanishad. It could collect energy and transmit it to his acupuncture points. This shield wasn't just a divine defensive tool. It had more astounding abilities.

Shi Yan quieted down. He studied the mysteries of the shield and didn't recognize the time flying.

After an unknown time, the stone door squeaked open. Fei Lan frowned, entering the chamber. "Some VIP from Potion and Tool Pavilion is about to arrive. Fu Wei and Potion and Tool Pavilion's staff are waiting on the deck."

Bewildered, Shi Yan carefully put away the Blood Shield. He contemplated for a while and then said naturally, "Let's go there and see."

Fei Lan nodded quietly.

On the deck of the massive battleship, Fu Wei, An Yun, and Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards were watching, waiting for something solemnly.

The guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion nerves relaxed as if they knew that when the person came, they would be free from danger.

Fu Wei's face glowed with health. After recovering, she had almost resumed her powers. She was chatting cheerfully with An Yun.

When Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo emerged from the cabin, Fu Wei smiled gently and nodded at him. "Are you okay?"

"I'm all right." Shi Yan looked at the dark void and asked curiously, "Who's about to arrive?"

"You'll know later." Fu Wei felt so excited, laughing. "He... You must be interested."

Shi Yan was more astounded.

Two hours later.

An intense light shot toward from a far distant. That light moved like a meteor. It appeared in people's sight shortly.

It was a lozenge crystal war chariot, which was fabricated with Empty Fantasy Crystal. It seemed to have the power to move through space. While the war chariot was dashing, it rose ripples of space energy, which looked mysteriously inexplicable.

Swoosh!

The crystal lozenge war chariot moved like a silky ribbon, but it

was as sharp as a sword cutting across the sky. It was heading towards the huge battleship.

Fu Wei didn't use the protective halo. She put down all defensive systems to allow that war chariot to land.

"Tenth Elder!"

Guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion bent their bodies slightly to greet him, their eyes respectful.

A lanky old man stood clasping his hands behind his back on the glass war chariot. Standing behind him were three Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts. They all had calm and heavy auras as imposing as mountains. They were indeed famous warriors.

"Uncle Duo," Fu Wei smiled weakly, walking forward to greet him and speaking calmly, "You're here."

With the first glance at that old man, Shi Yan knew his status. He couldn't hide his surprise.

Zha Duo, the Tenth Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. He was the one who cultivated the extraordinary Space power Upanishad. Most of the Fantasy Sky Ring and the teleport formations that Potion and Tool Pavilion were selling were from this man. In Agate Star Area, his understanding of Space power Upanishad could be at the grandmaster level.

As they were warriors who cultivated Space power Upanishad, Shi Yan assessed him discreetly, his face grave.

Space energy fluctuation on Zha Duo's body was trivial, which gave Shi Yan a feeling of something unreal. This man was standing on this massive battleship, but he looked like he was in some unknown space. Shi Yan was bewildered. He had a strange feeling that Zha Duo was standing in a space crack this entire time.

He was worth his Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivating Space power Upanishad. His God Body moved freely through space

slits. Without magical materials like Empty Fantasy Crystal, he could still move through space.

In the legends, experts cultivating space power could travel through space slits and move from one space node to another within a blink of an eye. At that time, their God Bodies would like that they were in the fantasy, unfixed spaces.

That kind of warrior was the toughest target. It was hard to kill them. Unless one had the power to block all spaces, they couldn't subdue the experts cultivating Space power Upanishad no matter how many warriors were sent for this assassination mission.

Warriors using space power were good at teleporting between space. If they wanted to go, there wouldn't be as many solutions to block them.

Zha Duo arrogantly walked off his glass war chariot. He nodded slightly to Fu Wei and said, "You did great. You found the Canon. You earned marvelous merit this time."

Fu Wei grinned, instinctively glancing at Shi Yan. "I'm just lucky. If he didn't give me the Canon, I wouldn't have gotten the Canon even if I was better."

Until this moment, Zha Duo looked at Shi Yan for the first time. He frowned, talking indifferently. "Too bad..."

"What's too bad?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"You have the talent in cultivating Space power Upanishad, but your powers Upanishads are mixed up. You're cultivating more powers Upanishad." Zha Duo's eyes had a hidden disdain. "What a greedy cultivation! It's hard to advance Space power Upanishad to the acme. You've progressed Space power Upanishad, so you know some abilities. Ordinary people hate that they couldn't risk their lives to cultivate this power. You have a good fortune, but you don't want to grasp it. You have more powers Upanishads, which couldn't help you maintain your pure Space power Upanishad. It's

too bad."

Shi Yan pouted, saying nothing.

In Zha Duo's eyes, Space power Upanishad was the best Power Upanishad in this world. He considered this kind of power as his glory and he had invested his lifetime effort in it.

Seeing Shi Yan was a good Seed, but he had mixed powers Upanishad. Zha Duo wasn't pleased. He thought that Shi Yan was just wasting his innate talent and he would never reach the most subtly marvelous realm of Space power Upanishad.

"Tenth Elder, you two are cultivating Space power Upanishad. If you don't mind, shall we discuss it a little bit?" Fu Wei kindly suggested.

She wanted to help Shi Yan increase his attainment in cultivating space power. As she knew Zha Duo was the one who had the most exquisite achievement in cultivating this power in Agate Star Area, it would be much better than the dozens of books she had given to Shi Yan if Zha Duo agreed to help.

However, it was obvious that Zha Duo didn't want to teach Shi Yan. He shook his head resolutely. "He's not a member of Potion and Tool Pavilion. His cultivating isn't thorough and it is mixed. He won't have any good achievement. I don't want to waste my efforts on him."

Listening to him, Fu Wei was embarrassed. She gave a reluctant smile.

Shi Yan was perplexed, but he didn't say anything. However, he felt annoyed and thought that this old man was too arrogant. He had considered himself a mighty sage in cultivating Space power.

"Oh well, I thought he was very powerful. Turns out he's just an Ethereal God Realm warrior," Ka Tuo grinned and grunted, "The masters of Devil Blood Star and Monster Dragon Star, the Incipient God Realm experts, are more modest to my senior. Just a Third

Sky of Ethereal God Realm and you think you're rocketing into the sky? Haha. Well, it's like water in a full bottle that doesn't move while water in a bottle half full sways a lot..."

Zha Duo frowned.

One of the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors standing behind him shouted angrily, his face cold. "Wanton!"

Fu Wei and An Yun discolored. They didn't think that these two groups of people would quarrel with each other instead of discussing fruitfully.

Fu Wei suddenly recognized that she was a little self-righteous in this case. Pushing too much wouldn't help. She thought that as Zha Duo was cultivating Space power Upanishad, he would appreciate Shi Yan, a warrior cultivating Space power Upanishad too. However, she knew she was wrong from Zha Duo's voice and manner.

Zha Duo always wanted to find an assistant to handle his junk works, which were fabricating high-quality Fantasy Sky Ring and Teleport Formation. After that, he could have more time to study his Space power Upanishad.

Shi Yan was a suitable candidate. He met all the requirements. However, he denied joining Potion and Tool Pavilion, which gave Zha Duo a big question. That was why he wasn't so friendly to Shi Yan. It was all because of his presumption.

"If my senior wasn't generous enough, would you have gotten the Canon?" Ka Tuo smiled faintly. "Some people don't know how to repay a favor. Quite the contrary, they only have harsh words. I can say my knowledge has widened today."

Zha Duo's eyes shrank, talking faintly. "We paid one hundred million divine crystals for the Canon. It's like a business. We don't owe you anything." Pausing for a while, Zha Duo continued indifferently, "As we're delivering you to Shadow Ghostly Prison,

it's a generous bonus out of our scheme. Potion and Tool Pavilion owes you nothing."

Ka Tuo laughed again. He wanted to say more, but Shi Yan had stopped him.

He looked at Fu Wei, bent slightly to greet her and then said, "Your rescue team is here. I think it's time for us to leave."

Fu Wei's bright eyes were flustered as she whispered, "We haven't reached Shadow Ghostly Prison yet. Moreover, our destination is in the place too. You guys can go with us, anyway."

Shaking his head, Shi Yan glanced at Zha Duo with strange eyes. "Someone doesn't welcome us on this battleship. I don't want to stay here to irritate people. We should bid farewell from here."

He nodded to Fei Lan. Fei Lan understood his intention. She went to the cultivating room to call for Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming.

Zha Duo was still arrogant. He just snorted and didn't want to make them stay.

Fu Wei had a headache. She tried to tell Shi Yan to stay until they reached the destination. However, Shi Yan insisted on leaving.

Shi Yan nodded to Fu Wei and his team departed from the battleship when Zuo Shi, Xuan Ming, and Fei Lan got back on the deck. They flew into the dark, immense galaxy, and headed to Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Seeing Shi Yan fly away, Fu Wei had a complicated look. She sighed inwardly. At the moment she looked at Zha Duo, she had a hidden sadness. She was a little indifferent, opposite of her previous warm welcome.**

Chapter 1011: Shadow Ghostly Prison

"He's from Blood Devil's tribe. He saved McGee, the youngest son of the Chief of Evil Dragon Tribe. He's the best friend of Ghost Hunter from the Brutal Dragon Tribe. Why did you enrage him?"

After Shi Yan's team left, Fu Wei asked her uncle with her furrowing, bold brow.

As they were both Elders of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, her status and position weren't lower than Zha Duo's even though Fu Wei was younger. She didn't need to hide things as she could tell him directly.

An Yun also thought that Zha Duo's deed wasn't appropriate but she didn't have the right to voice here.

There was no need to mention Shi Yan's relationships with the leaders of Monster Clan and Demon Clan. With only the fact that Shi Yan had given them the Canon, An Yun thought Potion and Tool Pavilion owed him. Then, Shi Yan didn't leave when Du Lin attacked them fiercely. At the critical moment, Shi Yan had helped Fu Wei recovered her energy. An Yun gradually developed good feelings for Shi Yan. She thought he was worth establishing a friendship with.

However, right as he had arrived, Zha Duo used sharp words to force Shi Yan's team to leave the battleship. An Yun thought that his deed wasn't appropriate.

"We're from Potion and Tool Pavilion. In this Agate Star Area, we don't participate in any battles. We don't need to care about any force." Zha Duo's visage was arrogant. He clasped his hands while he spoke, "Although Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't join any war or battle of the star area, we do have the power to overturn the situation of this star area. Even if he comes from a stronger force, he won't dare to cause any grudge against us. We don't need to worry about anyone."

"I don't know why you had to do so," Fu Wei shook her head.

Zha Duo looked at her in the eyes. "Why you care about him that much?"

Fu Wei was bewildered. She thought and then said, "He helped me."

Zha Duo smiled coldly. "On my way here, I've heard you repeat his name many times and the frequency was increasing. I can feel that you really appreciate this man. I think it's not a good sign."

Taking a deep breath, Zha Duo lowered his voice. "You're the hope of our party. Your innate talents are excellent and you have been concentrating always. You have the competence to control Potion and Tool Pavilion in the future. If you let affection distract you, our hope will be drifted away."

Fu Wei's eyes became baffled as she said with a surprised countenance. "Is that the reason you tried to force him to leave?"

Zha Duo didn't deny it. "I thought that you shouldn't stay with him for a long time. This man could possibly be the Mara in your heart. I'm responsible for cleaning it for you."

Fu Wei and An Yun were astounded.

"It's unreasonable. You guys are thinking too much," Fu Wei gave a forced smile.

"I hope so. But we should prevent it early," Zha Duo was persistent.

Fu Wei sighed begrudgingly, her face bitter. She became more determined.

"Senior, that old man is despicable, seriously. He took advantage of you. But instead of saying thanks, he mocked and provoked us. Senior, you're too nice since you didn't get angry. Harrumph, if I got angry, I wouldn't have let it go!"

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Zuo Shi, and Xuan Ming were staying on a blue-gray asteroid, which was rushing in the dark sea of stars. They were heading to Shadow Ghostly Prison.

There were many meteorites moving in this dark outer space, so their asteroid wasn't really eye-catching. Fei Lan used her energy to control it. It didn't fly as fast as the Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleship flew.

However, they weren't hurrying. Although their asteroid was slow, the distance to Shadow Ghostly Prison wasn't very long. They didn't waste much time anyway.

"When they say something you don't like, just leave. We don't need to quarrel with those people." Shi Yan smiled relaxedly. "Moreover, he wasn't wrong. We exchanged the Canon for many things. It was a fair trade. I was about to leave. As he was talking impulsively, there could have been a reason for us to leave though."

"He's right," Fei Lan understood the matter. "Potion and Tool Pavilion has a big internal issue. Although Du Lin failed this time, it's not certain that the enemy wouldn't make another move. It's not good if we mingle with them. I think they can't even take protect themselves. The next attack may be more furious. It would be perilous if we stayed on that battleship."

Leona also nodded. She had prepared to leave already. When Shi Yan countered Du Lin and hurt himself, she thought that it was absolutely not a wise move.

"Even if we wanted to leave, we should leave confidently and at ease. Now it's like we were enraged, so we left. I don't like it." Ka Tuo shook his head. Apparently, he was annoyed. Along the way, he cursed Zha Duo often with extreme language. He had even insulted eighteen of Zha Duo's generations once!

"You guys are going to Shadow Ghostly Prison for the inheritance of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. Do you have any clue about it?"

Shi Yan didn't bother Ka Tuo and smiled at Zuo Shi.

"We have no clue. We heard that its body is in Shadow Ghostly Prison. I thought that if we got close enough, I would be able to sense it." Zuo Shi was serious. She smiled pretty cutely. "Shi Yan ge-ge, is there any problem if we follow you?"

"Of course not. But... I'm afraid you guys would encounter more dangers."

"Dangers? What kind of dangers?"

"We also have business at Shadow Ghostly Prison this time. Perhaps we will face the Dark Shadow Clan. I'm afraid unexpected things would happen to you if you follow us."

"No problem. I think you can handle them well."

Zuo Shi looked lively beautiful, standing on the asteroid. She was wearing a pure white long dress. She looked very cute and innocent. Anyway, her slender legs made people dream of them.

It has been many years and this little girl has grown up to be a charming lady. No wonder why that Drifting Cloud warrior wanted to harass her. Since her bloodline had the inheritance of Water power Upanishad, this power Upanishad was formed naturally within her body. It made her skin exceptionally smooth and soft. Her bearings were pure and gentle.

Half a year later.

A blue-gray meteorite entered Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was a particular area of Agate Star Area that had gray mist covering the area year-round. Starlight in this area was blocked, making it deep, dark, and mysterious.

Battles happened unceasingly in Shadow Ghostly Prison. This unique area had many natural resources and races living together. Although most of the tribes here were native, there were several

alien tribes from other galaxies.

For example, the Dark Shadow Clan. Rumor said that it was a tribe coming from another star area. They understood the concept of space passages, which connected Shadow Ghostly Prison to the other worlds. No one knew where they dwelled.

Standing on the asteroid, they curiously watched the darker area in front of them.

Perhaps it was because of its particular condition of lacking light, but this place was cold and spooky. They saw a cold water current flowing, but they didn't know where it was headed. Every time it passed by them, they would feel a chill invading deep into their bones, their souls shaking hard.

"There are so many wrecked battleships in front of us!" Fei Lan suddenly lifted up her head and hissed.

Swoosh!

The blue-gray asteroid accelerated, moving forward like a meteor.

On the asteroid, Shi Yan's pupils shrank as he shouted, "There's a fierce battle here!"

They saw hundreds and then thousands of ruined battleships. They were shattered like crushed stones. Corpses floated in this dark and eerie sea of stars. They belonged to Human Clan, Ghost Mark Clan, Monster Clan, Dark Clan, Corpse Clan, and even the Wood Clan and Ice Clan. Those corpses weren't intact. Some were dried and weathered. However, they hadn't been decayed yet due to the cold temperature.

Fragments of battleships, broken war chariots, flying carriage, and other vehicles floated and drifted. There were countless pieces like that in this creepy area.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness moved like a shuttle and explored the area.

"There's no aura of living beings. No one is still alive." Shi Yan frowned, his face stern.

As soon as they arrived in Shadow Ghostly Prison, they immediately saw an extremely tragic battlefield. These images had impressed them deeply. Shi Yan understood that this place wasn't like any other place. If they were careless, they would become one of those hovering corpses.

Everybody put on a heavy-hearted complexion.

Chapter 1012: Dark Shadow Clan

On their way, they saw more fragments of battleships and war chariots, and a lot more corpses of warriors from different clans.

Shadow Ghostly Prison had battles year-round. It didn't have a peaceful day. This place was the most chaotic area of Agate Star Area. Its dwellers got used to wars and bloody battles. Many warriors had experienced hundreds of battles. They all had various fighting experiences.

People living in this place were naturally cruel. People who could adapt well were able to survive. There was no principle here aside from power. The realm and competence were the rulers that measured warriors.

"Senior, Shadow Ghostly Prison is really vast. Without a direction, it's hard to find the target." Ka Tuo felt a little-bored standing on the asteroid looking at the floating fragments of battleships nearby. He asked reluctantly, "When will we reach the other end of this place?"

They had been traveling for half a month in Shadow Ghostly Prison, always heading forward. They had seen a lot of terrible aftermaths of battles, but they hadn't found any living creature.

This dark and desolate sea of stars didn't seem to have anything alive. Gradually, people had become impatient. This dispirited and helpless feeling of being unable to find their target slowly filled their souls.

"No hurry. We have a clear direction. It's just that you don't know it." Shi Yan scolded him, standing on the bluish asteroid and looking at the far distance ahead of them. A scarlet drop of blood that looked like a gemstone cracked open. Strange energy fluctuations emerged from it.

It was the light that the souls couldn't see that extended towards

the corners of this deep area. In just a blink, it could travel billions of miles.

Squinting, Shi Yan's eyes sparkled with blood light. He had a connection with that drop of blood. The magical energy fluctuated and rippled from him.

"We will continue moving forward," he turned to look at Fei Lan.

Fei Lan nodded quietly. She didn't say anything, unceasingly pouring more energy into that blue-gray meteorite that they were riding. The rock then flew forward even faster.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming sat neatly in a corner of the steroid, their breathing steady and deep and eyes closed. They were still cultivating and studying powers Upanishad. They were using divine crystals to accumulate energy with the hope of advancing further.

While their meteorite was dashing, Shi Yan observed Zuo Shi. He was really amazed.

He could see that Zuo Shi's energy was increasing every day. Although her energy accumulation wasn't as fast as Shi Yan's when he used Devouring power Upanishad, Zuo Shi's speed of taking in divine crystals was something that ordinary people couldn't compare.

Zuo Shi's blood contained the true blood of Holy Beast Black Tortoise. The Black Tortoise was a creature born in the Immemorial Epoch of Grace Mainland. It had jumped into outer space very early. From some aspect, Immemorial creatures were more favored by Nature than the God Clan and Demon Clan.

Their existences were created by the mysteries of earth and heaven. It seemed like they could understand the nature of their powers right when they started to cultivate it. Each of those creatures had powers that could shatter the world.

The Holy Beast Black Tortoise was the holy spirit of Water.

Legends said that from the moment it was born, it had gained the subtle power of Water. Its bloodline also had the essence of Water power, which could be passed on to each generation. However, sometimes this power was weak and sometimes it was very powerful.

Xuan Ming was from the same race as Black Tortoise, but due to the fact that the inheritance had been passed through many different generations, his bloodline wasn't pure.

However, it was unknown why Zuo Shi had an extremely pure bloodline. Xuan Ming felt like he had picked up the top treasure when he found Zuo Shi. He insisted that Zuo Shi's blood was the closest to his Holy ancestor Black Tortoise. She was the most eligible descendant to inherit the extreme Essence of Water from Black Tortoise.

Frowning and sensing, Shi Yan's countenance was strange. He nodded discreetly.

He didn't doubt what Xuan Ming had told him about Zuo Shi's ability anymore.

Zuo Shi was born to cultivate the essence Water power Upanishad. Her blood contained the mysterious power Upanishad that made her cultivation have no bottleneck. Her realm was increasing every day, although it was just by a little at a time.

This kind of rapid advancement made someone with a speedy progress like Shi Yan admire and appraise.

If there were geniuses in this world, Zuo Shi was one of them. Compared to her talent, Shi Yan wasn't good enough.

Knowing someone was watching her, Zuo Shi opened her eyes. When she found that it was Shi Yan, she smiled sweetly. "Why are you looking at me?"

"You are at Third Sky of King God Realm. I want to know when you can enter Original God Realm."

"When..." Zuo Shi thought and then answered him, "It should be short. I think around half a year later, I can break through to Original God Realm."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo didn't notice them. However, they became baffled upon hearing Zuo Shi. They looked at Zuo Shi as if they were watching a monster with astounded faces.

They knew that Zuo Shi had just reached Second Sky of King God Realm when they were on Fu Wei's battleship. How long has it been? And she said that she could reach Original God Realm within half a year. What kind of cultivating speed was that?

Abnormal! Totally Abnormal!

Fei Lan's team acclaimed in their heads.

Quite the contrary, Xuan Ming didn't feel strange. He'd accompanied Zuo Shi for so many years that he had become numb to her progress a long time ago. He wasn't surprised at all.

"Yeah, it's really fast this time. Previously, I couldn't be that fast. When I broke through to another realm, it used to take several years," Zuo Shi explained humbly. "It's because of Fu Wei's pellet. She gave me a lot of pellets to cultivate the soul and energy. They are all level 5 or 6 Divine Grade pellets. Those pellets have helped me accumulate energy really fast. And at the same time, I don't need to worry about the progress of my realm. That's how I naturally break through faster."

"So when you didn't use pellets, it took 'several years' to break through a realm?" Ka Tuo was baffled. He scratched his head agitatedly. He thought that he was about to collapse.

"Yeah, I didn't have pellets, so I just used divine crystals to accumulate energy. Of course, it was really slow," Zuo Shi answered earnestly. ,

Ka Tuo dropped his jaw, looking at Zuo Shi and then Shi Yan. He couldn't speak for a long time.

Fei Lan and Leona were also dumbstruck.

"It's the ancient continent though. It has mysteries that we would never be able to imagine. It could nurture such talents." Fei Lan sighed dejectedly, having a feeling of being defeated.

Previously, they couldn't understand Shi Yan's miracle in his cultivation. However, they finally understood why Shi Yan didn't have any blockage in accumulating energy since they accompanied him for a long time. They now knew why Shi Yan could cultivate that quickly.

But Zuo Shi...

She was just an ordinary little girl. Without that terrifying Devouring power Upanishad, how could she be so unusually talented?

The three of them looked at each other, shaking their heads and sighing inwardly. They thought that they would never be able to catch up with these two little monsters.

"Fu Wei jie-jie was really nice," Zuo Shi cocked her head, blinking innocently. "When we left the battleship, I saw that she feel so lost. She didn't want it. I think she didn't want us to leave."

Shi Yan frowned and didn't say anything.

They had traveled a long way afterward.

Today, they finally saw some war chariots flying. Those were the butterfly-shaped war chariots, which were flat like shells. Each war chariot had some holes that allowed people to stay. Shi Yan's team could vaguely see many people inside.

There were around ten butterfly-shaped war chariots made of a strange wooden material. They looked light but durable, so they flew really fast. The edges of those war chariots emitted strange light beams of energy.

Those butterfly war chariots were heading to a desolate star, which looked like a ruin with many bottomless deep holes running directly into the core of the star. Those in-depth caves released cold air currents.

Apparently, it was an abandoned mineral star. Perhaps it was exploited until it was emptied out. Ten butterfly war chariots hissed, descended, and then flew into the deep holes. They released their Soul Consciousness, extending deep further.

"Their Soul Consciousnesses are extraordinary. It's hard to lock them." Fei Lan stood up quietly. Immediately, the asteroid they were riding halted ten thousand meters away from that mineral star. She frowned and said to Shi Yan, "Seems like they're looking for something. They all sent their Soul Consciousnesses deep inside that mineral star."

Shi Yan's visage wasn't pleasant. His eyes became darker as he said, "They are Dark Shadow Clan warriors."

Hearing him, Fei Lan and Leona put on cold countenances. Fei Lan took a deep breath, her murderous aura emitting thickly. "Are they really members of the Dark Shadow Clan?"

"Butterfly-shaped war chariots, unidentified Soul Consciousness... They are the features of the Dark Shadow Clan," Shi Yan nodded. "I got this information from Fu Wei when I chatted with her. I think we aren't wrong."

Fei Lan and Leona looked so cold. They had ferocious and malignant looks when they observed that mineral star.

"Let's go there and check it out," said Shi Yan indifferently.

Fei Lan immediately controlled the meteorite, heading towards the abandoned, desolate mineral star. This mineral star had countless holes. They were like the dark abyss leading to the subterranean world. Cold Qi fumed from each hole as if the materials in this mineral stars belonged to the Ice class.

When they landed on the mineral star, all the butterfly war chariots of Dark Ghost Clan had all disappeared into the holes. Shi Yan quietly sensed for a while. He found that those wisps of roving Soul Consciousness still seeped deep into the place as if they were trying to find something.

"We're going down there too." Shi Yan jumped off the asteroid and then plunged into a hole.

In their group, Fei Lan had Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but her real fighting competence could compare to Peak of Ethereal God Realm. Leona and Ka Tuo were also the kind of warriors that could leap their realms and challenge other higher-realm warriors. Shi Yan's competence was somehow immeasurable, anyway. Unless they encountered Incipient God Realm existences down there, they wouldn't have to bear much damage.

If they were unlucky and faced many Peak of Ethereal God Realm experts, Shi Yan had the confidence to move his team to the nearest space nod within a blink of an eye.

As he was confident, he wasn't fearful. He led his team into the ground.

They had pierced through dozens of thousands of meters before the extremely cold subterranean world appeared in their vision. This mineral star had many crystal glaciers. It looked like a dreamy icy glass world. The glaciers and icicles stood and supported this world, giving it a spacious but empty look.

The hissing noise came from the butterfly war chariots which arose from the continuous ice mountains. Roving wisps of Soul Consciousness raked through the place as if they were trying to find anything alive.

After Shi Yan's team got into the icy world underground, their life energies fluctuated clearly. They immediately became the target of the Dark Shadow clansmen. Shortly after, the butterfly war chariots began to fly towards them, shortening the distance

between them.

Chapter 1013: Proactively Kill!

The three butterfly war chariots approached. They were discernible between the gaps of the icicles. They moved like crying shuttles.

One of them dashed over. Instantly, it hovered above an icicle in front of Shi Yan's team. The other two circled, observing like guards that prevented Shi Yan's team from escaping.

A face emerged from one of the holes on the butterfly war chariot in front of them.

That face looked similar to most of the other creatures from many races. It had eyes, a nose, and a mouth. However, the head of that face was totally different. It looked like an octopus with many tentacles. That creature didn't have hair. Those tentacles, which were more than a meter long, were his hair.

His tentacles were brown-gray like his skin color. Each of his tentacles was a little bit bigger than a human thumb. They draped over his shoulder and chest and reached his waist. His tentacles could fly even when there was no wind.

This Dark Shadow warrior wore a set of gray armor that hid behind his tentacles. However, half of his body that protruded from the war chariot looked gentle and slender like a willow catkin. It gave people a feeling that they were floating.

Just like his wandering Soul Consciousness.

At first look, Shi Yan could confirm that he was from the Dark Shadow Clan. Tentacle-headed, a roving Soul Consciousness, and a butterfly-shaped chariot were their unique features. He was 100% sure about those creatures' origin when he saw their features.

The other half of that Dark Shadow man was still inside the war chariot. His brown-gray eyes moved fast while wisps of his Soul Consciousness were moving around Shi Yan's team. He frowned as

if he had confirmed that they weren't his targets. The man didn't say anything and retreated into his butterfly war chariot.

The butterfly war chariot flew away swiftly. It moved far away from this area so quickly that they couldn't see it anymore.

"They're looking for something." Shi Yan was surprised. "It should be someone. Otherwise, they wouldn't have come so quickly when they sensed our life signals."

Fei Lan nodded and agreed with him.

"That man doesn't have a high realm," Leona said with her hoarse voice.

"Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm," Shi Yan concluded easily. "The Soul Consciousness of the Dark Shadow Clan was super sensitive. I heard it's because of the tentacles on their heads. Those disgusting things give them the ability to use Soul Consciousness to invade the Sea of Consciousness. They are good at soul fighting, indeed. The Dark Shadow Clan has a floating God Body. They are fast, but they aren't strong enough. Usually, they won't engage in close combat. It's their weakness..."

From the moment he had decided to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison, he had learned about everything related to this mysterious clan.

From Wu Lan, Fu Wei, and Ghost Hunter, Shi Yan had known about the Dark Shadow Clan before he had seen them. He knew their advantages and disadvantages.

"What should we do?" Ka Tuo grinned fiendishly. "Are we capable of defeating them?"

"Don't rush. Just watch for a while to assess their general competence. There are around ten butterfly war chariots entering this place. If each of them has one Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, we must not act rashly!" hissed Shi Yan.

"I don't think so," Ka Tuo laughed. "If they came here with such a

strong force, they wouldn't have let us go that easily. I think they perhaps thought that we were troublesome and they didn't want trouble."

Fei Lan nodded.

Shi Yan chuckled, "Indeed. Anyway, we still need to make sure about it. We can't be impulsive."

"I understand."

Around ten butterfly war chariots were roaming between the glaciers. They were exploring as their Soul Consciousnesses raked around the area.

Shi Yan's team gathered and quietly moved around the area that the butterfly war chariots were operating. Sometimes, they stopped by the icicles to check.

After one hour.

"There are around fifty of them. Each butterfly war chariot has three to five warriors. They have only one Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, two First Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts, and the rest are at Original God Realm or King God Realm." Shi Yan opened his eyes and spoke to the others while standing on an iceberg. He lowered his voice, "We can't defeat them at once."

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were shocked. They became cold immediately. They knew that Shi Yan had made up his mind.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming were frightened, looking at him bewilderedly. They were so skeptical.

Among this group of four, Fei Lan was at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, Leona had First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, while Ka Tuo and Shi Yan were at Third Sky of Original God Realm. With these competencies, they wanted to strike the group of Dark Shadow Clan. In Zuo Shi's and Xuan Ming's eyes, they were crazy.

"If they surround us and attack us at once, it will be hard to get out of it safely." As Leona used to be the regimental commander of the Bloody Legion of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, she understood this kind of fighting well. She continued with a fierce face, "Divide them to attack. We will start with the weakest or the ones that stay furthest from their team. We must do this fast! Once we finish, we must move quickly. We just need to do so three or maybe five times max and then we can destroy half of their force. Our chance to win will be bigger!"

"We should do it like that!" Ka Tuo nodded continually.

He used to be the leader of a Pirate force. He had his skills in team battles. He thought Leona's tactic was flawlessly perfect. Apparently, it suited them the most.

"Alright!" Shi Yan wasn't hesitant at the critical time. He decided the plan, squinting. "Wait for a while. First, we will lock the butterfly war chariot that is flying furthest away from the others."

He knew that they shouldn't delay. If they wanted to attack the Dark Shadow Clan, they had to seize the chance when the others were scattered in their searching mission.

Once the Dark Shadow clansmen found their targets, they would gather. If they attacked them at that time, it wasn't different from putting their heads in their fishnet.

A flow of Soul Consciousness with space power moved like an invisible lightning strike between the glaciers. High-realm warriors could feel the energy of something moving at breakneck speed. However, since that wisp of Soul Consciousness had space power, they couldn't lock it.

Three seconds later, Shi Yan opened his eyes. He didn't talk but flew fast towards a general direction.

Leona and Ka Tuo didn't hesitate. They turned into a dark light and a gray mist respectively and followed him.

Fei Lan slightly frowned. She begrudgingly urged her powers to bring Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming, turning into a pale air current and flying towards a crack in the glacier.

A butterfly war chariot was moving around a dark, ice peak. Five Dark Shadow warriors had half of their upper bodies protruding from the shell chariot. Their tentacles were moving around while they observed the place with cold, indifferent eyes.

In that group of five members of the Dark Shadow Clan, there was one at Third Sky of Original God Realm expert, one at Second Sky of Original God Realm, and the other three had King God Realm. When their tentacles touched each other while floating around, they sent electric sparks into the void. It seemed like that was how their Soul Consciousnesses interacted and how it powered up their sensing powers.

The Soul Consciousness of Third Sky of Original God Realm clansman responded. The Dark Shadow man shouted, his eyes sparkling. "Someone's here!"

The other four Dark Shadow warriors cheered up. They gathered their Soul Consciousnesses, contributing energy to each other.

Standing behind an ice rock, Shi Yan quietly came closer. He arched his brows, his eyes cold.

He could feel the Dark Shadow man's Soul Consciousness sensing. Indeed, their sensing powers were terrifying. He had planned to come nearer before striking them. However, they had spotted him earlier.

Without hesitation, he attacked instantly when his life signal was discovered!

Shi Yan's soul altar spun, urging his refined power Upanishad. Three electric-like ribbons flashed and then disappeared into thin air.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The three cold white Bone Thorns shot out from a space slit with a power that could crush the void. They grumbly stabbed the butterfly war chariot.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The impact upon the butterfly war chariot sounded clear and pleasing. It was so tough that it didn't shatter instantly. However, it was blown, spinning aimlessly. The five Dark Shadow men were dizzy. Their bodies were swaying hard on that war chariot.

Swoosh!

A beam of pale light crossed over. One of the Dark Shadow men at King God Realm had a bleeding hole in his neck. His blood was sent away like arrows.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The white light continued to roar as if it came to take the souls away, which affected the souls severely.

The butterfly war chariot was still spinning. The other four Dark Shadow men were panic-stricken. They couldn't help but scream awfully, trying to call their fellow men.

"Block!"

A cold and low voice arose like an evil spell. The butterfly war chariot was suspended in their space. Sounds couldn't even pierce through what seemed to be a barrier.

The endless darkness had attacked them all of a sudden. The space confining them became so dark that they couldn't even see their own fingers. In that darkness, which was as thick as ink, their Soul Consciousnesses couldn't navigate.

Seeing the darkness fall over them, Shi Yan halted midway. He released his Soul Consciousness, searching the new target. When Ka Tuo and Fei Lan arrived, he hissed, "Leave it to Leona. We'll

attack the new target."

Then, he dashed away, disappearing like an arrow.

In a corner of the crystal icy world underground, the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert took out a pocket compass, his face grimaced.

The compass had many exquisite lines, expanding around. It showed many spooky green light dots. Each of them represented one of his troops. The compass was his tool to locate his troops.

However, the green light dots in his compass had disappeared continually...

He knew what it meant when the light dots disappeared!

His troopers had their souls connected to the compass. If one of them didn't die utterly, which meant that their soul altars still remained, the light dots wouldn't disappear even if their God Bodies were smashed.

That light dots represented the life seal of a soul!

In another area, the three light dots disappear from his compass!

The Dark Shadow expert paled. He hissed, "Stop our searching mission! Send my message asking our fellows to gather here! Immediately!"

The two First Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts next to him were shaken. They hurried to send the message.

"Someone is hunting us down." He took a deep breath, his restless mind gradually calming down. It felt like he had cold water splash away his flames of anger. "It's the group of humans we've seen earlier."

His two troops had eyes as cold as a glacier. They shouted in unison, "They don't know whether they should live or not!"

Chapter 1014: A Youngster of the Dark Clan

The ice mountains and glaciers glowed fulgently. Deadly sharp icicles were scattered around.

Hiding in a crack of the glacier in a corner of this icy world was a short and thin figure, his complexion grave. He gingerly hid his God Body in the blind corner of the glacier while lifting his face to peep through the crack above his head.

It was a youngster of the Dark Clan. He looked around fifteen or sixteen years old. He had a pair of dark pupils eyes, which looked crazy and ruthless as if he was a bloody, insane slaughterer. The murderous aura on his body wasn't something young people at his age should have. His light purple hair was disheveled, covering his forehead and half of his face.

The teenager squinted, his face evil. He didn't even blink when watching the butterfly war chariot of the Dark Shadow Clan appear above the crack.

This teenager wore simple black warrior clothes, which exposed his arms like iron. His pair of arms had many scars weaving with each other. The scabs of his scars had fallen off a long time ago. Now, they looked like odd snakes.

He had been hiding in this glacier for a long time.

To avoid the pursuit of the Dark Shadow Clan, he had been hiding all this time. His eyes sparkled with a harsh light.

From his angle, he could see a butterfly war chariot moving away from this area. The youngster narrowed his eyes, paying more attention.

All of a sudden, that butterfly war chariot exploded. Electric beams and fire burst off everywhere. It was hit severely.

The youngster's pupils shrank, his face stiff.

Boom!

In the burning flame, three Dark Shadow men emerged. They were panic-stricken, shouting crazily.

A muscular shadow emerged like lightning. Three white Bone Thorns flew out like deadly weapons. They tore space, thrusting towards the three Dark Shadow men.

An old woman with a lot of facial wrinkles appeared all of a sudden. She extended her hand, grabbing the void. Five pallid threads shot out. They moved as if they could erode everything. They entered the God Bodies of the three Dark Shadow men.

As the teenager was watching, the three Dark Shadow men were weakened rapidly. Their bones exploded as the threads pierced through their skins. They were bleeding badly.

A mysterious and yet evil black hole appeared, floating around. A powerful suction force fiercely came from that black hole and swallowed the soul altars of the three Dark Shadow warriors.

The teenager felt very chilled. He was frightened. He then hid deeper and more carefully as he was afraid that the others could sense him.

The young man hovering above the crack recalled the three Bone Thorns. They turned into three beams of white light and disappeared into his sleeves.

That young man was nonchalant as he looked around. His cold eyes suddenly looked in the youngster's general direction.

The youngster was shaken. He had a strange feeling that the man had sensed him. His heart sank into the abyss.

That young man seemed to know that he was hiding under the crack of the iceberg. However, he didn't do anything as he frowned, nodded to the old woman, and disappeared.

The dead bodies of the three Dark Shadow warriors shriveled and

dried up as if water and blood in their bodies were all sucked up. This looked extremely odd.

The fragments of the butterfly war chariot fell grumblingly on the ice above the youngster's head, echoing clearly.

The youngster felt tense. He hesitated for a while and then hurried to move through the ice cracks. He knew he was revealed. As he was afraid that the young man would use some malicious attacks, he instinctively moved to avoid.

He had pierced through the ice cracks for a long time like a fast shuttle. After he felt relatively safe, he stopped and recalled the moment he had peeked at the others. He didn't know why he felt something towards that young man and the old woman. It seemed strange to him, anyway.

Vaguely, he felt like he had some connection with those two, but he didn't know what it was. It was just his pure intuition.

The teenager frowned, considering things inside the glacier. He hesitated whether or not he should go there and check.

"Was someone down there lately?" Fei Lan looked at Shi Yan and asked uncertainly after they had left that area. She released the pale air current, covering Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming.

"Yeah, I spotted life energy fluctuate down there. It was hidden. If I didn't cultivate Death and Life power Upanishad, I wouldn't have been able to spot it." Shi Yan nodded. "That was a member of the Dark Clan, I suppose. The Dark Clan has a profound understanding of soul power. They are good at hiding soul aura and things. Perhaps, that one was the target of the Dark Shadow Clan's troop."

"Why didn't you force him out?" Fei Lan was surprised.

"Our target is the Dark Shadow Clan. We don't need to cause more trouble." Shi Yan shook his head, frowning. "They know us

too. It's not easy to ambush them anymore. It seems like we have to take real action." "Yeah, we can't ambush anymore," Fei Lan frowned. "We should wait for Leona and Ka Tuo."

Three minutes later.

Two shadows appeared with thick, murderous auras. Blood was still dripping from their fingers. Evidently, they had just murdered someone. Their hands smelled like fresh blood.

"We hunted them one more time," Ka Tuo grinned, "Once they engage in close combat, the Dark Shadow clansmen are limited. It's the fifth time, though. However, we can't find more scattered members."

"They are gathering by that expert." Fei Lan pointed to a direction, her voice mournful. "That place."

Leon and Ka Tuo looked at Shi Yan.

Since Fei Lan's man and Leona's father were confined by the Dark Shadow Clan, the resentment they had for that clan was carved into their bones. And that clan also killed the King of Demonic Insects, Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the Holy Spirit God. If Shi Yan had a chance to avenge them, he wouldn't let it slip away.

From Fu Wei, he knew that Zuo Lou, the Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, also had a close connection to the Dark Shadow Clan, and he knew that this clan came from another galaxy.

The resentment Fei Lan, Leona, and Shi Yan felt, the chance they had to slaughter a troop of the Dark Shadow Clan, and the opportunity to ask them where the Dark Shadow Clan imprisoned their loved ones were enough to support this massacre.

"The strong warriors of the opponents are still fine. The three Ethereal God Realm experts are staying with each other. We aren't afraid of battling them; however, we may get injured afterward." Shi Yan wore a cold face. He considered for a while and then

turned to face a direction. He said, "Perhaps we may try to use an available bait..."

Fei Lan's eyes brightened as she understood his idea. She agreed immediately, "We can try once."

Leona, Ka Tuo, Xuan Ming, and Zuo Shi didn't know what they meant and just looked at them.

"Over there," Fei Lan pointed at a glacier. "The one that the Dark Shadow Clan wants to find is there. He's hiding in the cracks of the glacier. If he moves, the Dark Shadow Clan will detect his aura immediately. They will go after him. Once they continue their investigation, their formation will be dismissed, and we will have a chance again."

"Should we force him to move?" Ka Tuo laughed.

"Right," Shi Yan pointed at the exact location of the teenager and said, "You go there and pound the ice underground. I think he's hiding in there. He must use his energy to move. Once he does that, the Dark Shadow Clan will find him immediately. When that happens..."

"Got it!"

Ka Tuo was excited. He smiled evilly as he dashed away.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Shortly after, they heard the noise of the ice shattering. Ka Tuo used his energy to attack the icicles over there. The several-thousand-meter glacier cracked as it got hit.

The teenager hiding in the crack of the glacier grimaced. He was foul-mouthed. However, he could only move around like a little mouse piercing through the ice. His energy burst out and his life magnetic field was exposed.

"I'm going there to force him to run. Once he leaves, the Dark Shadow Clan will chase after him with all their forces. In such an

operation, the war chariots can't fly at the same speed. The battle line will be elongated. You two know what to do," said Shi Yan to Fei Lan and Leona.

The other two nodded with heavy, murderous auras.

"It's possible that they end up sending a strong team here while the others stay put. It's the best case anyway." Shi Yan had a clear thought. "If they send their strongest force, I'll hide so they won't see me. After you're done, come over there and find me."

The other two nodded again.

Shi Yan talked to Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming, "Come with me."

Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi quietly followed him.

The butterfly war chariots of the Dark Shadow Clan gathered between three glaciers in a fan formation. The Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert's face darkened while staying in his chariot in the center of their formation. He said, "Found him!"

He thought for a while and then said resolutely. "I'm going there directly. You guys stay here and don't scatter!"

The Dark Shadow warriors on the other war chariots regarded him and said that they understand.

One of the hovering butterfly war chariots flew away as fast as lightning.

Inside the glacier's crack, the youngster was dashing fast. His face grimaced more, his brutal eyes watching over his head, sparkling with malicious light.

Ka Tuo laughed wildly and continued to release his energy. The crazy, chaotic energy shot out madly, grumbly pounding on the ice above the youngster's head.

The youth was so enraged. He didn't know what kind of mental disorder that madman up there had. Why did he suddenly change his target and aim at me?

He must hide away or else that madman would hit him. But if he released his energy, his life magnetic field would appear and the Dark Shadow clansmen would find him.

Considering between getting instantly damage or being caught by the Dark Shadow clansmen, he determinedly to chose the former. He continued to rush while sending his regards to Ka Tuo's family's eighteen generations.

While he ran madly, the young man who he had just seen with an old man and a lady emerged. That young man smiled, but his eyes didn't smile as he glanced at the area where the teenager was hiding underground. He mocked, "Get up here. Don't you think it's annoying?"

The teenager felt chilled as if a venomous snake was staring at him and he couldn't get away.

"I don't want to kill you. I just want to you use as bait. Come out. Don't make me force you," said Shi Yan with squinted eyes.

The youngster struggled in his mind. He used some other soul skills, but he found that he couldn't get rid of the other's soul blockade. As he couldn't help it, he emerged from the glacier with a pale face. His hair was a mess of crushed ice. He was so enraged as he said, "What do you want after all?!?"

"Help you survive this dilemma." Shi Yan chuckled, generating his God Domain and covering Ka Tuo, the youngster, Zuo Shi, and Xuan Ming. The space around them rippled magnificently as dazzling light emitted around Shi Yan.

Shortly after, they disappeared into the void inside the glacier, leaving not even a single beam of an aura.

Chapter 1015: We Seem to Have Some Relations...

A thin curtain like a steam with space ripples covered Shi Yan's group. The teenager was still cautious, maintaining a distance from Shi Yan with eyes filled with anger.

Then, he turned and looked at the ice crystal opposite to them. He became totally baffled.

That ice crystal was smooth and flat like a mirror, which reflected everything clearly.

However, he couldn't see his image reflected in it even though he was facing that mirror ice crystal.

Any creature with a body would be reflected in the mirror. It was the rule of Nature that people couldn't break.

However, they were standing in front of the ice crystal and that crystal didn't reflect their images. And he could still see that crystal. This observation made the youngster realize something. He quieted down.

"Don't worry. As long as you don't roll away, the Dark Shadow clansmen can't find you even if they come here." Shi Yan smiled, looking at him. Pondering for a while, he said, "I'm Shi Yan. I'm also an enemy of the Dark Shadow Clan. We're like partners here. What's your name? Why are the Dark Shadow clansmen hunting you down?"

Shi Yan didn't know why he had a soft spot for this youngster. He couldn't describe this feeling. It seemed like he had a close connection with this youth subconsciously.

This kid had so many cuts on his arms and his body had a madly destructive aura. To other people, he looked extreme and evil. To Shi Yan, he felt comfortable and relaxed seeing him.

"I'm Benny," snorted the teenager. His manner was still distant.

". . . Benny," nodding and smiling, Shi Yan continued asking, "Why do the Dark Shadow Clan want to kill you?"

"It has nothing to do with you!" The teenager put on a cold face, glaring at Shi Yan. His eyes were filled with wicked resentment as if he hated all the people in this world.

"Kid, you don't know how to live, right?" Ka Tuo grinned fiendishly. "Kid, do you want to die? Answer when you're asked. If you dare lie, you will face the consequences!"

Benny snorted, turned his face away. He didn't want to look at Ka Tuo.

Ka Tuo's face stiffened. He was enraged. He smiled evilly as he was about to give the youth a lesson.

"Alright, it's okay if he doesn't want to tell us," Shi Yan rose his hand to stop Ka Tuo.

Shi Yan had an unknown feeling for that youth, so he didn't want Ka Tuo to bully him. That was why he stopped the man.

Ka Tuo glared at the youth, smiling coldly. But he stopped there.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The engine started to hiss. Shortly after, they saw a butterfly war chariot landing. The war chariot carried three Dark Shadow men. They were the strongest warriors of this group. One was at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm and the other two were at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

The three Dark Shadow clansmen had half of their bodies protruding from the war chariot while the other half stayed inside. Their cold eyes were raking through the area, releasing Soul Consciousness to search.

As Benny saw the three Dark Shadow men, his face became as cold and malicious as a sharp blade. He spat, cursing

wholeheartedly, "Damn those hounds!"

Although he was cursing them, his face was anxious and restless. He was afraid that the three Dark Shadow warriors could spot him. His nerves were tense as he was prepared to attack in any minute.

Shi Yan glanced at him. He frowned as he had a plan.

The three Dark Shadow experts at Ethereal God Realm drove their war chariot around. They gradually became impatient. Their drifting Soul Consciousness scattered, covering the entire area.

Benny quietly accumulated his energy. He was ready to run at any minute. His malignant eyes gazed at the three Dark Shadow clansmen.

"He was here. How can he disappear so strangely like that?" The leader at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm shouted, his voice sharp and cold.

"Yeah, it's true that he was here." The other two answered, nodding to indicate that the direction they senses was also here.

Inside the light curtain, Benny's, a teenager from the Dark Clan, eyes brightened. He was standing just one hundred meters from the Dark Ghost clansmen. It seemed like they could reach him with their arms quickly. With their soul ability, they should have been able to find and capture him. Their Soul Consciousnesses scattered and searched for a long time and yet they hadn't found him. The three Dark Shadow experts seemed to be blind.

Benny wasn't a fool. He contemplated and then he figured it out something. He looked at Shi Yan, prying, "Space power Upanishad?"

Shi Yan smiled and nodded.

The youngster calmed down.

He didn't look at the three Dark Shadow men anymore. He sat down, facing Shi Yan and Ka Tuo. He still maintained a distance

from them while taking out a divine crystal to recover his energy. He looked a little relaxed.

"Not good!"

The leader of the Dark Shadow troops discolored as he stared at the compass in his hand. He shouted, "We were tricked!"

The other two Dark Shadow men glared at the compass in the other's hand. Their faces incomparably grimaced.

The light dots in his compass blinked and then disappeared one after another. Within less than one minute, five light dots disappeared. It meant that the soul altars of their fellows had been utterly destroyed

Fei Lan and Leona were at Ethereal God Realm. They had the ability to challenge higher-realm warriors. Their hands were soaked in blood as their fighting experiences were vast.

The two of them had attacked the other troops all of a sudden. With the power of their malicious powers Upanishads, it was easy to make the Dark Shadow clansmen pay a bloody price within a short time.

Looking at their fearful complexions, Shi Yan knew that Fei Lan and Leona succeeded and that they were killing the others.

With their deeds, Fei Lan and Leona could smash the warriors who were at Ethereal God Realm. The gap of one whole realm wasn't something that could be made up. Those Dark Shadow clansmen didn't have Ethereal God Realm. At this moment, they were like sheep waiting to be slaughtered. They were killed rapidly.

Seeing that the situation wasn't going right, the three Dark Shadow experts retreated like lightning. They didn't care about this area anymore.

At this moment, they realized that they had fallen into their enemy's trap, a typical "luring the tiger from its domain in the

mountain" strategy.

Shortly after, the butterfly war chariot disappeared from their sight.

He extended his hand and made a cut. It looked like he had torn space and drawn a hole in the light curtain. The cold air from outside flooded in, making people shiver.

The youngster shuddered. He gawked at his image reflected in the ice crystal. He knew that he had walked out of the confined space. He looked at Shi Yan, asking, "I don't have any business here, right?"

He understood clearly that he was used as bait. Now, they wouldn't want to keep him anymore as the others had got what they wanted.

Ka Tuo waved his hand. He couldn't help but shout at him, "Get lost! As far as possible! Or else, the remaining Dark Shadow clansmen won't spare your life!"

Benny had a beam of malignant light in his eyes. He glared at Ka Tuo and then jumped into the crack of the ice underneath. He swayed and then disappeared.

Shi Yan chuckled, "That kid runs really fast. He's not ordinary as he was able to avoid the Dark Shadow Clan's pursuit until now. That kid is unusual. I don't know why I like him when I see him. I can't describe this feeling..."

"Hey?" Ka Tuo was shaken. He couldn't hold it, saying, "Senior, you... You have this feeling too?"

Shi Yan was bewildered. "What do you mean?"

"Although I was foul-mouthed to him and I threatened him, I don't know why I also like this kid. I felt comfortable with him. It's like... It's like when I stay with you, senior, or with Madame Leona and precursor Fei Lan. I would instinctively consider treating him as someone in my family. Right! It's that feeling. I instinctively

considered him as one of us!"

Ka Tuo didn't explain clearly. His wording was a little vague, indeed.

However, Shi Yan understood his idea clearly.

He became perplexed. The light sparkled in his eyes while he contemplated.

After a while, Shi Yan suddenly gave a low shout. "Benny!"

The crispy noise of broken ice echoed from the crack underneath. They could hear staggering footsteps. That teenager was extremely flustered.

Shi Yan was surprised. He smiled naturally, "Come here!"

He had known for a long time that this youngster had only Third Sky of King God Realm. His competence was nothing special. However, his life was tough as he could survive the Dark Shadow Clan's pursuit.

Of course, the reason why the Dark Shadow Clan couldn't kill him was because of his exceptional ability to conceal his life magnetic field. He could even avoid the sensitive Dark Shadow clansmen. However, his powers of concealing the soul couldn't work on Shi Yan, the one who cultivated Life power Upanishad.

When the teenager heard Shi Yan shout for him, the reluctant and dispirited feeling when the soul was confined emerged in his heart once again. He was so infuriated, but he didn't have a solution for this. He emerged from the crack of the iceberg. His rage boiled his mind as he grunted. "What else do you want? More bait? I remember you all!"

Shi Yan's bright eyes lay on the mess of his hair covering his forehead, asking all of a sudden. "Wipe out the hair on your forehead. I want to see your glabella."

The teenager shuddered, his eyes very frightened. He had a

madly destructive aura on his body, which was about to explode like an erupting volcano. His aura rolled torrentially as if he had fallen into a disordered state of mind.

Ka Tuo was shocked. As he recalled something, his eyes became incomparably hot. He stammered, "Se-Senior, you mean... He and I... He and we are..."

Shi Yan didn't answer Ka Tuo. He was still looking at the youngster earnestly. His eyes gazed at the glabella covered under the teenager's hair. He didn't even blink.

The destructive energy fluctuations on the boy's body became thicker. His eyes were filled with crazy thoughts. He said through his gritted teeth, his face malicious, "Are you the hounds of the God Clan too?"

Shi Yan took a deep breath to steady his restless mind. He told the youngster calmly, "Never mind. I got it. You don't need to do anything. You should go with us now. We'll defeat these Dark Shadow troops first. Then, we'll talk. Our origins... are related in some way."

The dark youngster looked shocked. The madly destructive intention in his eyes disappeared slowly, his face perplexed. "Our origins?"

Shi Yan smiled brightly and nodded in confirmation. He said, "Yeah, we are related somehow. But we have to put it aside for a while. Right now, we should finish our business first."

Chapter 1016: Break the Ice!

What Shi Yan called business was killing people.

A big beam of starlight carried Ka Tuo, Xuan Ming, Zuo Shi, and Benny forward like a ribbon at breakneck speed.

After fewer than ten minutes, they arrived at the gathering point of the Dark Shadow Clan.

Fragments of the butterfly war chariots were scattered everywhere in the glacier with the dead bodies of the Dark Shadow clansmen. They all had tragic deaths. The ones Fei Lan had killed had their bodies eroded inside, leaving only skin bags that covered the bodies as their internal organs and bones were now a mess of bloody paste.

The dead bodies with dark and fearful eyes were the work that was done by Leona. They also had darkness covering their bodies.

The three Ethereal God Realm experts of the Dark Shadow Clan were urging their powers Upanishad, their Soul Consciousness roving and their faces pale. They were attacking Fei Lan and Leona together with a circle of seven Original God Realm Dark Shadow clansmen. They had also used their powers Upanishads, which released ice, thunderbolts, fire snakes, and sharp gusts. They were screaming and shouting at Fei Lan and Leona.

The three leaders of the Dark Shadow troop hissed and screeched ear-splittingly. They cultivated Fire, Ice, and Lightning respectively. The Ethereal Extents of their powers Upanishad rolled torrentially with energy. While they were fighting Fei Lan and Leona, their energy shot out, piercing the ice, turning the icicles into power and scattering around like snow.

Although Leona and Fei Lan looked a bit strenuous battling the three Ethereal God Realm experts and the other seven Original God Realm warriors, they were still moving swiftly.

This was until they saw Shi Yan riding the starlight. Fei Lan's and Leona's tense nerves finally relaxed. Fei Lan touched a spot in the void above her head. Countless ash-gray dragons made of corrosive air began to move around, twisting their bodies dangerously.

The pale, erosive air currents contained unpredictably vicious power. When the wandering Soul Consciousness of the Dark Shadow troopers touched her pallid air current, they felt so painful as their soul energies were drained rapidly.

At this moment, Leona looked like a dark sun. The area around her was pitch black. Layers of dark energy rose like a raging flood. Her darkness seemed to be able to cover the brightly lit world.

Fei Lan and Leona had the competencies to challenge the warriors whose realm was higher than theirs. While they were battling ten Dark Shadow clansmen, their unique powers Upanishad had performed their advantages well. The ten Dark Shadow warriors couldn't approach them. Leona's darkness could shield most of the energy attacks from the different powers Upanishad as it blinded and preventing them from finding the targets.

Even if they were sensitive, the Dark Shadow warriors couldn't lock Leona's position in the darkness. They couldn't even see their own fingers.

If they couldn't lock her down, their powerful attacks would fail. It was a frustrated feeling when their attacks hit the void.

"You guys should deal with the seven troopers below Ethereal God Realm." Shi Yan grabbed something in the void and his starlight condensed into a big block of dazzling light. He notified Ka Tuo, Xuan Ming, and Zuo Shi while space power was mobilized in his body.

Shi Yan disappeared shortly after. People couldn't see him as if he had gone to another dimension.

"Leave it to me!"

Ka Tuo's face was ferocious as he flew like a Demogorgon. His power Upanishad rose torrentially, attracting and dragging pieces of ice and war chariot fragments towards his body. Together, they created a disorderly and chaotic magnetic field.

Squinting, Ka Tuo's eyes had a bloodthirsty gleam. Wherever his big hand pointed at, the fragments of war chariots and broken icicles attacked it instantly.

Those fragments moved like tornadoes, colliding with each other. Explosions and breaking noises arose like rattling heavy rain. The debris was now empowered by his Chaos power Upanishad. Under his soul command, everything shot out thickly.

The seven Original God Realm warriors surrounding them paled. They immediately changed their target. All now tried to resist Ka Tuo's attack.

Zuo Shi exhaled. Her white and soft hands made magical hand seals in the air. The melted glacier gathered, creating a sparkling pool with marvelous water waves. Those water waves then acted as a barrier that shielded the energy attack and protected her, Xuan Ming, and Benny.

Benny was surprised. He frowned, mumbling to himself, "I don't need your protection."

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Benny's bones sounded as if someone was frying beans. A destructive aura shot up into the sky from his head. Benny's eyes were mad and brutal as if he had entered a magical domain. He became heartless and bloodthirsty like a beast with its basic instinct of killing. He crossed the wall made of water directly.

Destructive energy rolled from him. Benny roared like a beast or a Devil God wanting to destroy the world in his rage. He stormed towards a First Sky of Original God Realm Dark Clan warrior.

The Dark Clan warrior seemed to know how dangerous he was. Seeing him coming, he was terrified.

Benny had only Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. However, the destructive energy fluctuated around him was enough to tear the whole sky when he released his God Domain. Such energy fluctuations burst off like thunderclaps. Fragments of wrecked war chariots and pieces of ice automatically exploded within his God Domain. His energy could destroy everything.

A dark blue stone carved with many exquisite symbols emerged in his palm.

Swoosh!

The stone roared, transforming fast. Gradually, it became a massive meteorite with many archaic, unknown symbols. That rock had a blood-color mark in the center, which was glowing immensely. It seemed to be the source of destructive energy of the rock.

In just a blink, a small rock became a several-hundred-meter mountain. It looked old but tough in an oval shape and was filled with devastating power.

Benny touched his glabella. A flow of evil aura flooded that magical meteorite. The blood-colored mark in the center of the rock burst off with energy, sending countless archaic symbols away. The evil aura permitted the area.

Boom!

That meteorite pounded on that First Sky of Original God Realm warrior. This man had tried his best to resist, but he looked so weak under the massive rock.

Boom! Boom!

Although the rock hadn't touched his head yet, the pressing, earth-destroying aura had acted earlier. This man was blown off. Blood trickled from seven holes in his face as that tremendous

energy smashed him.

Swoosh!

The meteorite fell like an imposing mountain. That warrior was pounded into a mess of blood. His body was smashed and his blood was diffusing like mist.

Benny's dark purple eyes were filled with bloodthirsty intentions. He acted as if he had fallen into bedevilment. His evil, devastating aura twirled around his body as he continually controlled the strange rock that bombarded the Dark Shadow experts. He made some Original God Realm warriors helter-skelter.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The three electric spears flashed and then disappeared by the meteorite. They then suddenly stabbed one of the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts in his back. They were moving fiercely with space energy added.

That man felt something as he turned around strongly, his God Body frozen rapidly. In just a blink of an eye, he had a thick ice layer covering him entirely, his eyes cold and dark.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Bone Thorns thrust onto the ice armor on his back, drilling three holes. The man was blown away. He hurried to condense many ice walls in front of him, each of them ten meters thick.

As he cultivated Ice power Upanishad, the environment here had boosted his power.

He was also the one who had struggled against Fei Lan and Leona a lot. He had revived the glaciers around, shooting hundred-meter-long icicles towards them. He gave Leona and Fei Lan a headache.

In an environment that suitable to the power Upanishad of a warrior, his competence significantly increased. In this world of ice, that expert had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

However, the power he could perform could be more than his colleague's at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

The glaciers around could provide him with energy, ice beams, icicles, ice sabers, and more. Under his control, they were extremely dangerous.

To defend, he could condense a thick ice wall instantly. To attack, he could use a long and sharp icicle. In this area, he was the toughest warrior of the Dark Shadow Clan to deal with.

Shi Yan discreetly came to this place and his first target was that man.

Layers of ice walls were built. They looked thick and sparkling. The man was hiding behind his walls, his face cold as he curled his lips into a contemptuous smile, "Only at Third Sky of Original God Realm. You come to see your death, eh?"

More than ten ice beams of around one hundred meters glistened. They were sharp like spears, shooting out from the ice walls. They were so fiercely strong that they could break everything as they darted towards Shi Yan.

The three Bone Thorns moved around. Shi Yan calmly looked at him and said deliberately, "I am aiming at you because I can kill you."

His soul altar slowly spun. His co-soul with the Origin could control the energy of his body. His co-soul now looked like a fiery ball.

Instantaneously, Shi Yan became a man torch. Fire burst out from his body scorchingly like fire dragons. This kind of top Yang fire was able to burn the whole world down.

As his co-soul had merged with the Origin, he had the magical abilities of ten heaven flames he could use as he pleased.

The blazing heaven flame was released. At that moment, he looked like a flaming sun. Fire dragons were sent out of his body

one after another. They melted the ten icicles in just a blink. More and more fire dragons roared and flew towards the thick ice walls.

The thick ice walls melted rapidly at a speed that people could observe with naked eyes. The steam permeated the place while the man was screeching painfully.

Ice power was his primary energy. Each of the ice walls and ice beams he had released had a wisp of his pure soul. He used his soul to adjust and control the power. When the ice walls and ice beams burned, it also hurt his soul, making him helter-skelter distressed

While the ice walls were melting, the Blood Vein Ring on Shi Yan's finger flashed. A broadsword appeared in the blood light.

A one-hundred-meter-long blood light with a thick blood scent drew a beautiful yet peculiar curve in the air when it hacked on the crystal clear ice. Along with the grumbling noise of an iceberg scattering, people heard someone screaming tragically.

The big eyes on the sword opened. A vicious aura was released, sending negative moods directly into people's hearts. It flooded fast like a rising tide, covering that area entirely.

Chapter 1017: The Shocking Secrets!

The icicles exploded in the middle of the ice wall. The negative moods surged torrentially from the broadsword, covering the Dark Shadow warrior who cultivated Ice power.

That man looked confused. His mind was invaded shortly after.

Swish!

His God Body was cut off by a brutal blood light. It was divided into two pieces and was completely broken.

At this moment, Shi Yan brought his sword and walked over to search for something. In the middle of the crushed ice, he placed his hand on that man's head. "Crack! Crack!" His skull was broken.

A confining energy shrouded his broken skull, restraining his soul altar from flying away from his head. It was trapped inside his skull.

His God Bod was destroyed, but his memory and cognition still remained for a short time. As long as the soul altar didn't get away from his skull, he was still able to reason.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Invisible Space sabers moved like shuttles in his head and twisted his Sea of Consciousness into a mess like a flax, fabric ball, which prevented him from gathering his consciousness.

A wisp of Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness directly entered his head, searching in the memory locus.

Each brain had a Seal of Memory that stored the whole-life experience. Each wisp of memory represented an experience of that person. As long as the soul altar didn't move, those wisps of memory lived forever. They wouldn't disappear.

What Shi Yan was doing was extracting his memory.

His Soul Consciousness moved like tentacles that searched

through the man's wisps of memory. The memory of the Dark Shadow warrior was like a cocoon that Shi Yan was holding and pulling it open. The hidden secrets in his mind were open to Shi Yan.

Placing one hand on that man's skull, Shi Yan searched through his memory. His face became stern and then he grimaced.

After a long time, Shi Yan opened his eyes, patting his hand.

Crack! Crack!

The man's skull exploded. As soon as his soul altar flew out, Shi Yan's black hole had swallowed it at once.

Watching here and there, he found that the battle was over while he wasn't paying attention. Fei Lan and Leona had killed their opponents. Ka Tuo, Benny, Zuo Shi, and Xuan Ming had also fished the other Original God Realm Dark Shadow warriors. Ka Tuo and Benny had done almost everything. Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming just offered them a little help.

The energy of the dead gathered, congregating in Shi Yan's acupuncture points. However, he didn't look happy at all. Quite the contrary, he had a solemn complexion.

Fei Lan and Leona quietly gathered, frowning as they looked at him.

After a long time, Shi Yan had finished absorbing the Essence Qi of the dead around him. He took a deep breath and said strenuously, "The Dark Shadow Clan is a vassal clan of the God Clan!"

Fei Lan and Leona changed their countenances. They had a gleam of fear in their eyes.

The holder of the blood mark, of course, had no good attitude for the God Clan. That perfect clan, who called themselves Gods, had piles of acts of genocide in the big star areas. They had killed countless people. The God Clan used to visit Raging Flame Star

Area. They had even left their inheritance too.

Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo had known the God Clan's conspiracy. They had considered warriors of Raging Flame Star Area as pigs or sheep that they've been raising in pens. They had imparted them powers Upanishad just to make the creatures there stronger. However, it was the same reasoning as feeding the animals to fatten them.

Once they had grown and their realms had reached a certain level, the God Clan would select excellent warriors and absorb their flesh and energy to benefits the God Clan's members.

The gifts of the God Clan to Raging Flame Star Area were just to benefit themselves later. After Raging Flame Star Area had grown to a specific level, they would come to harvest and choose the top strong warriors for themselves. This could be seen in God Perishing Land.

The wounded warriors of the God Clan stayed in the center of the stone steles with demonic flowers to absorb blood and energy to heal themselves and recover from their wounds.

Hearing that the Dark Shadow Clan was the hound of the God Clan, Fei Lan and Leona became tense. The grudge they had against the Dark Shadow Clan grew deeper.

The God Perishing Land used to confine an expert of the Bloodthirsty. His blood had been continuously absorbed through the evil chains. Ge Lu, the expert who cultivated Chaos power Upanishad, had escaped that place but he couldn't escape his kalpa later. His soul altar was broken but he had managed to leave his inheritance.

The Bloodthirsty kept the resentment towards the God Clan to its bones.

"I'd just extracted his memory," Shi Yan paled, his voice unnatural. "The Dark Shadow Clan is the guard to the God Clan.

They help the God Clan make a passage to another galaxy. The Dark Shadow Clan has a special physique, which helped them survive the chaotic space basin. They usually connect two star areas, facilitating the God Clan's invasion."

Between two star areas, there would usually be a very thick barrier, which the God Clan's experts couldn't break through easily.

The Dark Shadow Clan was in charge of this mission.

When the God Clan wanted to invade a star area, the Dark Shadow Clan would be the vanguard. They spent the time to clean the barrier between two star areas, so the force of the God Clan could arrive after them easily.

Through the memory of this Dark Shadow expert, Shi Yan knew that the space barrier connecting Agate Star Area and God Star Area was about to be clear after thousands of years of their labor.

This man used to work in that barrier area. He used a special tool to dig through a small area of the chaotic space basin. Many Dark Shadow clansmen had to do the "combing work" before they became strong enough to do other works. It was some kind of training to them.

From that man's memory, this was the first time Shi Yan knew that God Star Area was the cradle of the God Clan and also where their headquarters were based.

God Star Area had an ancient continent, which still existed until now. In that area, the God Clan had developed their powers Upanishad to the acme. Each great family of the God Clan was so powerful and intimidating. The heads of the twelve formidable families were at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm. Also, they had dozens of First Sky and Second Sky of Incipient God Realm experts as the pillars of the families.

The total number of experts at Incipient God Realm of the God

Clan was more than one hundred! They also had countless Original God Realm and Ethereal God Realm warriors. Together, they had created the prosperous glory prestige of God Star Area.

Each family of the twelve great families controlled one to three different star areas. They had so many life stars and mineral stars. They transported countless kinds of bulk materials to God Star Area from the other areas daily to nurture the greatest monster, the God Clan of God Star Area.

The God Clan had many vassals. The Dark Shadow Clan was just one of them. The God Clan was like a malignant tumor, crazily invading big star areas.

The experts of the star area, which this clan had laid its eyes on, had only two options: die or become their hounds to serve the great twelve families in invading the new star area. That was how they could survive.

God Clan had laid their eyes on the entire universe. Rumors said that half the star areas in this universe were invaded.

The God Clan had a unique method called "the seed" when they planned to invade a remote but valuable life star. After the members of the God Clan died, they could refine their souls through a blood sacrifice and be reborn as a life seed. This kind of life seed could travel through the galaxies faster than the fastest battleships.

One life seed could move like a meteor in outer space. Once it fell on a life star in a remote, far-away galaxy, it could gather earth and heaven energy to grow slowly into a clansman of the God Clan.

The life seeds would grow fast in those extrasolar life stars and they would invade the place. If the life star had strong native dwellers, the God warriors would connect to their families and ask them to send more experts.

Using this method, the twelve great families of the God Clan in

God Star Area had forcefully invaded many life stars away from God Star Area.

In that man's memory, the method called "life seed" had shocked Shi Yan. He finally knew why Grace Mainland had God Clan. He could confirm that the God Clan members in Grace Mainland that year were the life seeds that had moved through many space barriers to land and grow there.

However, in the end, the other nine clans of Grace Mainland had expelled them which ended their invasion.

After the Ancient Time and Antiquity Time, the God warriors descended the life star and escaped from there. They knew that Grace Mainland wasn't worth sending more troops to invade because its energy was about to run out soon. It wasn't worth their second invasion and travel of thousands of miles away for a dying planet.

Also, Shi Yan now knew that Grace Mainland wasn't the homeland of the God Clan. The God Star in God Star Area was their cradle.

The more he knew about the God Clan, the heavier his mood became. Facing the race that called themselves Gods, it was the first time Shi Yan had a helpless and dispirited feeling.

There were more than one hundred Incipient God Realm experts, countless Ethereal God Realm, Original God Realm, and King God Realm experts. Each family of the God Clan had the ability to destroy an entire star area. This kind of power was enough to dominate the whole universe.

This time, they laid their eyes on Agate Star Area...

To be exact, only a family of the God Clan named "Ascot" was plotting against Agate Star Area. The Ascot family was one of the twelve great families of God Clan. Ten thousand years ago, they had assigned Dark Shadow Clan to go to this place and clear the

space barrier.

From the memory of that man, Shi Yan got news that had terrified him badly. The Dark Shadow Clan and Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion had made an agreement. Zuo Lou had officially submitted to the God Clan.

Zuo Lou was utilizing all of his forces to get the Pavilion Master position. He wanted to use Potion and Tool Pavilion to raise the storm of war in Agate Star Area. He would make the prominent clans of Agate Star Area attack and kill each other. Then, the clans of Agate Star Area wouldn't unite to deal with it due to their resentment when the Ascot family came.

The Ascot family was one of the twelve great families of the God Clan. It had nine Incipient God Realm experts. However, it was a little bit strenuous if this family wanted to eat Agate Star Area in one bite.

This clan wanted to claim Agate Star Area exclusively. They didn't want to use the power of the other families. Thus, they had planned on using the superpower position of Potion and Tool Pavilion to disorder the entire star area. Then, they could come and clean the battle sites at ease.

The memory of this Dark Shadow expert contained shocking secrets, which had shaken Shi Yan hard. It was the first time he knew the real competence of the God Clan. Now he had pressure like a mountain hanging above his heart. His mood was down and was sinking into the bottomless abyss.

Chapter 1018: Traceable to the Same Stock

The more he knew about the God Clan, the heavier the pressure that Shi Yan felt. The God Clan was like a mountain that he would never be able to climb to the peak. This kind of pressure had suffocated him.

There were Incipient God Realm experts in every one of the twelve families of the God Clan. The Ascot family had the power to invade Agate Star Area and they seemed to be making progress.

The famous Dark Shadow Clan in Agate Star Area was just a vassal force that was the hounds of God Clan. This made Shi Yan grimace.

Aside from Benny, Zuo Shi, Leona, Fei Lan, and Ka Tuo paled as if they had the same mountain pressing their chests while listening to Shi Yan.

Until now, they had always considered the God Clan as the archenemy of the Bloodthirsty's line. And the God Clan wouldn't give up chasing after Bloodthirsty's descendants. No matter how hard they tried to hide away, they would never have a quiet day as long as the God Clan existed.

However, facing the God Clan, they felt so small. They were like mayflies trying to shake a big tree.

"Did you... get any information about them?" Fei Lan contemplated for a while before asking with worries. "A thousand mile journey begins first with a single step. It will take a long time to fight against the God Clan. At this moment, our powers are far behind theirs. Thus, we must consider increasing our power as the top priority."

Fei Lan was talking about the two members of her Dark Sky family.

Leona also had this expectation.

"No," Shi Yan sighed, "that man didn't have information about them. Perhaps he didn't participate in that work. We must carry it step by step."

"Dealing with the God Clan?" Benny, the Dark teenager, asked with an odd countenance. "You know how intimidating they are and you dare to resist? You guys don't value your lives. In this vast universe, fewer and fewer people dare to face the God Clan. Until now, there has only one force that had almost destroyed the God Clan. But even that was just "almost." Eventually, it failed and its master was gone."

Fei Lan's eyes glistened, looking at the youngster. "Which was that force?"

From the memory Shi Yan had got, the twelve families of the God Clan had invaded half of this universe. They had so many life stars and henchmen. Their powers were unimaginably formidable.

The Ascot family alone had dared to plot against Agate Star Area. From only this, they knew how intimidating the God Clan was. But if there was a force that had almost destroyed the God Clan, Fei Lan thought that it was unimaginable.

Everybody looked at Benny.

Under their gazes, Benny snorted but he kept his mouth shut. Although he was worried, his eyes were arrogant.

Shi Yan looked at him, chuckled, and said as if he was considering something, "The force you mentioned has some relationship with you, right?"

Benny straightened his back like a sharp sword coming out of its sheath, showing its talent. He admitted naturally and confidently, "Yeah, it's true. In this vast universe, only our force used to have the strength to force the God Clan act together. We'd worn out the power of their entire clan!"

Listening to him, Shi Yan and Ka Tuo laughed evilly. Benny

thought that they were laughing at him. He put on a grim face, shouting, "You don't believe me?"

Shi Yan and Ka Tuo exchanged looks and laughed harder, "We do! Of course, we believe you!"

It was over Benny's expectation when Shi Yan nodded continually, "I believe in your words. In this vast universe, we have countless galaxies out there and we know there used to be a force like that, the force that had almost destroyed the God Clan's huge foundation. I also know you are one of the descendants of that force."

Fei Lan and Leona were astounded.

Benny was startled. He threw a contemptuous glance. Apparently, he didn't buy it. "You know nothing!"

"Brat. Show respect. People here are all your precursors." Ka Tuo smiled and told him off, but he didn't get angry.

"Precursors?" The contempt in Benny's eyes grew. He shook his head, speaking seriously. "You don't deserve that title."

Fei Lan and Leona frowned, looking at him with dark eyes. They were provoked obviously.

Waving his hand, Shi Yan signaled them to calm down. He descended from the air and raised his hand to make a cut. A space saber cut off the pointy peak of an ice mountain, creating a flat crystal ground of around several thousand square meters.

Shi Yan was the first one to land on the beautiful crystal platform on the mountain. He quieted down and sat neatly. His aura began to surge. The wisps of negative moods floated around him strangely as he refined the energy that his acupuncture points had absorbed.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo cheered up. They kept silent, landing and sitting cross-legged in front of him. They looked at him with a longing face, waiting for something in silence.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming were surprised. They also came to the crystal platform and used divine crystals to restore their energy.

Only Benny, the Dark teenager, was still hovering above their heads. He hesitated for a while before saying, "I'm done with my mission as your bait. I don't have any business here anymore. Guys, I hope to not see you again."

When Benny finished, he wanted to fly away immediately.

Ka Tuo lifted his head, laughing and tapping on the clear ice next to him. He said, "Kid, come sit here."

Benny put on a cold countenance. His eyes showed his wild, brutal will. A devastating energy burst out of his body, "Are you done now?!"

Ka Tuo was still laughing as if he wasn't afraid of that teenager's outrage. He patted the ice next to him and said casually, "Come here as you're told. Don't talk nonsense! Behave or else Daddy will kick your ass!"

Fei Lan and Leona looked at him, their faces skeptical.

They could see that Ka Tuo wasn't angry at all. It made Fei Lan and Leona more curious when they studied Benny. Gradually, they had some different thoughts.

"Come sit here," Fei Lan pondered for a while and then pointed at the place next to her, urging the youngster, "Hurry up!"

Benny had Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. He knew where he was. He thought that he could survive facing Ka Tuo at Third Sky of Original God Realm. But if Fei Lan took action, he knew he wouldn't escape death.

As he was able to survive until now, he wasn't an impulsive fool. Thus, the youngster reluctantly sat next to Ka Tuo even though he was so enraged. He clenched his jaws. He glared at Ka Tuo maliciously. He had made up his mind: When he had a chance, he would make Ka Tuo lose his face!

"Kid, what kind of look is that? You motherf*cker. Daddy wants good things for you so I asked you to come. You brat. You don't know what's good or bad!" Ka Tuo laughed and couldn't help but scold.

"What's good is your mother!" Benny was obviously on the weak side, but his voice wasn't weak at all. His face reddened when he quarreled with Ka Tuo. "What the heck is wrong with you?! Wait until I get stronger. I will chop you off like I mince veggies!"

"Good! Good! Good!" Ka Tuo wasn't angry but smiling. "I'm waiting for you to become stronger because I can show you something good to taste then. My senior won't have a reason to stop me at that time."

"Shut up!" Fei Lan frowned as she couldn't hold it anymore.

Ka Tuo quieted down immediately. He retracted his head, shutting himself up. Benny didn't know why he felt afraid of this old woman. He gritted his teeth and sat down, frowning. No one knew what he had in his mind at this moment.

Time flew slowly.

Four hours later, Shi Yan opened his eyes. His pupils looked dark and wonderful like an immense galaxy with the light of energy. His soul altar seemed to about to fly out.

Wisps of pure energy floating like light emitted from his acupuncture points. They headed to his soul altar, flooding his entire body.

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were happy. They removed the headband, showing their foreheads with the blood marks, which had the cloud shape with marvelous energy fluctuation.

Benny, the Dark youngster, was very bored. He just wanted to leave this place. All of a sudden, he was dumbstruck as if he had just got hit by lightning. He sat completely perplexed.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The tangled hair covering his forehead suddenly burned like fire. His glabella became so hot that he couldn't help it. A similar blood mark appeared on his forehead little by little.

"You! You guys... You guys!" Benny stammered, pointing at Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo. He fumbled with his hands, his body shaking. "You guys have... have it... too?"

"Don't talk nonsense! Just take the energy!" Ka Tuo glared at him maliciously and hissed, "Focus your soul on the imprint and release your soul altar. When the energy pours into your body, guide it through your body and congregate it in the center of the Sea of Consciousness."

Fei Lan and Leona also looked at Benny, at his blood mark to be exact. The doubts in their minds were gone/

The two of them glanced at Shi Yan who was releasing energy. They understood it, smiled, and nodded at Benny.

Benny had survived many dangers in the immense sea of stars. He had experienced grudges and pains from many people. Leona's and Fei Lan's smile had unlocked some place in his heart. He felt very comfortable as if he was seeing his beloved family. He couldn't help but have watery eyes.

"Hey, brat! Why are you still baffled?" scolded Ka Tuo.

Benny felt as if he had a bucket of icy water poured on his head. He shook, but he didn't squabble with Ka Tuo anymore. He scratched his head, smiling embarrassedly. He followed Ka Tuo, opened his soul, and sent his Soul Consciousness to the blood mark as Ka Tuo had instructed him to.

In the next moment, a flow of extremely pure energy poured directly into his blood mark in his glabella.

After that energy got through the blood mark, it expanded and entered his bones, flesh, and blood, flooding his Essence Qi Ancient Tree. That energy overflowed his Sea of Consciousness, giving

some tonic to his soul altar. He felt like his soul altar was a dried well that now had cool and refreshing water. This feeling was so amazing!

Benny's thin body shivered. His eyes closed but his face was twitching as he was thrilled.

The energy continued to pour into his blood mark fiercely. Benny's happy countenance became clearer. If he weren't in a particular situation, he would have laughed out loud to vent his big thrill in his soul.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

His soul altar suddenly spun fast. The edge of his soul altar shot out light dots of destructive energy, immersing his mind into a marvelous intent domain.

Benny felt as if he was severely hit, his mind shaken. He was baffled. After several seconds, his lips twitched. He stooped his head and mumbled, "I... I've broken through easily just like that! Oh my God!"

Chapter 1019: Destruction Power

Upanishad

Sitting cross-legged on the ice platform of the glacier, Shi Yan, Fei Lan, and the other were meditating.

The red halo of the blood marks in the glabella of Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Benny slowly dimmed. They were stabilizing the strange energy in their bodies to improve their powers.

After an unknown time, Fei Lan was the first one to wake up. She checked Benny, her face surprised.

The destructive energy fluctuated clearly on Benny's God Body. It looked like he was in a critical moment of his breakthrough. Light of evil energy rippled, covering him thickly. Benny had his bones produced cracking sounds as his bones and joints were quenched.

After a while, Leona woke up, frowning at Benny.

Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming stooped, saying nothing. They knew that Shi Yan's team had many secrets, which they could hardly imagine.

Shi Yan woke up after that, chuckled and then said, "Seems like we got more progress."

"Ka Tuo has his energy increase extremely fast this time. I think he will break through soon," said Leona.

Fei Lan nodded.

Benny and Ka Tuo were still immersed in their incredible intent domains. One had a chaotic, twisted energy twirl around the body while the other had a rippling destructive energy.

Five days had passed in just a blink.

Ka Tuo stood up quietly, his eyes glistening like lightning. He grinned, "I'm about to break through." He looked at Shi Yan,

"Senior, how about you?"

"I need the realm comprehension. I still need more time to improve it." Shi Yan smiled, "But I think it won't take too long."

Everybody looked at Benny.

Energy fluctuating from Benny's body ceased. His face was calm as his eyebrows twitched. He opened his eyes under people's attention. Benny was so excited. "I've broken through!"

They all looked at each other and smiled.

"I couldn't believe that you guys were the same as me!" Benny was so thrilled. "I thought I was alone in this world. Seems like I won't be lonely anymore."

"Tell us about yourself," said Fei Lan.

Benny's eyes darkened. He sighed and said, "Our family received the inheritance of Destruction power Upanishad. My ancestor used to be a member of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. We controlled Dark Exterminating Star Area. Seven thousand years ago, my ancestor left the Dark Exterminating Star Area and disappeared. Afterward, our Dark Exterminating Star Area was invaded. The God Clan bathed my family in blood. Except for me, everyone was killed. I tried to survive in Dark Exterminating Star Area, but the God Clan found me. I had to run and hide everywhere. I found a damaged space channel, so I took risks and entered it. Afterward, I appeared in Shadow Ghostly Prison. The Dark Shadow Clan spotted me and tried to hunt me down..."

The invincible family controlling the entire Dark Exterminating Star Area was massacred by God Clan.

Naturally, it wasn't a happy memory. Benny sighed, his face dark and ferocious. "I will take revenge sooner or later!"

"Your meteorite has Destruction power Upanishad. Is it an Original Incipient Grade weapon?" asked Shi Yan.

Benny was bewildered for a while and then took out the rock, which had a blood mark in the center. It was a fist-sized rock in his hand, and of course, it couldn't compare to the intimidating power that it had performed previously. "It's from my ancestor. I think it's an Original Incipient Grade weapon. One day after my ancestor had disappeared, it fell directly into my hand from the sky as I was cultivating in the prohibited area of my family. It gave me the Destruction power Upanishad from my ancestor. From that day, I knew something bad might happen to my ancestor."

Pausing for a while, Benny continued, "As far as I've known, the eight members of Bloodthirsty's Cortege all had divine weapons that match with the powers Upanishad. You guys... don't have it?"

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo felt embarrassed, shaking their heads.

"I know they exist. If you haven't seen them, perhaps they are hidden somewhere," said Benny earnestly.

Fei Lan and the other two couldn't help but look at Shi Yan.

"I don't know, either." Shi Yan opened his arms, his face begrudging. He suddenly recalled something, so he contacted the Blood Vein Ring to ask about this.

Unfortunately, after the Blood Vein Ring had helped Blood Devil with the Death power Upanishad, it had used a lot of energy. As it went dormant, it didn't answer Shi Yan.

According to the Ring Spirit, its memory hasn't completely been restored yet. It couldn't remember everything. Perhaps one day, when its memory was all gathered, it could give them more support and direction. The Blood Vein Ring was a relic of the master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. It was the critical key that locked the big secret of the Great Eight Inheritances of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight.

As he said he didn't know, Fei Lan's group was disappointed.

The Original Incipient Grade weapons could promote users who had the same class of power tremendously. Today, the three of them all had the competence to challenge higher-realm experts. Once they found divine weapons that supported them well, their fighting abilities would enter a whole new level, reaching an unimaginable realm.

With the giant Blood Shield, Shi Yan had used his cultivation base at Third Sky of Original God Realm to parry a strike of Du Lin, a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert. From that event, they knew the value of divine weapons.

Seeing how strong Benny was with his destructive divine weapon despite his low realm, they started to yearn for their own weapons.

"What do you know about the Bloodthirsty's bloodline?" asked Fei Lan.

"The Bloodthirsty's line I've mentioned was the only force that could cope with God Clan in this vast universe. My ancestor was one of the members of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. He had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. I only know about his legends that were told through generations in my family. When my ancestor was still in Dark Exterminating Star Area, the God Clan had never dared to come. Quite the contrary, we often trespassed into their territory. I heard at the peak of the Bloodthirsty's line, we had struck Ancient God Star Area where the God Clan stayed. We had forced the twelve great families of the God Clan to join hands to cope with us. However, they still had to bear the significant loss."

Benny said with expectation, "Our precursors used to be extremely intimidating. However, for my generation, we can't do anything the God Clan is chasing us around."

"You know any details?" asked Shi Yan.

Benny shook his head, "My grandfather told me my ancestor's legends. I don't know the details." Hesitating for a while, he said,

"You guys all have the Inheritances, but you know nothing about that battle?"

The others gave a forced smile, shaking their heads reluctantly.

Benny was amazed. He thought for a while and suddenly realized something. He looked at Shi Yan and said, "You! You aren't like us! You've sent energy to us through our inheritances, right?"

Shi Yan nodded.

"You... You are the heir of the Master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight, aren't you?" shouted Benny.

Shi Yan nodded again.

Benny was bewildered. He suddenly became restless as he unnaturally and embarrassedly wanted to give him a respectful greeting etiquette.

Waving his hand, Shi Yan stopped him and smiled, "No need to consider those trivial matters. You can call me a senior like Ka Tuo, okay?"

Benny was astounded. He nodded, his face strange. "There is a proverb in my family. It reads that as long as the inheritance of the Master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight remains, they can thrive. There will be a chance for us to defeat the God Clan and fulfill our great merit!"

"Oh?" Shi Yan was surprised, talking with a smile, "Is that so?"

Benny nodded and said, "Our precursor used to say that as long as the inheritance of the Master remains, the Bloodthirsty's line will be raised again!"

Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo were shocked.

"For the time being, we don't need to discuss these things further. Our top priority now is to expose the God Clan's conspiracy. The Dark Shadow Clan is about to clear the passage leading to Agate Star Area. Zuo Lou, the Great Elder of Potion and

Tool Pavilion is their ally. He will help the God Clan stir up the entire Agate Star Area and put it into wars." Shi Yan said, his face stern. "If we want to cope against the Ascot family of the God Clan, we can't do it alone. We must gather forces around Agate Star Area!"

Everybody nodded and their moods were down.

Shi Yan pondered for a while and then sent a drop of Demon Blood away. It then turned into a blood-red light, flying away.

"Ptui!"

He felt the tint of sweet blood in his mouth as he spat out blood, which then turned into red mist. His face paled.

He used the Demon Blood to locate Fu Wei. However, since Fu Wei's realm was higher than his, he got a backlash. He hurt himself.

However, his eyes brightened as he said, "Fu Wei isn't far away from us. She has reached Shadow Ghostly Prison. Potion and Tool Pavilion has ears and eyes everywhere in Agate Star Area. As they are on the opposite site of Zuo Lou, we can use their powers to send the news of the God Clan's invasion to the big clans of Agate Star Area."

"Senior, Zha Duo of Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't like us. Do you still want to meet them?" Ka Tuo didn't like this idea.

"It's different now. As Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, Zha Duo knows how critical the God Clan's invasion can be." His face darkened. Shi Yan took a deep breath. "We just need to give them the information and then we will leave. We don't need to stay with them."

Fei Lan and Leona nodded silently.

Everybody adjusted their conditions and then got out of this icy world under the surface of the mineral star. They immediately departed in the direction that Shi Yan had shown.

A vastly desolate life star inside Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Many battleships were anchored in the forest. They looked like ferocious beasts crouching on the ground. They were surrounding a large, murmuring lake. Sometimes, battleships moved in and out of that lake.

This was one of the bases of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Shadow Ghostly Prison. The lake led to the space underground which was open magically like a holy land.

Standing on a high jade tower in the middle of the lake was the senior management group of Potion and Tool Pavilion. They seemed to be waiting for something. Fu Wei and Zha Duo were standing there with the others.

"Xia Xin Yan is an outstanding expert of the Fighting League in Shadow Ghostly Prison. She leads a force of the Fighting League. Her power Upanishad is exquisite, indeed. The Hegemon of Fighting League appreciates her a lot. In Shadow Ghostly Prison, Fighting League is the only force that can scope with Dark Shadow Clan. As the Great Elder Zuo Lou is cooperating with the Dark Shadow Clan, we will support the Fighting League. We will attack the Great Elder!" Zha Duo said in a low tone, his face brutal.

Fu Wei furrowed her bold brows, "One hundred years ago, Xia Xin Yan appeared in Shadow Ghostly Prison. The Hegemon of Fighting League has favored her ever since. She has opened her world in the Fighting League within a short period. She's now the spokeswoman of Fighting League. But she... She's not from our Agate Star Area, is she?"

"We don't need to focus on this," Zha Duo waved his hand, "We just need to know that the Fighting League is the native force of our Agate Star Area. She'll be arriving soon. Pay attention: Do not discuss her foreign identity. We shouldn't displease her."

Fu Wei nodded reluctantly.

Chapter 1020: Women's Intuition

A massive asteroid was moving by the edge of Shadow Ghostly Prison.

That asteroid was a little smaller than a life star. However, it was really big. This asteroid was dark brown as if it was made of metal. And it felt like the rigid metal indeed.

This asteroid was like a broadsword with two sharp edges. It had many giant crystal artilleries that stood on the deck. All of them were loaded, emitting a dense energy. They were ready to shoot in any minute. Many metal buildings stood firm on the asteroid. They looked like spears jutting up into the sky with a sharp aura.

A black jade high platform was built atop a pointy tower. A Ghost Mark old man who looked evilly cunning was sitting on that black jade platform. He was the Great Elder Zuo Lou of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Zuo Lou was holding an octagonal mirror in his hands. He was frowning, his five fingers continually controlling something.

His fingers were flipping through many images. This octagonal mirror seemed to store tens of thousands of images and information. It was indeed magical and profound.

If someone knew about Potion and Tool Pavilion's secrets, he would recognize that it was one of the Heart Eyes of the Satellite Eye. The Heart Eye could connect the Satellite to get information that was accumulated over tens of thousands of years in Agate Star Area. Zuo Lou was searching for something with a stern face.

Standing next to Zuo Lou was a young man. It was Du Lin.

Du Lin bent his body, silently watched, and waited for Zuo Lou's order.

The images in the Heart Eye changed regularly. All of a sudden, it projected a blood cloud-shaped mark. Some special characters

were floating, blinking next to that mark, and giving information related to that mark.

Zuo Lou became stern. He observed the Heart Eye while electric beams flashed in his eyes.

Du Lin standing next to him couldn't help but look at the octagonal mirror. He focused, his face carrying some unknown intention.

"Is the mark on the divine weapon you saw his blood cloud-shaped mark?" After a while, Zuo Lou pushed the Heart Eye towards Du Lin to let him see the mark in it.

"Yes, that's it!" reported Du Lin.

Zuo Lou nodded quietly, his face extremely grimaced as he said, "This mark has appeared twice in Agate Star Area. There were two men with this mark on their foreheads. They are..."

Zuo Lou halted midway, his eyes frightened.

Du Lin was surprised. He couldn't help but step forward, asking gingerly. "Who had this mark?"

Zuo Lou didn't reply. He still stared at the symbols that described the blood mark in the Heart Eye. The longer he looked at it, the grimmer his face became.

After a while, he put the Heart Eye away, taking a deep breath. "One of them cultivated Death power Upanishad. He had appeared in Agate Star Area for a while and raised a bloody storm here. He had killed so many experts of Agate Star Area. This man... he arrived in Agate Star Area several thousand years ago. He made his bloody debut in Broken Star Field in Far West region. Then, he appeared in more areas. Each time, he used his brutal deeds to kill many warriors."

Du Lin was frightened. He bit his lower lip, screaming in astonishment. "He... what's his realm?"

Zuo Lou lifted his head to look at the young man in the way that had reached his soul. "The one you encountered isn't this man. Or else, you would have been killed already. His realm isn't clear. According to the documents stored in Satellite Eye of Potion and Tool Pavilion, warriors died in his hands were at First and Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Death appeared everywhere he visited. He didn't leave any survivor. If you have met him, you wouldn't have survived to talk to me."

Du Lin's eyes were filled with deep fear.

"The other was the invincible legend of Agate Star Area. He cultivated Despair power Upanishad. He used to be domineering in Agate Star Area. His existence could be deemed invincible. Tens of thousands of years ago, he was the powerful tycoon. However, he disappeared when he was at his peak. No one knew where he had gone. However, he was born and had grown up in Agate Star Area. Legends said that when he was breaking through to the Ethereal God Realm, a blood mark appeared on his glabella. Since then, his power changed in quality. His realm became so profound."

Zuo Lou's eyes flashed like a ghost flame. He continued slowly, his voice low. "No one knows why he got that blood mark while breaking through to Ethereal God Realm. However, he used to say that he got a mission in his perception. Still, no one knows what his mission was. Anyway, since he got that mark, his characteristics had changed dramatically. He became extreme and crazy. He was constantly challenging the experts of Agate Star Area. Each time he succeeded, he put himself into an extreme situation to break through. He had challenged the warriors whose realms were one level higher than his. He brutally killed them all!"

Du Lin was shaken. He suddenly had a fear, his countenance becoming more restlessly anxious.

"The two of them had the same marks on their glabellas. Although they appeared in Agate Star Area in different eras, they had created the same feast of blood. They were the two

unstoppable madmen. However, the two of them had disappeared. It seemed like they didn't leave any inheritance." Zuo Lou paused for a while and then frowned. "The one you encountered isn't one of them. Otherwise, you would have been killed."

Du Lin beamed a forced smile and nodded, "I think it's not one of them."

As he had only Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, although he was arrogant and confident, he wasn't too haughty to not know how height the sky was. He knew that when he encountered the peak existence, he wouldn't be able to parry. He could be killed shortly after.

"It has been several thousand of years. Those two invincible characters had disappeared from Agate Star Area a long time ago. You don't need to be scared." Zuo Lou pondered for a while and then said, "Talking with common sense, the two of them didn't have any grudge against our Potion and Tool Pavilion. Even if that shield is related to them, it has been a long time. I suppose it's not enough to threaten our Potion and Tool Pavilion."

Pausing for a while, Zuo Lou cautiously advised, "I've notified Hammer. He will go with you this time. Experts from the Dark Shadow Clan will also support us. You go there and get the Canon. About Fu Wei, if you can't kill her, Hammer will help you!"

"I..." Du Lin felt so painful, looking at Zuo Lou. "Can I confine her?"

"You can. But you have to make sure that she doesn't disturb our business and that she doesn't escape your confinement!" Zuo Lou snorted, "Your grandfather and I are good brothers. You will become the hope of the Kroc family. You can replace Hammer to be the head of the Ghost Mark Clan. Don't fail me again. Otherwise, I will choose another talent to inherit the Krocs!"

Du Lin stooped and nodded but didn't answer.

"Go." Zuo Lou waved his hand, his face cold. "They are in life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Shadow Ghostly Prison."

Du Lin bent, backing off.

In life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Shadow Ghostly Prison, Zha Duo and Fu Wei were waiting by the lake.

"Uncle Duo, how is it going with the giant blood shield I told you to investigate last time?" As it was boring to wait for someone, Fu Wei suddenly recalled something and asked.

Zha Duo frowned, sighed, and then shook his head. "The Great Elder keeps the Heart Eye. Recently, our relationship with them has turned so badly that it can't be restored. It's not easy to use the Satellite Eye to search for information. And since it's related to the Great Elder, it's much harder."

Listening to him, Fu Wei was disappointed.

"Fu Wei, it has been many years since you've been in Potion and Tool Pavilion. Which expert do you have the best relationship with? Think carefully. Is it someone you know that had helped you out there?"

Zha Duo was also suspicious. He understood well many divine weapons of the entire Agate Star Area. Although it was a vast star area, you could count the number of divine weapons on your fingers. He knew all of them. However, he had no impression of the blood shield Fu Wei had described. He was also inexplicably skeptical.

"I think not," Fu Wei thought for a while and then said, "I have a good relationship with many experts. However, it's just the business-like type. I don't have a deep relationship with anyone. It's related to the internal war of our Potion and Tool Pavilion. I think not many people dare to interfere. Anyway... our party is weaker than others. If there's some expert, I'm not sure if he wants

to support us."

Zha Duo sighed, his face dispirited. "The Great Elder does have powers. If you didn't have the Canon, we wouldn't have had a chance to compete for Pavilion Master position."

"I don't know why I always think that giant blood shield is... related to Shi Yan," Fu Wei suddenly muttered.

Zha Duo was bewildered. His face darkened, scolding, "Did he poison you? What talent does he have? Only the Original God Realm cultivation base. How could he control such a divine weapon?"

Snorted, Zha Duo said unrestrainedly. "At his realm, even if he could control the divine weapon, do you think he could parry Du Lin's strike? Who do you think Du Lin is? He's at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and he has the Thunder God Spear. Unless that one's someone at a higher level, why would he retreat first? You're being silly!"

Fu Wei didn't oppose him or say anything because even she felt that her thought was too absurd.

However, she did have this intuition. It didn't come with any logic, but it was because Shi Yan had given her a mysterious and unpredictable feeling. He was like a thick mist that concealed a lot of secrets.

She didn't tell Zha Duo that Shi Yan had used his Life power Upanishad to refill her energy. She was afraid that Zha Duo would investigate her. However, Shi Yan's marvelous performance and the safe feeling she had when he placed his hand on her back was imprinted in her soul.

At that most dangerous moment, the shield appeared. It gave her a familiar, safe feeling and it made her relaxed. It wasn't different from when Shi Yan gave her energy.

A women's intuition often has no logic and no evidence.

However, with that safe feeling, she had linked it with Shi Yan as if she knew the truth.

"You and he are just duckweed and water. You two have nothing in common. Your life will be arranged properly. You can't act rashly." Zha Duo continued coldly, "That brat is just a traveler whose path has crossed your path of life for a while. He has nothing that is different from Du Lin and the other boys. Don't linger. That's how you can reach the glory position of Pavilion Master."

Fu Wei's bold brow arched. Her eyes were filled with complex emotions.

To me, he and Du Lin are totally different... They have nothing in common...

Chapter 1021: The First Generation

Shadow Ghostly Prison had many forces, but only one force was powerful enough to cope with the Dark Shadow Clan: the Fighting League!

The Fighting League was formed by many forces of different races. Initially, it wasn't concentrated. When the Dark Shadow Clan arrived and began to invade everywhere, the scattering forces of the Fighting League became more solid. They started to compete with Dark Shadow Clan to control Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Most of the time, the Fighting League had the upper hand. Even in the most fierce and bloody battles, they were the ones who stood and smiled at the end.

The reason why they couldn't eliminate the Dark Shadow Clan was because of that race's features. They could move like shadows and the Fighting League hadn't been able to locate their headquarters yet. This race, which suddenly appeared in the Shadow Ghostly Prison, was really mysterious. They didn't know where they came from or where they were hiding. After losing a battle, the Dark Shadow Clan's troops could use the special damaged space of Shadow Ghostly Prison to retreat at ease with external wounds.

The Fighting League had six big war departments led by six experts. Each department had powerful forces.

Today, Windstorm War Department of Fighting League suddenly visited life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion. The gigantic battleships hovered in the air like dark clouds, giving people a heavy pressure.

The massive battleship leading this fleet had a flying bird shape. It was almost five thousand meters long with the wings as sharp as blades releasing cold light.

By the late evening, a group of several hundred warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion was watching at the battleships anchored in the air, waiting in silence.

Shortly after, blue phoenix bird war chariots detached from the leading battleships. Those war chariots had the form of the legendary phoenix-typed bird with magnificent, sleek, five-colored feather. While they were flying, people could hear the magical melody that was like birds singing.

Those blue bird war chariots were also fabricated by Potion and Tool Pavilion. It was one of the top-quality war chariots that Potion and Tool Pavilion had ever made. It was famous in Agate Star Area for its lightning speed.

The blue bird war chariots descended beautifully. The leading war chariot had a light pink crystal lotus throne where a distinctively beautiful woman sat. She was wearing a gorgeous long dress, whose hem was beautified with marvelous drawings and patterns. Her dress was flimsy and floaty like light flowing. Her black hair cascaded like a waterfall reaching her delicate waist. Her bare feet had two exquisite blue crystal anklets. The energy ripples from those anklets were wonderful and clear.

She was sitting neatly on the rosy crystal lotus throne, looking like a flawless, blooming flower. Her bearings were elegant and indeed noble. Her pink, succulent lips had a cold smile. She descended from the sky like a Goddess watching her creatures.

Zha Duo was solemn. He hurried to welcome her. His cold and sinister face squeezed an ugly smile. He raised his voice, "Lady Xia Xin Yan, you humble yourself by coming to our cottage. Thank you for beautifying our place. Welcome! Welcome!"

Fu Wei lifted her head, looking at the lady slowly landing. Her bright eyes were wide open as she was attracted by the elegant and graceful bearing of Xia Xin Yan.

As they were all women, Fu Wei discreetly made a comparison

and felt embarrassed. She began to admire that lady.

"Thank you, Tenth Elder and Twelfth Elder for your personal welcome. I'm too honored to receive your warm hospitality."

Xia Xin Yan smiled, revealing her white teeth which were like the fulgent pearls and were very mesmerizing.

The guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion lifted their heads to watch her elegantly come. They were so charmed by her beautiful posture, so they tried to hide their hot eyes. To the beauties, men always uncontrollable enthusiasm. As Xia Xin Yan was a high-rank commander in Fighting League, of course, she drew a lot of attention especially since she was with her outstanding men.

"Lady Xia came here personally. We must treat you well. It's our manners." Zha Duo smiled. After the woman got off her blue bird war chariot, he jabbered. "We've prepared a feast. We're all waiting for you."

When he treated Shi Yan, he was cold and imperious. However, when he faced Xia Xin Yan, he was gentle and kind. He had even smiled. His attitude was completely different.

The reason for this difference was Xia Xin Yan's position in Fighting League. She was the one who controlled the Windstorm, one of the war departments of Fighting League. She was one of the most powerful characters in Fighting League. Moreover, the Fighting League's Hegemon favored her a lot. The Fighting League, whether in Shadow Ghostly Prison or in Agate Star Area, was an intimidating force, which wasn't less influential than Monster Clan or Demon Clan.

"Then, I have to bother you guys." Xia Xin Yan's porcelain face beamed a weak smile. She nodded, following Zha Duo and Fu Wei to the lake.

The water in the center of the lake parted, revealing an exquisite path made of jewels. It was illuminated, leading to the center of

life star number 9.

The underground was a whole new world. The dome above their heads was inlaid with gemstones and jewels, making it looked like the starry sea. Brilliant lights shone beautifully. Many several-hundred-meter, white chalcedony pillars supported the dome and the massive subterranean palace. They were carved with beautiful and magical patterns.

The main hall of the main palace was larger than ten football stadiums with many strange and beautiful floras. Many small streams weaved with each other and meandered around the exquisite jade pavilions for the visitors to rest and watch the wonderful view. Inside those pavilions stood a table with sweet aroma from many precious fruits.

This main hall was just a corner of this underground world. The other areas were arranged to fabricate battleships with piles of different materials. Hundreds of blacksmiths and alchemists were moving to and fro. They were so busy everyday fabricating and refining tools, pellets, and armor for different forces around Agate Star Area.

Potion and Tool Pavilion had many life stars. This life star number 9 was a massive factory that refined pellets and force treasures. It was under Zha Duo and Fu Wei's party.

Inside the main hall, maids of different races were holding a tray filled with fruits, walking back and forth. Sitting on the main chair was a stout old woman. She smiled, squinted her eyes and waved at Xia Xin Yan. "Come sit here."

Zha Duo and Fu Wei became a little cautious when they saw that grannie. They slightly bowed to greet her and spoke in unison, "Third Elder."

Third Elder Bettina was a character at the founder level of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She wore a dark blue gown, her hair tied in an updo bun. She had a lot of delicate rings on her fingers and she had

no less than one hundred small accessories on her body. Each of them had some special functions.

Seeing the grannie, Xia Xin Yan was a little scared. She hurried to greet the old woman. "Greetings, Third Elder."

"How is your Hegemon?" Bettina smiled and asked.

As she was at the noble founder level of Potion and Tool Pavilion, she didn't come out there to welcome her. As she had spent her time while being so busy to meet Xia Xin Yan here, it was enough to give her face. At her level, unless the Hegemon of the Fighting League came, she wouldn't humble herself to greet people.

"Our Hegemon is cultivating in seclusion. He's doing well. Thank you for your concern," said Xia Xin Yan solemnly.

"Come and sit, dear. Your Hegemon and I used to take a walk around this world. And you..." Bettina didn't finish, waving her hand. "Zha Duo and Fu Wei stay here. The others should leave."

People of Potion and Tool Pavilion got up and left, including the maids.

This spacious hall now had only Bettina, Fu Wei, Zha Duo, and Xia Xin Yan. Zha Duo and Fu Wei were confused, taking their seats in the table lower than the other's. They looked at Bettina curiously.

Bettina was several thousand years old. In Potion and Tool Pavilion, she wasn't the one who had the highest realm, but she was the oldest one. Even the Great Elder Zuo Lou was just her junior.

In Potion and Tool Pavilion and Agate Star Area, she was a legendary character. Ordinary people would never have a chance to meet her. Even an expert at Incipient God Realm could only possibly gain her favor.

When Bettina heard of the Canon, she came to life star number 9. With her position and age, she didn't need to meet Xia Xin Yan.

However, she insisted on it, which confused Zha Duo and Fu Wei. They didn't know why Bettina valued Xia Xin Yan that much.

"Sigh, it has been several thousand years. Time flies fast." After the irrelevant people had all left, Bettina sighed and asked, "Do you remember me?"

Fu Wei and Zha Duo were baffled. They looked so shocked as they didn't know why she had that question.

Has she known Xia Xin Yan before?

The two of them were bewildered as they thought that it was too absurd. Bettina had lived several thousand years. How could she know a little girl who has just arrived in Shadow Ghostly Prison less than one hundred years? Was there anything more shocking than this?

While Fu Wei and Zha Duo were perplexed, Xia Xin Yan bit her lower lips, her face so strange. After a while, she nodded and pointed at her head, "She was the first generation. She and you vowed to be sisters... I... I don't know what I should address you as."

The grannie smiled and said trickily, "If you want to count that as sisterhood, should I call you little mei-mei?"

"Mei-mei..." Bettina looked dazzled as if she had fallen into a deep place of her memory. She muttered, "It has been so many years. You were so talented that year. You had the strangest Time power Upanishad. Your soul has been reincarnated seven times. You've lived in different star areas. You've used reincarnation to understand Time power Upanishad. But it has been seven lives. Are you still "you" of that year?"

Fu Wei and Zha Duo were baffled, sitting idly as they couldn't believe what they had just heard. They looked at Xia Xin Yan with deep fear in their eyes.

"You want to hear the truth?" Xia Xin Yan frowned.

Bettina contemplated for a while and then nodded gently. "I know the truth hurts. But yeah, tell me."

"I'm Xia Xin Yan. I'm not here. What she left me are... the inheritance of Time power Upanishad and her memory of seven lives. Nothing else. In other words, she has gone and vanished in the long river of time. She made mistakes in her cultivation," said Xia Xin Yan.

Bettina forced a smile, sighing. "I knew it would turn out that way... That year, your brother and I, no... her brother had advised her not to act rashly. But she was stubborn. And she had ended in such a way."

Pausing for a while, Bettina continued, "Since he has intentionally assigned you to manage the Windstorm and facilitated you to deal with the business of Fighting League, I know your secret. If you weren't his blood sister, with his characters, how could he treat a stranger so well like that?"

The man Bettina referred to was the current Hegemon of the Fighting League, also the older brother of the woman who had Xia Xin Yan as one of her reincarnations: Feng Han.

Chapter 1022: Caning the passionate couple?

"This place."

Standing on the asteroid, Shi Yan pointed while talking deliberately.

Fei Lan, Leona, and the others were surprised. Looking at a pitch-black area in front of them, they were baffled before releasing the Soul Consciousness to sense. However, they couldn't detect any life energy fluctuation.

The cotton clouds over there were like ink, shading the entire area. In their eyes, it was an opaque area with no living being or any soul form creature.

If Shi Yan didn't have some special abilities, they would think that he was talking nonsense. However, none of them felt like that, as they were looking at Shi Yan while waiting for his next explanation.

"The Potion and Tool Pavilion is really powerful," Shi Yan complimented. "They can conceal the entire life star. You guys can't sense anything from that place. This unique force of the Agate Star Area is really mysterious, indeed."

"There're many methods to cover the life star. It's not something really awesome. As far as I know, there are at least thirty methods to hide all the living signals of a life star." Benny frowned while talking arrogantly, "We have many similar solutions in our Dark Exterminating Star Area. That year, we also used the thick gray mist of outer space to cover our main life star, such that soul consciousness couldn't detect it. So, this method isn't something really profound."

While listening to him, people had their eyes brightened with surprise.

"So, do you know how to resolve it?" Ka Tuo grinned evilly.

"My realm and power aren't enough to do that," Benny shook his head. "If I can reach the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, I can directly break that obstacle to expose the life star."

Benny cultivated the Destruction power Upanishad. Although he was young, his heart for killing was too heavy. Towards any problem, his solution was always brutal and straightforward. He just needed to smash or break to clean it up.

Fortunately, this kid's realm wasn't high. Or else, he would become the malignant tumor of this universe. His desire of extreme devastation resided deep in his bones. If he didn't like it, the first thing he would have in his head would be to break it to not feel so irritated.

"I'm sure there're guards inside the barrier. We just need to cause some commotion. They will get out to stop us." Shi Yan chuckled, touching his forehead. The starlight began to twirl around his body, then lined up and attacked the clouds in front of him.

Boom!

The cloud sent back dazzling sparks. It suddenly shrank like a rubber ball that was hit hard. It had a clear concave spot on it now.

"Someone will come out to check us," Shi Yan smiled, waiting.

Indeed, after three breaths, a war chariot hissed along its way, piercing through the cloud and flying towards them. The three warriors of the Potion and Tool Pavilion emerged with dark faces. They gawked, looking at Shi Yan's group. The team leader was shouting angrily, but then asked in surprise. "You guys did that?"

He had met those people on Fu Wei's battleship. Seeing the troublemakers were someone he knew, he relaxed, giving a forced smile. "What do you want?"

"Please notify your leader... We want to meet Elder Fu Wei. I have some important issues to discuss with her." Shi Yan smiled

while apologizing. "Since you use a special method to conceal the life star, I have to use such a begrudging method. Please forgive me."

However, those guards under Fu Wei's party had a good impression of Shi Yan's team. When Fu Wei had fallen into the perilous situation, Shi Yan's team didn't leave but chose to fight with them side by side. They had given Fu Wei's guards a good impression indeed.

The patrol leader frowned, talking with difficulty. "This life star number nine doesn't belong to Young Elder. Today, we have some distinguished guests, so I can't allow you to get in."

"You help us to notify them. I'll see if Fu Wei wants to meet me or not." Pondering for a while, Shi Yan added with a solemn face. "It's related to the internal competition of your Potion and Tool Pavilion. It's really critical. Or else, I wouldn't actually want to meet your Elder Zha Duo."

The patrol leader was a little baffled. "Is it really critical?"

Shi Yan nodded heavily. "In a much more important way, it's related to the future of the entire Agate Star Area."

The man changed his visage instantly, talking hurriedly. "Alright, I'm going to tell them now. Please wait here."

Then, they drove the war chariot and returned into the dark cotton clouds with a flash, then disappeared.

...

Main hall, life star number nine...

Bettina and Xia Xin Yan were talking happily. Zha Duo and Fu Wei didn't intervene, just listening to them.

Zha Duo and Fu Wei were astounded as they often studied Xia Xin Yan with shock.

No matter how hard they guessed, they couldn't imagine

something incredible like that happened to Xia Xin Yan. She had the Time power Upanishad. Her soul had reincarnated seven times, and she still had the memory of her previous lives. In her first life, she had vowed the sisterhood with Bettina, the founder level Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. Such information was much beyond their understanding, shocking them too much.

"When I knew you would visit us, I departed from another area to see you here." Bettina was touched. "It's been so many years, you know. I'm senile now and can barely walk... And you, you're still shining. From this aspect, I think... perhaps you are right."

"No, not me. It's her." Xia Xin Yan corrected her, talking reluctantly, "You and our Hegemon are the same. You guys always consider me her instinctively. Unfortunately... I'm not here. I hope you could see this."

"I understand," Bettina smiled miserably. "But, you guys have the same bearing. Although the minds are different, your powers Upanishads are the same. From some other aspects, I would instinctively think you're her."

Zha Duo and Fu Wei sat quietly without interrupting.

Suddenly, Fu Wei's sleeve sounded with a double clink. She furrowed, twitching her fingers. She connected her Soul Connection to listen to the report from the guards outside.

Several seconds later, Fu Wei got up, giving an apologetic smile to Bettina, Zha Duo, and Xia Xin Yan while talking. "A friend comes to see me. I'm going to meet him."

Bettina waved her hand as her focus was laying on Xia Xin Yan, not mind the other much. "Little Wei, you can go. I will chat with Xin Yan for a while. You don't need to wait for us."

Zha Duo darkened his face, his eyes cold while looking at Fu Wei as he lowered his voice, "Is it that brat?"

He could see a happy gleam on Fu Wei's face. With his

understanding of her characteristics, Fu Wei wouldn't be so friendly with other people with her calm nature. Only when she was with that brat would she show some feminine emotions. Thus, he could guess it correctly.

Being asked, Fu Wei became unnatural. Zha Duo got more certain, talking heavily with a dark complexion. "Not allowed!"

Zha Duo pitched his voice, which disturbed Bettina and Xia Xin Yan. Bettina had a lot of wrinkles on her face like mountain ranges. She couldn't hold it but knitted her brows while talking unhappily. "Little Duo, although Little Wei is younger than you, she's an Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. Her position isn't lower than yours. Why did you talk to her like that? And, you don't have the right to interfere with her personal business. Don't be wanton!"

Hearing Bettina, Zha Duo hastily got up, then bowed and said, "It's not that I want to control her. It's... I want better things for Fu Wei. She has a friend in Demon Blood Star. They have something... ambiguous. I'm worried that she would let her relationship affect her cultivation. You also know that she's our hope. If she falls in love, it's hard to win the Pavilion Master potion at this critical moment."

Bettina was surprised. Her countenance became more severe as she pried, "Little Wei, is it true?"

"Don't listen to Uncle Duo. We're just friends. He used to help me, and his relationship with the leaders of the Demon Blood Star and Monster Dragon Star isn't shallow. I'm also working for the common benefits of Potion and Tool Pavilion." Fu Wei bit her lower lip while talking. However, she stooped, not daring to look at Bettina in her eyes.

"You see her face? Does that mean there is nothing special in that friendship?" Zha Duo snorted. "They drank the "seven emotions and six desires" liquor. Well, if a man and a woman drinking this

liquor together in a closed room, even if they don't have anything, they will have something. I think their relationship isn't shallow."

"Because of the Canon, I had to use this bad plan. Do you think I liked it?" Fu Wei was also infuriated. "If you hadn't forced me to verify the information of the Canon, why would I have to humiliate myself that way?"

"You guys drank the "Passionate" liquor together..." Bettina was stern, looking at Fu Wei while hissing, "Little Wei, bring that kid here. I want to meet him."

Fu Wei was bewildered, begging, "We don't need to do that, right? I'm just going to talk to him to see what he wants to tell me. You don't need to interrogate him personally, do you?"

"You don't listen to me now?" Bettina frowned, "Is it true that you don't respect us elderly after your teacher passed away?"

"No, I don't..."

"Bring him in. I want to see him!"

"Understood..."

Fu Wei was reluctant, replying her in a muffled voice as she left. She was so begrudging.

"Oh, you guys do cane the passionate couple?" Xia Xin Yan smiled, but her eyes didn't as she said oddly, "Interfering in personal affair and messing up her real affection... It's not what you seniors should do, right?"

Zha Duo parted his lips, but he didn't dare to oppose.

Bettina was surprised, smiling. "You little girl, why do you think we want to harm her? We just want the best for her. Many people have yearned for the Pavilion Master position. If I weren't too old, I would try my best to get it. Little Wei has a big chance to get the position. This time, she had a huge lucky chance to get the Canon. She now gets half the chance to sit on that Pavilion Master chair. If

she messes up because of her love life, she will regret it for the rest of her life. We won't harm her. We are considering the best for her."

Xia Xin Yan denied voicing her opinion again. She smiled but didn't talk. It was the Potion and Tool Pavilion's matter after all. Even if she didn't like it, she wouldn't interfere. It was the rule, and she knew it well.

After that, they didn't talk more about this. While waiting for Shi Yan, they chatted a little more.

Chapter 1023: You look like my lady, who has been missing for years...

A corner of the crystal clear lake...

Fu Wei stood upright, wearing sky blue clothes. Her porcelain wrist wore a fresh, green ring. She looked like a blooming lotus, pure and beautiful.

A war chariot landed like a tornado. People on that chariot slowly got out, stepping on the stone ground in front of her. Shi Yan led them, beaming a bright smile as he bent to greet her, "Hello Lady!"

Fu Wei relaxed her face, smiling discreetly and tenderly. "I heard you have something important to tell me?"

Shi Yan nodded and said earnestly, "It's critical... Otherwise, I wouldn't come to disturb your peaceful and quiet time."

"Critical," Fu Wei gently looked at Zuo Shi, Xuan Ming, and the others. She smiled and said, "If it weren't because of you, I wouldn't have overcome Du Lin's challenge. I hadn't thanked you properly before Uncle Duo barged in. He misunderstood you. I want to say sorry on behalf of him."

Waving his hand, Shi Yan seemed not bothered with it. "It has nothing to do with him. I don't mind if he misunderstood me or not. About Du Lin, I didn't have any merit. It's you who is strong enough."

"Not you?" Fu Wei smiled with some deep intention in her eyes. "Wasn't the giant Blood Shield that had appeared all of a sudden related to you,"

"No, we aren't related." Shi Yan shook his head resolutely.

Fu Wei giggled, looking at him in the eye. "We won't talk about it more. An elder wants to see you... She... holds an extremely high position in the pavilion. She has treated me well. However, she's

afraid that I would have a deep relationship with you. You should consider that."

Shi Yan was surprised. He stayed baffled for a while before talking, "It's good. It's better if I talk to your senior about what I want to tell you."

"Follow me," Fu Wei stood up, gently flying towards the center of the lake.

"You will go there alone," a guard told him by the lake while frowning.

"You guys wait for me here." Shi Yan also knew the rules. He advised Fei Lan and the others, then followed Fu Wei, flying towards the main hall in the lake.

...

The main hall...

While discussing with Bettina, Xia Xin Yan suddenly felt a vehement vibe in her soul. She could feel something very important to her was coming close. She felt a little restless.

As her realm was profound and her power Upanishad was marvelous, she had many mysterious abilities. She calmed down her mind and sensed, but couldn't get anything strange.

"Squeak!"

A stone door above their head squeaked open, as two figures slowly descended.

Xia Xin Yan's beautiful eyes suddenly sparkled with brilliant, dazzling light while her body shivered. She was bewildered, looking at the incoming man. She sat perplexed, as if she was struck by the Body Fixing Spell.

After Shi Yan landed, he stooped and raked his eyes through the place. He was petrified as if he were walloped, his face astounded.

It had been almost one hundred years. The two intimate souls

who had found each other in the Grace Mainland suddenly met up again in this place. The two of them were dumbstruck, as they didn't expect this encounter.

"Little Wei, is he the boy you told me about? He has a deep relationship with Blood Demon, Bath, and Gu Te?" Bettina hadn't recognized the strange expression on Xia Xin Yan sitting next to her yet. She eyed Shi Yan while frowning. "Only at the Third Sky of Original God Realm... Not really outstanding..."

Her line of sight switched from Zha Duo to Shi Yan, who looked really dumb at this moment, frowning tightly. "Such a fool..."

Bettina relaxed. After she had seen Shi Yan, she felt quite disappointed. However, she also felt lucky that Fu Wei wouldn't have anything with Shi Yan. How could Fu Wei lay her eyes on a stupid kid like him? She instinctively thought that Zha Duo was wrong.

Zha Duo was also confused as he looked at Shi Yan for a while and became disappointed.

Shi Yan didn't have a high realm and his manner wasn't excellent. He didn't even know that he should greet Bettina. Apparently, he made people disdain him.

"This is my senior, the Third Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Shi Yan? Shi Yan!" Fu Wei knitted her bold brows as she secretly called him, but he hadn't awakened yet. At this point, she had to raise her voice.

Shi Yan sat down dully, facing Xia Xin Yan across the stone table. He was so astounded that he didn't hear what Fu Wei was saying to him. And, he didn't greet Bettina and Zha Duo either. He acted incredibly dumb.

The woman sitting in front of him was much more elegant than in the past. Her gorgeous gown lingered on her perfect figure. Her s*xxy body was so charming, her bare feet seemingly made of

porcelain and flawless. Today, her stylish and enchanting characteristics could make people's hearts pound harder.

Shi Yan's line of sight fell on Xia Xin Yan and turned him as dumb as someone who had seen the glamor for the first time. He couldn't even hide his hot eyes gazing on her.

Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei hadn't noticed Xia Xin Yan's strange expression as they were all watching Shi Yan. Seeing his confused complexion, Bettina and Zha Duo disdained him even more.

Fu Wei was angry discreetly. She bit her lips, rolling her eyes at him.

Seeing the glamor, he became dizzy and forgot even the basic etiquette. This made Fu Wei mad, thinking he was like the other men who were thrilled by Xia Xin Yan's beauty.

"Cough!" Xia Xin Yan gave a dry cough as her face turned normal again. She smiled, then said naturally, "Fu Wei jie-jie, why don't you introduce this outstanding, handsome young man here? He looks like he wants to eat human flesh. Is he the one who has a reluctant relationship with you?"

Fu Wei was so embarrassed as she glared at Shi Yan, trying to explain. "No. We're just friends. Don't make wrong assumptions, guys."

"Normal friends?" Xia Xin Yan smiled, but she didn't part her lips. Her beautiful eyes rolled, but she still gazed at Shi Yan. "He looks good. But handsome warriors are everywhere in Agate Star Area. He just looks so-so. Bearing... Hm, only that much... He seems foolish though. I think that Fu Wei jie-jie doesn't like him, right?"

She was talking to Fu Wei, but her line of sight had never left Shi Yan. Her voice sounded mocking, but no one knew that she was shivering.

Shi Yan pulled himself together from the awkward situation. He secretly glared at Xia Xin Yan, then gave a light cough and gathered his manner. "Yeah, I'm a fool. But, I'm not like someone who is trying to pretend to be foolish."

Pausing for a while, his eyes became dissolute, raking on Xia Xin Yan's sexy body and not wanting to get back. He tried to look despicable. "May I know your name, Lady? Have you been married? What do you think about me? I don't know why when I see you, I thought that you were my lady who had been missing for years. I wonder if you have the same feeling..."

Listening to him, Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei were frightened, looking at him as if they were looking at a monster.

This man... Was he nuts?

What position and level did Xia Xin Yan have? She was the leader of the Windstorm War Department of Fighting League! She was very famous in Shadow Ghostly Prison. She was extremely brilliant, and her plans had never failed. She had taken her force to attack the Dark Shadow Clan several times with brutal and extreme deeds. She was famous throughout one hundred years in the Shadow Ghostly Prison, the best of the best!

Even Zha Duo and Fu Wei had to welcome her personally. This kind of character, how could he tease her that way?

Fu Wei was panic-stricken, her face pale. She hurried to get up and explain to Xia Xin Yan reluctantly. "This friend of mine is drunk, acting strangely. My apology... Please don't hold grudges against him."

She turned around, then lowered her voice and scolded him. "Shi Yan, what's wrong with you? Do you know who she is? She's the commander of the Windstorm War Department of Fighting League! She's the person the Hegemon trusts the most! She can even talk on behalf of the Fighting League! I'm begging you, don't act rashly!"

Bettina and Zha Duo were pale, looking at him maliciously.

However, it was beyond their expectation that Xia Xin Yan, who was flirted with, hadn't been enraged yet. Quite the contrary, she somehow blushed and threw Shi Yan a glance, talking casually, "So? You want to pursue me? Of course, I'm not married. But, it's not easy to chase me. I have someone I like. He's an a*shole who enjoys his life out there. He has a lot of love affairs. It has been one hundred years, and he hasn't found me yet. If you want to pursue me, help me kill him first. Can you do that?"

Everybody was bewildered, their faces odd.

'That kid is crazy. But, is craziness infectious?'

Even a noble like her turned crazy? Since when did she like to give her good face to a man, especially when that man had teased her first? The master of Windstorm was infamous. Since when had she become so easy to talk with? She still spoke to that man nicely. What f*cking logic was this?

Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei all felt panic-stricken. They looked at Xia Xin Yan then Shi Yan with his naked line of sight. They found the situation was way beyond their imagination.

"All right! Tell me, what's his name? Tell me, and I'll kill him!" Shi Yan rolled his sleeves, his face savage while shouting. "Dares to let such a beauty wait for him for one hundred years... He's committed a big crime. I'll kill him then we'll be together. How does it sound?"

"Pfff!"

Xia Xin Yan burst out laughing charmingly. She angrily stared at him, then lowered her voice and scolded him. "You don't care about your reputation!"

Shi Yan laughed with his thick-skinned face.

Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei were baffled. They exchanged looks, but they didn't know what to do.

"Lady, can we talk in private? Let me show my hot affection to you. Seeing you today, I'm amazed as if I've seen a fairy. If I can't have something with you, I will regret it my whole life. Please fulfill my wish!" Shi Yan seized the chance, grinning with bright eyes.

Bettina's group was bewildered. They cursed Shi Yan under their breath for being despicable. He was really wanton this time indeed.

"Excellent." Beyond their expectation, Xia Xin Yan agreed resolutely. She smiled like a flower, talking to Bettina. "Can I borrow a secret room?"

Bettina nodded bewilderedly. She felt so tired and unnatural. She called in a feeble voice, "People, guide them to the secret chamber number three."

Under the fierce gaze of Zha Duo and Fu Wei, as if they wanted to eat people alive, Xia Xin Yan jolted up from her seat fast. She looked even more hurried than Shi Yan as she hastened to leave to the secret chamber. Zha Duo and Fu Wei could see her nape blushing... It was the sign of her rushing affection...

At this moment, Shi Yan laughed, then lifted his face and followed her under the sharp looks of the other three.

Chapter 1024: A kiss for one hundred years

"What's the f*ck is going on?"

Inside the main hall, Zha Duo couldn't help but curse. He pulled the few hair left on his head, his face irritated. Fu Wei hadn't recovered from her fear. She looked strange, trying to pry, "Is it possible that Xia Xin Yan does like him?"

"Impossible!"

Bettina and Zha Duo screamed at the same time.

Fu Wei was surprised. Pondering for a while, she said, "Rumors say that she has never given any man her approval. Isn't it true? Why did she act so awkwardly when she saw him?"

"It must be because she was so infuriated!"

Bettina was surprised. She chuckled as she got something all of a sudden. She talked as if she knew the real situation. "Yeah, it should be that way. I understand my friend. She never lets herself in a disadvantaged situation. She wanted to go to the secret chamber that hurriedly... She... She wanted to separate from us to teach that brat a lesson! Yes! It's like that! I saw clearly that her neck reddened because she was so angry! I can tell she was indignant!"

"Yeah, it must be like that!" Zha Duo agreed with her. "That brat dared to tease her. His despicable eyes were so... With her position and status, of course, she wouldn't let him go easily."

Zha Duo looked like he enjoyed Shi Yan's misfortune, coldly looking in the direction of the secret chamber. "That brat is going to have a lesson this time. It should be a fight taking place now in the room. Wait and see. When he walks out of that door, he won't look nice anymore."

Bettina smiled and nodded. "That brat is stubborn. He dared to say things he shouldn't have. He deserves that! What did he say?"

'You look like my lady who went missing for years!' Moron! He's shameless, indeed! Fu Wei, I believe you now. It's impossible that you would like something like him. We've wronged you."

Zha Duo was also embarrassed. "Fu Wei, I was impulsive. If I had known him to be a person like that, I wouldn't have worried about you."

Bettina and Zha Duo relaxed. They seemed to have nothing to worry anymore, and just sat to eat some fruits. They smiled, waiting for Shi Yan to come out of that door with a swollen face.

Although Fu Wei was so confused and thought that Shi Yan had some mental disorder, she didn't want to see Shi Yan encounter bad things. She said worriedly, "Would Lady Xia mishit him? He has a good relationship with Devil Blood Star and Monster Dragon Star. If he encounters bad things in our Potion and Tool Pavilion, don't you think you will need to give them a proper explanation?"

"Don't worry. She knows how to behave. It won't turn so bad that we can't solve it." Bettina waved her hand, talking casually, "It's good for him to learn a lesson. He will know how high the sky is."

"You guys should never underestimate him. I saw how Blood Devil treated him in the Devil Blood Star. He's the only fellow of Blood Devil's tribe. I think you know Blood Devil's characteristics." Fu Wei was still worried.

Hearing her, Bettina and Zha Duo were hesitant.

Pondering for a while, Bettina frowned while talking, "I'm going to sense their fight then."

"Thud!"

A low grumbling noise arose from the secret chamber. It sounded like a body impact. It was low, but it wasn't so fierce.

Closing her eyes, Bettina sensed discreetly. She said, "Both of them are panting. They must be fighting now. However, it's under control. It shouldn't be a big deal. Don't worry. She won't take his

life. I'm sure about this. She's not an impulsive warrior."

Listening to her, Fu Wei was begrudging. She was still worried, but she said nothing.

...

Inside the stone chamber, it was a battle as they guessed. However, the way they battled each other wasn't what they had ever imagined...

Inside the ten-square-meter room, Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan were pressing against each other like a pair of twins with a conjoined body on the jade wall while kissing passionately. They hugged and rolled on the ground. Sometimes, they were stopped by the wall and caused some grumbling noises.

...

"No, I brought him here. If he gets into trouble, I will blame myself." After Fu Wei had struggled in her mind for a while, she couldn't help but move to the door of the secret chamber despite Zha Duo and Bettina trying to tell her to stop. She hissed at the door. "Lady Xia, please show mercy. Although he spoke rudely, he didn't mean harm. Please, for the face of our Potion and Tool Pavilion, don't hurt him so bad!"

Fu Wei stood by the door, gently knocking to catch the attention of people inside.

In the secret chamber, Shi Yan trembled on hearing Fu Wei's hissing. He cursed under his breath as he was annoyed.

Xia Xin Yan smiled charmingly, lowering her voice. "That woman cares about you a lot. She's afraid that I'm bullying you. What's the relationship between you guys?"

"Nothing!" Shi Yan rose his hand, "I'm perfectly clean!"

"A*shole! You can't stay still wherever you go! If you don't mess with people, you can't feel comfortable, right?" Xia Xin Yan glared,

snorting. "I've lost my mood today. I'm not going to satisfy you."

Looking at Shi Yan's eyes which were about to be set ablaze, she gently stood up, gnawing her succulent red underlip. She lowered her voice and then said, "They're all outside. We can't enjoy that much... If I'm careless and let out a moan, my reputation will be destroyed." Her beautiful eyes were watery as her sexy body shivered. Evidently, she was trying to control her surging, passionate affection.

Shi Yan looked at her putting on her clothes and felt so irritated as he couldn't vent out his desire. He gave her a forced smile. "I have nothing ambiguous with her, really."

He knew she was jealous. Otherwise, she wouldn't have insulted him right when she saw him. At the critical moment, this nubile lady ditched him, which was even more annoyed than killing him. He felt a cat paw gently scratching his heart. He felt dry and hot, and it was hard to bear.

"I'm giving you a lesson for your flirty nature. We're done for today. Harrumph! I can't reward you without any merit." Xia Xin Yan smiled gently. Looking at his hurried gait like a monkey, Xia Xin Yan felt so comfortable. "They thought I was teaching you a lesson. Ha, it's interesting! I can see Bettina and Zha Duo hope that I would hit you hard until your face is swollen. You're a failure in their eyes, eh? And only Fu Wei cares about you. Your relationship with women is sure good. Tell me, how did you seduce her?"

"No, I didn't. Really, I didn't!" Shi Yan almost rose his hand to swear.

"At first, we shouldn't reveal our relationship. The Hegemon treats me as his blood sister. He's a bit overprotective. He watches me closely. If he knows of our relationship, he will be enraged badly." Xia Xin Yan grinned, teasing. "You haven't surpassed me yet. I've reached the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm already. With your status and power, I think my Hegemon won't agree. You

should put in more effort. Don't lag behind me."

Listening to her, Shi Yan was shocked, beaming a forced smile. "You've reached the Ethereal God Realm, and you still didn't have any significant bottleneck?"

"Yes," Xia Xin Yan giggled. "Thus, you have to put more efforts. One hundred years ago, I told you to be stronger. When you are stronger than me, I'm willing to be your woman. You're still behind me. So... I can only give you some different advantage."

"Then what should I do now?" Shi Yan put on a sad face, veins bulging on his head. "You want me to walk out of this room like this?"

Xia Xin Yan was bewildered, blushing. Her beautiful watery eyes looked at his private place. Hesitating for a while, she muttered loud enough for the mosquitoes to hear. "I'm going to use my hand then..."

After a long time.

The stone door of the secret chamber squeaked open. Xia Xin Yan walked out with wrinkled clothes and locks of hair tangled over her temples. She lifted her head, walking out arrogantly, her countenance cold and her eyes disdainful.

They had fought!

Bettina and Zha Duo exchanged looks. From Xia Xin Yan's wrinkled clothes, they could confirm their assumption.

Then, Shi Yan walked out of the room dispiritedly. He clutched his stomach as if he were hurt, which strengthened the others' assumption. They now believed that Shi Yan learned his lesson in that chamber already. Otherwise, his footstep wouldn't be that light.

"Are you all right? Did you get hurt?" Fu Wei frowned, glancing at Xia Xin Yan in an unfriendly way. She walked over and reached out to support Shi Yan while nagging. "Why did you need to

provoke her? You got your lesson. Will you behave now?"

"I will, I will," Shi Yan nodded instinctively while answering her.

"Shall we talk the business now?" Fu Wei gave a light snort.

"Yeah, we should." Shi Yan chuckled, restoring his deliberating manner. However, he often glanced at Xia Xin Yan.

'He's so bold in this flirting thing! He doesn't even want his life!'

Fu Wei goggled, cursing under her breath. She was so bitter she wanted to vent her anger out. However, she couldn't find anything to do that, and began to feel distressed.

Chapter 1025: Play to the gallery?

"The Great Elder has joined hands with the Dark Shadow Clan to facilitate the God Clan's invasion?"

Bettina gave a faint smile. With her prejudice towards Shi Yan, she didn't have any favorable impression of him, so she didn't believe him. "Nonsense! Although Great Elder has a big wild scheme, he knows what not to do. Letting the God Clan invade our place, what's good for him in this? He's willing to be the God Clan's hound?"

Bettina shook her head, not believing Shi Yan at all.

Zha Duo and Fu Wei were also surprised, but they thought Shi Yan was just acting. Fu Wei felt that Shi Yan's today performance was too bad. She assumed he was playing the gallery to earn their attention. Thus, she didn't buy it.

"Do you know the superpower status of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Agate Star Area?" Zha Duo wasn't polite, grinning. "Being the Great Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, he has almost controlled all of the star area. He's the peak character who tops everyone else. Unless his brain's dysfunctional, he would never become the servant of the God Clan. Your joke's funny!"

Fu Wei kept silent and didn't help Shi Yan defend himself either.

The three Elders of the Potion and Tool Pavilion used their words and complexion to express their attitude. Shi Yan had gone through all the trouble to get to this place, bringing them the news. He was so angry at their response.

He understood that it was because the Potion and Tool Pavilion didn't consider his status or position. If Xia Xin Yan, Blood Devil of the Demon Clan or, Bath and Gu Te from Monster Dragon Star had told them this information, the three Elders of the Potion and Tool Pavilion would have jumped in fear.

When one didn't have status or a high position, people would consider the truth one spoke as a big joke. No one would care.

"I got the information from the memory of an Ethereal God Realm expert of the Dark Shadow Clan. It must be true!" Shi Yan said resolutely.

Unfortunately, hearing him, Bettina and Zha Duo hated him even more as they felt it was seemed so stupid. Especially Zha Duo, who talked with a mocking face, "You're just a warrior at the Original God Realm. What do you have to kill an Ethereal God Realm expert and extract his memory? Even if you want to lie, you need to find more backup!"

Bettina waved her hand as she couldn't hold it. "All right, all right. If you only have this to say, we're not interested. Yeah, you should go. Don't delay our important business." She nodded to Fu Wei, asking her to send him off.

Fu Wei sighed, standing up reluctantly. She lowered her voice, talking to Shi Yan. "'Let's go. I'm taking you out."

Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly, his face grimaced. He stood up quietly, turning around to throw Xia Xin Yan a glance. Xia Xin Yan nodded, but no one noticed her move. She signaled for him to wait for her outside the life star number nine.

Fu Wei led Shi Yan floating up, flying out of the lake. When they landed, she frowned, blaming him. "What's wrong with you today?"

Shi Yan darkened his face, talking coldly. "You don't believe me?"

"Naturally, I would believe you, but... you're so strange today. I think you got crazy because of Xia Xin Yan's glamor. I can't make myself believe in you." Fu Wei said seriously.

Shi Yan felt lost. He sighed inwardly, but he didn't want to insist on it anymore. "It's okay if you don't believe me. When it happens, I hope you can manage things well. Sigh."

"Could you tell me what's happened to you?" Fu Wei was bewildered, her face awkward. "Why did you seem to have become another man when you saw Xia Xin Yan? You were like a loon pervert who doesn't know a thing. You were obsessed. Is she that attractive to you that she could even disorder your mind?"

Fu Wei still thought that Xia Xin Yan was the main reason why Shi Yan behaved like a fool, and that he had made up such terrifying, fake news to attract her attention.

Shi Yan wanted to cry, but had no tears. He didn't have the mood to explain, so he just waved his hand. "I'm leaving now. You guys suit yourself. I hope you wouldn't regret in the future."

"I'm glad you came to see me," Fu Wei pondered for a while and then said, "How about you staying here and waiting for me for a while. After we've done negotiating with Xia Xin Yan, I'm going to talk to you later?"

"No need. I don't have free time." Shi Yan rejected with a dark dace. He felt irritated, leaving. He talked to Fei Lan's team waiting in the distance. "Let's go!"

Fei Lan and Leona nodded. They didn't look at Fu Wei, following him to fly out of the lake. They pierced through the atmosphere, returning to the dark outer space.

Underneath them were the dark clouds that covered the entire life star number nine, revealing nothing.

Shi Yan's team gathered on a dark blue asteroid and stopped to watch.

"Senior, has the Potion and Tool Pavilion fallen into chaos now?" Ka Tuo approached him. "The God Clan is about to invade, and their Great Elder has joined hands with aliens. Isn't it breaking news?"

"They didn't believe me. They thought I was making it up. Damn it!" Shi Yan couldn't help but curse.

Fei Lan's team was baffled.

Benny's handsome face was angry and ferocious. "Seems like they don't want to live anymore! The God Clan is famous for their intimidation in this universe. The star area they lay their eyes on can't avoid a catastrophe. They got the chance to prepare their defense, but they refuse it. I think the Agate Star Area will become the backyard garden of the God Clan soon."

He came from another star area, and knew how mighty the God Clan was. Seeing the strongest force of Agate Star Area being so aloof and numb, he was quite disappointed.

"What should we do now?" Fei Lan frowned, "The Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't believe us. Who else we can tell to spread this information? How about Blood Devil?"

"Too far... I can't contact him. It takes a lot of time to get here." Pondering for a while, Shi Yan said. "We're going to wait here for a while. I want to see someone. Perhaps, she could change the Potion and Tool Pavilion's attitude."

"Who? Fu Wei jiejie?" Zuo Shi couldn't help but ask.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan calmed down his anger and chuckled. "Not Fu Wei. You'll know when you see her."

"Oh? Do I know her?" Zuo Shi screamed with surprise.

Shi Yan smiled, but didn't explain more.

...

Hundreds of different shapes battleships entered a quiet corner of the Shadow Ghostly Prison, without releasing any beam of fierce energy.

Those battleships separated into two different parties as they moved in two formations, heading to the life star number nine of Potion and Tool Pavilion. At the point where two formations crossed each other, there were two battleships, one belonging to

the Ghost Mark Clan, and the other to the Dark Shadow Clan.

The Ghost Mark battleships were shark-shaped, around several thousand meters long. They looked more imposing than the flat, round battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan. This kind of a battleship didn't belong in the Agate Star Area, and they weren't fabricated by the Potion and Tool Pavilion.

At this moment, people from two clans gathered between the two battleships.

One of them was Du Lin.

There was a Dark Shadow old man with a face that had experienced hardship and difficulties. He had thin and long eyebrows that looked like two spears. He was around sixty or seventy years old, wearing a strange robe with gold-plated hems shrouding his entire body.

Also present was a Ghost Mark man with a cold and harsh countenance. His face was arrogant as he stood, clasping his hands behind his back.

The three of them were discussing something. At times, a murderous aura would arise from them. Apparently, they were plotting something bloody.

Suddenly, a Dark Shadow Clan soldier flew to them from a battleship, talking respectfully. "Master Cocker, the kid we were searching for disappeared. The troop we sent to find him was killed."

The leader of the Dark Shadow Clan called "Cocker" had a brutal light sparkling in his eyes, "No one alive?"

"Yes, they were all killed." The subordinate replied gingerly.

Cocker waved his hand. "I got it. You can leave."

The Dark Shadow Clan clansman retreated quietly.

"Do you need help?" Hammer, the current Chief of Ghost Mark

Clan in Agate Star Area, sounded surprised. "If someone dares to kill your fellows in Shadow Ghostly Prison, it's only the Fighting League. The Fighting League and the other have a good relationship. I heard that the commander of the Windstorm War Department is visiting the life star number nine. If you don't feel well, it's a good chance to vent out."

"We will solve our own business. You don't need to mind a thing." Cocker said while frowning. "The target life star has the Tenth Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, who cultivates Space power Upanishad. Before we attack them, we need to prepare something first."

Hammer and Du Lin nodded.

They knew the abilities of the warriors cultivating Space power Upanishad. To deal with this kind of warrior, they needed a complicated arrangement. Or else, their target could use his power to retreat with ease.

The warriors who cultivated space power were the hardest to catch in every known star area. If they didn't block all of his possible exits, they wouldn't be able to kill him.

"Leave it to the Dark Shadow Clan," Cocker looked at Hammer and Du Lin while explaining, "Our Dark Shadow Clan is good at chasing warriors with Space power Upanishad. We just need to disorder the space nodes around, which will prevent him from using them to teleport. We can stop him that way from running away in just a blink."

Hammer and Du Lin knew how strong the Dark Shadow Clan was in this particular field. They didn't have any other opinion and agreed with him.

"First, we need to stop the battleships, so that I can break the space nodes around here. We will mess up all the areas where he could make a quick escape. We will stop him from escaping the life star instantly. After we're done, you can move," said Cocker

arrogantly.

Hammer and Du Lin agreed with him.

Cocker called for someone, then lowered his voice to assign that man. The Dark Shadow Clan warrior listened to him and nodded continually. Shortly after, he left.

Not long afterward, brilliant chunks of light bloomed in the dark space. The void rippled and twisted like water waves. Hammer and Du Lin had a feeling that this whole area was about to collapse. They looked at the exploding light, feeling the fear for the Dark Shadow Clan rising high in their hearts.

This mysterious clan did have supernatural powers to deal with warriors with space power. At the same time, their internal power was also intimidating.

Chapter 1026: Frantic!

Sitting on the dark blue asteroid, Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes, his face pale.

He had always been silent in cultivating, sending his Soul Consciousness to sense the magical features of the sixteen space nodes around him. However, he had just sensed one of them become chaotic. It seemed some unknown force was breaking them unceasingly.

His strange reaction woke up Fei Lan and the others as they looked at him in confusion.

Shi Yan didn't explain. He closed his eyes and continued sensing the other space nodes of the life star number nine under Potion and Tool Pavilion.

After less than ten minutes, five space nodes were distorted by an appalling force. They couldn't function as teleporting ports anymore.

He paled while thoughts flashed through his head like electric beams.

In a flash, he jolted up with fear, talking anxiously. "They're sixteen space nodes around this area. Someone is breaking them continually. Evidently, a powerful force is going to attack that life star! As they can break the space nodes, they should have an intimidating force! This action aims at Zha Duo! They know Zha Duo's here!"

Ka Tuo was surprised, but then he felt happy on the other's misfortune. "They deserve that! The Potion and Tool Pavilion have bad luck this time!"

Fei Lan and the others also had an indifferent visage. They didn't care about the Potion and Tool Pavilion, especially that foul-mouthed Zha Duo. As the Potion and Tool Pavilion didn't believe

Shi Yan, they didn't have any good feelings for that force. They even wished a big loss for them.

"If they don't care about us, should we leave now? We shouldn't get involved in this mess," said Ka Tuo.

Shi Yan frowned with a stern look. He pondered and then said, "I'm going to deliver you guys through a space node that still functions."

Shortly, he gathered his energy, as space slits moved around him like electric beams. Gradually, those electric space beams twisted with each other, creating a mysterious space channel above their heads.

"Get in there... all of you!" Shi Yan hissed.

Fei Lan and the others didn't understand his actions. They all looked at him bewilderedly.

"After you get out of the passage, navigate a direction and move far away, as fast as possible. Don't rest!" Shi Yan's face was stern like never before. "Leave this area quickly. Stay on a mineral star or a life star. Do not return at any cost!"

The force that could break the space nodes and attack the Potion and Tool Pavilion's life star number nine should have formidable power.

He understood that the Potion and Tool Pavilion would encounter a danger they had never seen before. With one wrong step, their situation would change dramatically. Even Shi Yan wasn't sure if he could survive this furious battle.

However, he had to get back there. It was not because of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. It was because Xia Xin Yan was still down there!

"Senior, if you want to go, we'll go together!" shouted Ka Tuo.

"I have to go. There's someone I can't leave behind. I have to get

back there!" Shi Yan barked.

"Then, we will return together!" Fei Lan hissed. Her face showed that she wouldn't accept a no.

"You can't be of help there. I don't want you to die in vain. The opponent is extremely intimidating this time, stronger than you can ever imagine. If they dare to plot against the three Elders of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, of course, they're prepared. Our force can't do anything!" Shi Yan took a deep breath, talking. "You guys, don't worry too much. I've been struggling in the most dangerous area for almost all my life. If I go alone, I will have seventy percent chance of surviving. If you follow me, I will have to worry a lot. It's no different from a burden."

"Go together or stay together!" said Leona.

Shi Yan felt warm inside, but his face grimaced. He couldn't help but shout at them, touching his forehead. "I'm going to use my status as the heir of the Master of Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight for the first time to order you guys to leave immediately. I don't have much time. If you waste a second, my chance to survive will reduce further!"

The space nodes were still disappearing. When all the space nodes here were destroyed, this area would be completely locked. At that time, the Potion and Tool Pavilion wouldn't be able to connect with other places.

Many Sound Stones and secret treasures used to communicate would need the space nodes to transfer the message. Once all the space nodes of this area were destroyed, this area would be completely blockaded. Then, they would be confined and unable to send a message to get help.

He knew what it meant.

Although he had been together with Fei Lan, Leona, and Ka Tuo for many years, he hadn't used his status as the descendant of

Bloodthirsty to order them into doing anything. If he still had a chance, he wouldn't do that this time.

However, when he did that, it meant the situation had come to the most perilous moment.

"As told by Master, I don't dare to not follow!" Benny was the first one to talk. This dark teenager made a strange hand gesture to greet him, then leaped up into the space channel.

Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Leona reddened their faces as they were struggling in their minds. Eventually, they nodded, telling him to take care and then pulled Xuan Ming and Zuo Shi, leaping up to the passage. After that, they disappeared in a short while.

Waiting until all of them had left, Shi Yan changed his power Upanishad. The space channel he had made shrank into a light dot and vanished.

He didn't hurry to get into the Potion and Tool Pavilion's life star number nine. He took a deep breath, sending away three drops of his ruby blood together with a wisp of Soul Consciousness. The three drops gathered into a thread, moving into the endless sea of stars. It got into a space node near the Devil Blood Star. Within a second, it had traveled billions of miles away.

At this most dangerous moment, he suddenly felt powerless, as if he didn't have any bit of energy left in his body. Besides Blood Devil, he didn't know whom to count on.

He used to say that it was hard to contact Blood Devil, but that was the case when he didn't use Immortal Demon Blood. If he tried the Immortal Demon Blood to contact Blood Devil, he could send a wisp of his Soul Consciousness to him. However, since it was the first time Shi Yan tried this type of communication, he wasn't so sure when Blood Devil could receive his message.

Using this communication method, he could send a limited amount of information. He could only tell the other the Agate Star

Area would have a great change originating from the Shadow Ghostly Prison. He also sent his location, saying that his life was threatened.

He wasn't sure if Blood Devil would believe him and come to him or not. However, he must spread the news, because he knew that if he hadn't sent the information before the space nodes were all destroyed, he wouldn't have a single chance anymore.

A blood thread with his Soul Consciousness had gone through the space nodes and traveled billions of miles in just a blink of an eye.

Taking a deep breath, he didn't want to waste more time. He gathered his energy, blowing a punch of starlight on the black cotton cloud defense underneath.

Shortly after, the Potion and Tool Pavilion's guard, who had taken them in and out previously, emerged with his face grimaced. He shouted, "Why are you still here?"

Shi Yan knew it was of no use to explain to him as he wouldn't understand or believe him. He just smiled, talking, "I forgot my stuff down there. I just want to take it back. I won't trouble you. Please let me in for a while."

The guard wasn't calm at all. The good impression he had for Shi Yan was fading as he frowned, "How long do you need?"

"Short, I just need fifteen minutes," Shi Yan hurried.

He needed to enter this life star. He shouldn't waste time here, because the space nodes were still being destroyed. He didn't have much time left.

Zha Duo also had Space power Upanishad. However, unless he was sensing the change of space nodes outside the life star, he wouldn't get the situation. At this moment, Zha Duo was still discussing with Xia Xin Yan, so he wasn't free to sense around.

If he knew of the changes outside, he should have prepared already. However, as Shi Yan saw nothing changing in this life

star, he knew Zha Duo hadn't found anything.

"You have fifteen minutes." The guard told Shi Yan impatiently. He opened the barrier and let him in.

However, as soon as he pierced through the atmosphere of the life star number nine, he madly drilled forward as if he were crazy. Star energy, God power, and negative energy burst out at the same time. He let them all flow, not wanting to store even a bit. He moved even faster than lightning. Shortly after, he fell into the lake at the center of the life star while shouting. "I want to meet your Elders!"

As he was still screaming, he stormed to the center of the lake. His aura surged powerfully, which wasn't less than the exploding power of an Ethereal God Realm expert.

The guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion standing around the lake saw only a lightning strike struck down, trying to pierce the lake. They all shouted and rushed to stop him. Most of them were at the Original God Realm, with many precious treasures and weapons. Instantaneously, lightning crossed the light, weaving above the lake to seal it.

"Open the barrier and let me in!" Shi Yan thundered angrily.

"Wanton!"

"Arrogant!"

"You court death!"

The Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards cursed. They shouted the warning, soaring into the sky to stop him.

Shi Yan was impatient this time, so he didn't have the mood to entangle with them. His eyes reddened. A blood light appeared as the giant broadsword emerged in his hand.

The several-thousand-meter blood light column moved like a garnet rainbow, slashing down and sending a sharp, brutal aura

that could even open the sky.

Puff!

The light curtain dozens of guards at the Original God Realm were making was torn. Many of those guards spurted out blood as they were blown backward.

More Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards came. They all looked terrified as they looked at him and started to shout. "He's crazy! He will trouble the elders. Stop him! Stop him!"

In their eyes, Shi Yan with his red eyes was already crazy. They didn't notice what he was talking, and they just wanted to stabilize this chaotic situation.

With the flame of anger that rose his murderous aura to the sky, Shi Yan had his negative energy burst out like a raging flood. The red eyes on the sword opened, and a flow of death aura filled the entire life star number nine. In this rushing situation, it was the first time he urged all of his power. Now, he looked like the God of Slaughter of the Underworld. His sword tilted, slashing the second time. The thousands of meters long blood rainbow fell into the lake.

Boom!

The lake seethed violently as dozens of water column shot up into the sky. A terrifying energy hole appeared in the lake, sending billions of light dots backward.

He had made up his mind. If he couldn't get into the main hall under the lake, he would force the people in there to come out!

Chapter 1027: Come with me!

Boom!

Another several thousand meters long blood rainbow violently hacked onto the lake. The massive energy cage in the lake collapsed, sending water columns into the air while billions of light dots bloomed.

Many guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion were enraged. They cursed while dashing toward Shi Yan.

Another space node was destroyed as Shi Yan wore a savage countenance. He was so indignant that his flame of anger could shoot into the sky. He was outraged because the Potion and Tool Pavilion didn't know anything but was still so stubborn. He couldn't help but face the sky and roar. A flow of blood aura rocketed to the air like a massive blood dragon.

The garnet eyes on the sword in his hand opened continually, diffusing the evil aura onto the entire surface of the life star.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh

The red eyes in the sword could feel his murderous aura. They flew out of the sword, turning into the images of ferocious demons. They had fangs and scary countenances, as well as pairs of wings on their backs. Their empty eyes let out bloodthirsty gleams like ferocious flaming balls.

The blood flaming ghosts moved like butterflies gliding above the lake as they gathered like blood colored currents of a massive flood.

Dozens of Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors stormed towards Shi Yan when their soul altars were shaken all of a sudden. A strange pain stung their brain as the evil energy had invaded their Sea of Consciousness, causing an immense pain.

The blood currents extended like longswords, moving

continually. They weaved into a blood net, which was some kind of a barrier.

Around that large blood barrier, the negative emotion including fear, bloodlust, despair, brutality, and madness, which often hid deep in the bottom of people's hearts, were all arisen. Warriors of the Potion and Tool Pavilion couldn't control their souls, as if they were under a malicious spell

For the time being, all the warriors attacking Shi Yan halted in the air. Their empty eyes looked exactly the same with those gliding flaming ghosts.

It was the signal when the soul was invaded!

In the middle of the lake, the massive energy cage collapsed, stirring up water in the lake. The attacking energy rushed directly to the main hall.

The main hall was shaken rumblingly as though it was about to shatter. Bettina, Zha Duo, Fu Wei, and Xia Xin Yan were talking inside the hall when their visages changed dramatically. They recognized the pressure and couldn't help but look up.

Zha Duo wore a cold face, extending his hand and touching the void in the dome above their heads. A small, open space appeared like a bright mirror. They immediately saw Shi Yan holding a massive sword, looking like a demon.

At this moment, his murderous aura was shooting up into the sky. His eyes were both garnet like two drops of blood. The energy in his body was chillingly evil, as though he wanted to imprison every creature in this world into the endless space of Death.

"Holy sh*t! That kid's crazy!" Zha Duo couldn't help but curse. "He dares to make a move in our Potion and Tool Pavilion. He doesn't know how high the sky is! I'm going to kill him!"

Bettina also wore a cold face. Her anger towards Shi Yan had reached her bones as she said coldly. "Dare to swagger in our

Potion and Tool Pavilion? Even Blood Devil can't protect him this time."

She apparently agreed with Zha Duo's decision.

Fu Wei paled, looking at Shi Yan who was crazy at this moment. She didn't know what to do in this situation. Her bright eyes were filled with worries.

However, Xia Xin Yan, who had just chatted happily with Bettina and Zha Duo, had her bold eyebrows knitted tight. She coldly glared at the other two and quietly flew up. She pierced through the barrier above their heads, getting out of the lake.

A one thousand meters long blood light column slashed down. It had aimed at the lake, but changed the direction in midway. Shortly, it rumblingly hit an empty battleship anchored by the lake. The one-thousand-meters long battleship was like a loaf of tofu under the blood light. It was halved, with the cut surface as flat and smooth as a mirror.

Xia Xin Yan's beautiful eyes were confused as she hovered above the lake, calling him. "What's wrong?"

"Come with me!" Shi Yan with his murderous aura floated in the center of the blood net. He hurried to switch his powers Upanishads. The space slits appeared and gathered, creating a space tunnel above his head. He looked at Xia Xin Yan and said, "I don't have extra time to explain. We should move first!"

Xia Xin Yan was baffled. She hesitated for a second but didn't say anything, and just nodded. She was about to get into the space tunnel.

Many Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards hovering around were dumbstruck. They didn't know why their distinguished guest listened to that madman. She didn't even clarify the situation before she decided to leave with Shi Yan.

At that moment, Xia Xin Yan wholeheartedly trusted Shi Yan.

Shi Yan felt warm, as his surging, brutal mind gradually calmed down.

However, an incident happened shortly after!

When Xia Xin Yan was about to get into the space tunnel, the space tunnel created by Shi Yan's space power suddenly twisted and exploded. The sharp beams of space energy were shot out everywhere. Shi Yan's space tunnel was shattered in just a blink.

Zha Duo's face was icy cold. He appeared by the tunnel all of a sudden. His eyes were dark and harsh. "You think you can come and leave our Potion and Tool Pavilion's base that easily? A little warrior at Original God Realm using space power to create the tunnel in front of me... You don't know how high the sky is, do you?"

He used the same Space power to crush the tunnel Shi Yan's had created. Xia Xin Yan had to hover in the air.

Shi Yan had just calmed his mood, but now was enraged again. And this time, it was extreme. He burst out the negative energy in his entire body as if he were actually out of his mind. The sharp sword in his hand slashed the void, as countless blood shadows expanded, surrounding Zha Duo.

Shi Yan suddenly felt another space node being smashed down. At this moment, the space nodes around this life star number nine were completely dysfunctional!

This also meant the other had completed blockading the life star, and Zha Duo had smashed Shi Yan's last chance to escape. It combusted his raging flame. The blood sword swayed in his hand, sending negative energy to fill up Zha Duo's soul area like a real sea.

Zha Duo's cold face seemed confused. He frowned, as if he had to struggle in pain.

Swish!

A blood light drew in the sky with a marvelous trajectory and perfect curve. It seemed about to halve Zha Duo's God Body.

Bettina and Fu Wei emerged from the lake. When they looked up, they saw the idle Zha Duo. The blood light would chop him off in the next second, causing them to pale in fright.

They could never imagine Shi Yan had such power to take over Zha Duo's mind, make him discolor, and not have the ability to even parry.

"Don't!"

Xia Xin Yan was also frightened as she hurried to make some hand seals. Her energy fluctuated magically as if it could stop time. The blood light column that was about to cut Zha Duo was slowed down strangely, and everybody else was also affected. They were slowed down as their time was controlled.

Even Shi Yan wasn't an exception. He felt that the time moved so slow, while his surging energy reduced.

Only Xia Xin Yan wasn't affected. Her graceful body swayed and hurried to pull Zha Duo out of the danger zone.

Swish!

The blood light column resumed its real speed, striking down like lightning. However, Zha Duo had disappeared. The blood light fell on the lake and separated the water. The power of this slash was earth-shaking indeed.

"What happened?" Xia Xin Yan screamed. Her voice had something magical that woke up Shi Yan in his madness as if he had a bucket of ice water pouring on his head.

Warriors of the Potion and Tool Pavilion gathered, surrounding him in layers. Bettina and Fu Wei were still frightened. They hadn't recovered yet, standing by Zha Duo. Zha Duo was still dizzy, struggling in his mind.

Bettina had a bad grimace. She turned to glare at Fu Wei. "Is this the friend you say? You have to explain this to me!"

Fu Wei's blue eyes were full of confusion. She stood baffled, not knowing what to say.

"Kill him!" Bettina ordered, her voice cold.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion gathered. They were all enraged and wanted to slaughter him. At this moment, Xia Xin Yan suddenly shouted ear-splittingly. She let out a clear, gentle whistle.

Giant battleships marched from the dark clouds of the life star number nine and gathered like the dark clouds by Xia Xin Yan. She said with a cold face that reflected no other emotion. "Whoever dares to touch him will be my archenemy!"

Bettina and Fu Wei were shocked, and even the warriors of Windstorm didn't have a clue. They all wore a baffled face.

Zha Duo woke up as his mind wasn't occupied anymore. He gasped for his breath, shouting. "Kill that brat!"

Xia Xin Yan fixed her cold eyes on Zha Duo, talking slowly, "If you move, I'll kill you!"

Everybody was startled.

"You! Why do you need to protect him?" Bettina was shaken, but she seemed to get it. "You... you guys... You've known each other before?"

"Yeah. He's a friend from my homeland." Xia Xin Yan took a deep breath. Still wearing a cold complexion, she asked quietly, "Shi Yan, what has happened?"

The last space node was broken, and Shi Yan knew that his plan was no longer feasible. His eyes recovered their original color as he retrieved the blood sword, sighing. "Zha Duo, you try to sense the changes of the space nodes around this planet."

Zha Duo looked icy cold as he released his Soul Consciousness.

Immediately, he felt like he had just fallen into an ice chamber. He couldn't help but shiver.

"What's happened?" Bettina was astounded.

"All the space nodes around the life star number nine have been destroyed! We lost the connection to the world outside! I can't take you guys out of here," Zha Duo said with a trembling voice. "Someone wants to eradicate us."

After he said that, everybody fell into a terrible crisis. They looked at the sky and felt the invisible pressure, which was approaching like an imposing mountain.

"He destroyed the last space channel I built. We... can't leave either." Shi Yan shook his head while talking to Xia Xin Yan, his face dispirited.

Everybody finally understood why Shi Yan had acted crazily.

"Open all the defensive barriers! Prepare for a bloody battle!" Bettina pondered for a few seconds and then pitched her voice. Suddenly, she had a scepter in her hand, using it to poke the air and release hundreds of dim blue, dark green, and orange-red lightning strikes towards every corner of the star.

The dim, gray surface of the planet now had three light curtains in dim blue, dark green, and red-orange hues, which looked like three different seas. They layered together, beginning to protect the entire planet.

Chapter 1028: Renovator

Bettina held the scepter, looking at the sky with a cold and stern face. A cold light sparkled in her face.

"Potion and Tool Pavilion has had many internal battles. For the throne of Pavilion Master, we used to have some great wars. However, we have never had any exposing elder murder cases except for the first time!"

Bettina's face was cold, talking indignantly. "Zuo Lou is mad this time!"

Zha Duo and Fu Wei paled, clenching their fists. In their rage, they hated that they couldn't jump on Great Elder Zuo Lou to fight him and make him pay a bloody price.

"The space channel that the Dark Shadow Clan has been combing for several thousand years is about to clear. God Clan will come. Before its great army arrives, they will stir up and put Agate Star Area into complete chaos. This is the mission of your Great Elder in charge. He has to rush anyway. Once he gets the approval of the God Clan, he will have the power that he has never had before. It's normal if he has started to act ruthlessly."

Shi Yan frowned. His voice was calm as he slowly exposed the ugly truth.

Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei looked horrified. They looked at Shi Yan, but they didn't say a word.

After a while, Bettina shouted, "Are you telling the truth?"

Previously, she had a lousy prejudice towards Shi Yan. She didn't believe in what Shi Yan said. She thought that Shi Yan was trying to catch their attention, especially Xia Xin Yan's, to earn her favor.

However, after this commotion, Bettina had changed. She started to consider what Shi Yan had said.

Zha Duo also contemplated.

His most significant doubt was that Shi Yan could extract the memory of an Ethereal God Realm Dark Shadow Clan expert while having only Original God Realm. He thought that Shi Yan was lying.

However, he didn't think so at this moment...

Shi Yan came frantically and his slash had almost destroyed the protection of the lake. He had hurt dozens of guards at Original God Realm. At the same time, Shi Yan had a strange power that could blur his mind. If Xia Xin Yan hadn't stopped Shi Yan, he would have been killed.

And he was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm!

No one dared to scorn Shi Yan anymore!

At this moment, Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei though that Shi Yan's formidable powers were immeasurable. They didn't know his real power's limitation.

Although they didn't trust him at first because of his rocketing power, now they had to consider his words.

"I don't care if you trust him or not. I absolutely trust him." At this moment, Xia Xin Yan naturally stood by Shi Yan. It looked like her trust would never change even if the sun and the moon didn't rise anymore. Her attitude would never change. It was a solid trust that would never be shaken.

"Initially, I intended to go with him and check the space channel that Dark Shadow Clan has been clearing after I was done with you guys. Then, I would have spread that news all over Agate Star Area," Xia Xin Yan knitted her brows, "But this plan couldn't catch up with the situation. I didn't think that our danger would come that fast. Seems like we'll be surrounded for a while."

The danger was coming. She was still calm. She wasn't flustered. Her bearing was elegant and indifferent.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he inwardly complimented her performance. For one hundred years, she had fought alone in Agate Star Area. He didn't know how many tricky situations she had experienced to practice and accomplish her now naturally placid bearing. She was much stronger than she used to be.

"I'll find the evidence of what you've told us!" Bettina took a deep breath. She nodded and then faced the sky. "In the meantime, no one can leave life star number 9. I've opened all the barriers outside the star. As we can make the defense earlier, we won't have a fatal situation."

Fu Wei and Zha Duo were petrified.

Xia Xin Yan's face was calm and natural as she said, "I wonder if they know that we, the Windstorm War Department, are also here."

"Of course, they know," sighed Fu Wei, looking at the other woman strangely. "The Great Elder keeps the Satellite Eye. It's as easy as flipping his hand to get information about the situation here. I think... in his plan, he has considered some unexpected factors, including you guys."

"Then, did their plan include a First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert in my Windstorm War Department?" Xia Xin Yan gave a quiet smile.

Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei were filled with joy.

"Precursor Feng Yan!" called Xia Xin Yan.

From the battleship above her head descended a little girl around one meter tall. She hovered and steadied her body by Xia Xin Yan, giving a slight nod.

That little girl was small and cute. Although her body looked graceful, she was wearing a shabby gray robe accompanied with a pointy hat like a witch hat in legends. That little girl looked to be in the bright and sweet phase of her youth. However, her eyes

looked archaic and deep as if they were old cuts worn out by time.

Looking into her eyes, no one could imagine her at such a young age. Quite the contrary, they would think that she was a white-headed senile woman who had already put one foot into her grave.

Bettina glanced over her. She was shocked. She pried, "Are you really Feng Yan mei-mei?"

"Bettina, long time no see," the little girl called Feng Yan grinned, talking indifferently. "It has been several thousand years and we haven't met. You're still stagnant in Ethereal God Realm. No wonder why Zuo Lou can become Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion and you are just the Third Elder."

Bettina looked bitter. "I'm not like Zuo Lou. I've mastered forging tools. I've been cultivating strenuously as told by Potion and Tool Pavilion's guidelines. I'm different from him. You... why do you look like this?"

Feng Yan frowned, talking indifferently. "When I broke through Incipient God Realm, I got a problem. I begrudgingly reincarnated to cultivate again. I was lucky that I could figure out my mistakes and make up for it. Eventually, I reached First Sky of Incipient God Realm. It was worth my reincarnation though."

"You have used one thousand years to recover your realm and advance?" Bettina was surprised.

Fu Wei and Zha Duo admired and respected her efforts.

People who cultivated to be a warrior didn't have eternal lives. Many warriors when breaking through to Incipient God Realm at Peak of Ethereal God Realm faced a deadly danger.

However, among one hundred experts, there were only two brave and wise enough to sacrifice their cultivation base and use the soul to reincarnate. This required a great effort and willpower!

One thousand years wasn't a short period to anybody. She had given up everything, scattered her energy, and left only her soul to

renovate later. Which characteristics did this task require?

However, if she had decided not to renovate her power and retreat when she encountered difficulty, she would have remained as a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert, a famous expert. However, she would never have advanced to Incipient God Realm later. This rule was like steel.

However, an expert who decided to reincarnate needed a specific power. Or else, he wouldn't gather enough memory of the previous life. During several thousand years of rebuilding his power, he would be like a toddler who started to walk. He might encounter more dangers so that he would eventually completely vanish before he could gather his full memory. From another aspect, reincarnation and renovation of realm required more courage than retreating when facing difficulty!

Of course, the advantage was clear. Once he could restore his full memory and power, he could break through to Incipient God Realm smoothly.

Feng Yan belonged to this group of brave experts. She had erased her cultivation base of Peak of Ethereal God Realm and started all over again in this infant body. She had struggled before her memory was fully restored. Eventually, she walked back to the peak and broke the barrier to enter First Sky of Incipient God Realm.

Her experience makes people admire and respect her!

"If they have only one Incipient God Realm expert and not at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, I think I can counter them." Feng Yan said faintly, facing the sky. She looked like a calm well that didn't ripple.

"I'm more confident having you here." Bettina didn't conceal her joy. "We know their plan. As long as we arrange properly to resist, we may have a chance to survive this disaster."

Bettina's scepter suddenly flew up into the sky, turning into three fire columns of dim blue, dark green, and red-orange colors, and moving to three imposing mountain ranges of this star.

Shortly after, the three mountain ranges on the surface of the life star number 9 had their energy surge like a tsunami. The highest mountain of each mountain range exploded, shooting the dim blue, dark green, and red-orange light columns into the sky. They contributed more energy to the three light curtains covering the planet.

From outer space, people would find life star number 9 be covered in a sea of light with three different hues of blue, green, and red-orange. This kind of light protection was immense, bobbing with surging energy.

Shi Yan lifted his head to see the three seas of energy above his head, which were so transparent that he could still see the dark universe out there. He could even see the shooting stars crossing space. He understood that this light curtain didn't restrain warriors with Star power. His Soul Consciousness could get through the barrier though.

Thinking about Potion and Tool Pavilion's usual deeds, he immediately recognized that it was because he was staying inside the light curtain. It would be much more difficult for people outside to use the Soul Consciousness to sense the commotion on the planet. It would be very strenuous to break this protective halo.

A Sound Stone emerged from Bettina's palm. It looked like a big emerald. She talked to the stone.

Although the sound waves of the Sound Stones couldn't get through the space out there, it wasn't affected when talking to the warriors in the same life star. Shortly after, many battleships based in life star number 9 started their engines. At the same time, thousands of Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors emerged from the

underground, gathering like a rising tide.

"The enemy is going to invade us. Prepare for a deadly battle." Bettina became sane. Seeing the crowd of Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards coming, she lifted her head to look at the horizon and then sat down quietly by the lake.

Zha Duo and Fu Wei were astounded for a while. They said nothing but followed Bettina to sit down. They took out the fragranced pellets to restore their powers. They had to prepare for the coming battle.

Xia Xin Yan glanced at the horizon and then at Feng Yan. She said gently, "Precursor Feng Yan, please take care of Windstorm War Department. It... originally belonged to you."

Feng Yan nodded, talking lovingly, "You must be tired after talking to Potion and Tool Pavilion. Take a good rest then."

Xia Xin Yan smiled softly. She winked at Shi Yan and then silently flew towards a lush valley with a lot of blooming flowers outside the lake.

Shi Yan rubbed his nose and followed her.

Feng Yan slightly frowned looking at the two disappearing, but she said nothing.

Fu Wei closed her eyes to cultivate. Her eyelids twitched as her eyes opened slightly, watching the other two enter the valley with a complicated face.

Chapter 1029: Crystal Eater

Inside the flower-blooming valley, two small streams crossed each other while birds sang. Although this place didn't have a star or a moon, it was illuminated and it felt like spring.

"You knew there was a ninety percent chance that it died. Why did you return?" Xia Xin Yan and Shi Yan held hands, whispering to each other.

"Didn't ask for a reason. I don't care about your Windstorm War Department. I asked you to leave with me and you jumped in directly. Why did you do that?" Shi Yan chuckled, his eyes brilliant.

The two of them fell in a short silence before bursting out with laughter. They understood each other enough so they didn't need to express with words.

Shi Yan looked at the three-colored energy river above their heads. In a low voice, Shi Yan began to tell her what had happened to him for one hundred years since he left Grace Mainland. He told her everything including his little affair with Feng Rao and the knot he had with Zi Yao. He didn't want to miss a small detail, his face calm and natural.

Xia Xin Yan was smiling. She listened to him attentively without intervening. However, when he told her about his affections with Feng Rao and Zi Yao, she threw him a charming glare.

Afterward, it was her turn to tell him the difficulties she had experienced in the chaotic space basin that year. She had to struggle a lot before she reached Shadow Ghostly Prison. While she was striving, she got favor from the Hegemon of Fighting League. Slowly, she gained her position and became the leader of Windstorm War Department. Her realm had increased. She got her attainment and status.

In this flower-filled valley, they seemed to forget the coming disaster. They were holding hands, sitting shoulder by shoulder, and whispering to each other like an intimate couple. They felt so peaceful and calm ever since they had arrived at this place.

After an unknown time, battleships appeared one by one in the void above their heads. They got up with worries, walking out of the valley.

Devil Blood Star.

Blood Devil was soaking his naked body in the mysterious blood pond. His vigorous body was as red as burning iron. There was a gleam of death in his eyes as he was studying the truth of Death power Upanishad.

This blood pond was really big. In some other areas, some members of the Yang family with the Immortal Martial Spirit were also soaking in the pond. They were using the pure energy of the pond to clean their bodies and condense Immortal Demon Blood. They looked stern but they were actually thrilled.

Blood Devil suddenly frowned, changing his countenance. He lifted his head to look at the immense void as if he was sensing something.

After a while, he left the blood pond and flew away with a grimace. He got into the main palace of Blood Devil Star, summoning Wu Lan and the other subordinates. They started a secret meeting.

A long time afterward, the battleships departed from Devil Blood Star. They quietly headed towards Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Blood Devil left alone to go to Monster Dragon Star. No one knew what he was planning.

Dark Shadow Clan.

Above life star number 9 which was hidden behind the energy sea, hovered battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan and Dark Shadow Clan.

Crocker, Hammer, and Du Lin were floating between the battleships. Looking at the light curtain under their feet, they all frowned.

"It's the Tricolor Sea of Potion and Tool Pavilion!" Hammer took a deep breath and said, "The Tricolor Sea is the divine protection weapon of Potion and Tool Pavilion. It uses billions of divine crystals underground as the source of energy. It looks like the three seas are mingling with each other, but in fact, it's created by hundreds of layers of barriers. It's magical, indeed. Potion and Tool Pavilion has never sold it."

Du Lin sent a wisp of his Soul Consciousness like a lightning strike. When he touched the light curtain, he felt an explosion in his soul, his body shaking.

Hammer snorted, talking coldly. "I heard that the Tricolor Sea could prevent even Incipient God Realm's powers. Although you have extraordinary powers, you've just reached Ethereal God Realm. You shouldn't cause pain to yourself."

Rubbed his head, Du Lin nodded, his eyes strangely bright. "Yeah, it's powerful. I'm afraid I can't break it myself. Seems like I have to bother you, two precursors." He looked at Cocker and Hammer.

Apparently, Cocker and Hammer were at Incipient God Realm. Otherwise, he wouldn't have said so.

"The protection of the Tricolor Sea is really tough. As Cocker and I are at First Sky of Incipient God Realm, we can break it if we join hands. However, it would drain our energy massively." Hammer pondered for a while and then said, "Use the attacking formations

of the battleships to bombard it. If we use several hundred battleships shelling it at the same time, I think we can break it after one hour max. Then we can get into that star."

Hammer looked at Cocker of the Dark Shadow Clan.

In Agate Star Area, Potion and Tool Pavilion's application of barriers and formation was much more profound than that any other force. The Tricolor protection cage they didn't sell was famous in the entire star area.

From Zuo Lou, Hammer knew how powerful the Tricolor Sea was. He knew if they wanted to break this kind of defensive halo, they had to use a tough method, which was to bombard it continually and violently. They couldn't stop midway. Or else, the divine crystals underground would supplement more energy to the Tricolor Sea. It would become formidable once again.

"Our Dark Shadow Clan has also heard about the Tricolor Sea's protection ability." Cocker was indifferent. He grinned coldly, "This defensive light cage is supported by divine crystals. It's a headache to solve in your Agate Star Area. But to us... it's nothing." Cocker said arrogantly.

Hummer and Du Lin changed their countenances listening to him.

Cocker said nothing more. He called his troopers, his eyes icy cold.

A Dark Shadow warrior riding a butterfly war chariot hurried to approach him. He asked respectfully, "What do you need, Sir?"

"Release the Crystal Eater!" hissed Cocker.

The Dark Shadow warrior nodded. He left to the battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan to spread the order.

Shortly after, they saw many balls fly out from the battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan. Those balls were blue-brown, which made them look like stones. However, they had many black spikes,

rolling towards the Tricolor Sea covering life star number 9.

The hedgehog balls scattered when they fell on the surface of the energy sea. They changed quickly. The balls cracked, releasing the beasts, which looked like rats. Those beasts had mouths full of sharp teeth. Their bead-like eyes glistened as they were gnawing the light curtain.

Hammer and Du Lin gawked.

The Tricolor Sea set up by Potion and Tool Pavilion suddenly shrank as the alien Crystal Eaters were chewing it. The beasts swallowed the glowing energy lines. Their small eyes sparkled happily. They had eaten until their tummies were bloated. They looked so satisfied.

"As long as the restriction or barrier uses energy from divine crystals, the Crystal Eaters can swallow them all. This is our unique strength. The defensive halo of Potion and Tool Pavilion on your Agate Star Area can't stand those Crystal Eaters!" said Cocker arrogantly.

Hammer and Du Lin quietly watched the Tricolor Sea disappear little by little. Their faces became odd as they were both excited and fearful.

At this moment, they had finally realized how intimidating the Dark Shadow Clan was. Being the dominant force that didn't belong to any mundane forces, Potion and Tool Pavilion had to use so much manpower and effort to create the Tricolor Sea. However, it was simply destroyed by a horde of alien beasts.

The two of them felt frightened. They glanced at Cocker as they thought that this mysterious force of Shadow Ghostly Prison wasn't ordinary at all.

Standing by the crystal clear lake, they could see its bottom. Bettina was full of confidence as she said that the Tricolor Sea of

the Potion and Tool Pavilion wasn't something the enemy could solve easily.

However, shortly after, she was shaken as she looked at the sky, her face pale.

Feng Yan, Zha Duo, Fu Wei, Xia Xin Yan, Shi Yan, and many warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion looked at the sky. Then, they all made their ugliest grimaces.

"It... How can it be?!" Zha Duo screamed, "They dissolved the Tricolor Sea! Gosh! Does Zuo Lou know how to solve it? Impossible!"

"The Tricolor Sea isn't something Zuo Lou can solve easily. It's not what Zuo Lou can do!" Bettina had a trickle of blood on the corner of her mouth. "I've never seen this kind of strange beast before. This isn't a kind from Agate Star Area. At least... I have never seen it in my whole life."

"Dark Shadow Clan!" Xia Xin Yan said with a cold face, "It's the Dark Shadow Clan's trick. I heard my Hegemon said that they could break all kinds of formations and barriers that use divine crystals as the source of energy. In Shadow Ghostly Prison, Dark Shadow Clan has used the same trick to eradicate many forces."

Listening to her, Bettina, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei felt chills sent down their spines. They knitted their brows tightly.

"It's not a trick of Dark Shadow Clan." While people were panicking, Shi Yan sighed and said, "It's the trick of the God Clan. Those alien beasts are called Crystal Eaters. The God Clan breeds them. The Dark Shadow Clan got those beasts from the God Clan. I told you that Dark Shadow Clan is the watchdog of the God Clan. Now you can confirm that."

People were shocked. They looked at him in fright.

"I got the information from that Ethereal God Realm Dark Shadow man. I know the secret of those Crystal Eaters. This kind

of beast is originated in a mysterious area of this universe. The God Clan had captured them. They brought the beasts to God Star Area and bestowed them to the vassal clans. The Dark Shadow Clan was one of the vassal clans of God Clan." Lifting his head to watch the alien beasts chew off the energy barrier, Shi Yan felt helpless and he didn't have a solution. "We shouldn't depend on the defensive halo above our heads. Prepare to engage in a deadly battle. That light curtain can't endure for a long time."

"Is there any way to kill the Crystal Eaters?" asked Feng Yan all of a sudden.

"You have to get out there. The Crystal Eaters can swallow the energy generated from divine crystals, but they can't resist energy from warriors." Shi Yan shook his head. "But I think the warriors of the Dark Shadow Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan out there won't give us a chance to do that. If you get out alone, you will bear the bombarding from thousands of warriors. Perhaps they have Incipient God Realm experts. You... can't stand it."

People became so stern.

Their confidence was smashed since the Crystal Eaters had appeared. They couldn't gather their courage once again.

"Get underground!" Bettina watched the sky. She pondered for a while and then ordered with pain. "Get down. Get underground. Now!"

While she was talking, the lake nearby cracked, revealing a bottomless cave. Battleships of Potion and Tool Pavilion hovering in the sky lined up, entering the cave one by one. The guards of Potion and Tool Pavilion all grimaced as they knew that it was the last defense of Potion and Tool Pavilion when they had to get underground.

Chapter 1030: Protect the Territory

After he had entered the inside of the life star, Shi Yan got to know Potion and Tool Pavilion's style in using money.

The space inside life star number 9 had almost been exploited. Besides the main hall, Shi Yan felt like he had entered the world of blinking stars. This subterranean world had many wide stone roads, leading to every corner. It also had many grand palaces. The parking area here was large enough to keep several hundred battleships.

According to Bettina, this planet had been dug to thousands of meters below sea level. It had dozens of groups of palaces. Each group of palaces was protected with many complex structures of formations.

Those palaces were divided into different areas that were specialized for refining pellets, forging tools, building battleships, storage of ingredients, or storages of divine crystals. This entire planet looked like a mighty fortress. Each palace had hundreds to thousands of warriors at different realms. Most of them had King God Realm or Original God Realm.

The competence of Potion and Tool Pavilion could be seen from the inside of this planet.

Underground, life star number 9 had three divine crystal mines. The unexploited divine crystals in those mines were the energy foundation of the defensive Tricolor Sea.

A hexagonal mirror projected the three divine mines. Each mine was fulgent with piles of billions of top-quality divine crystals.

At this moment, through the mirror, they could see the divine crystal mines radiating beautiful divine light. Streams of energy like rivers flowed up into the sky, supplementing energy for the Tricolor Sea.

If the enemy didn't have Crystal Eaters of the Dark Shadow Clan, they would have had to consume a lot of energy and effort to just bypass Tricolor Sea's defense.

In the meantime, everybody was so solemn. No one could relax.

In the mirror, the three-colored energy sea in the sky was chewed off little by little. At this speed, within an hour, the defense they got up there would be destroyed.

It was lucky that they had evacuated everyone to the inside of the planet. They still had the last defense. Otherwise, when the enemy grumbly descended, the bloody battle would have taken place immediately.

"The outer layer of this life star was made of azure lava. Azure lava was an extremely tough stone material. It was the primary material of many battleships, which were fabricated with many types of rock. The azure lava layer of this planet was three hundred meters thick. Even the energy artilleries of our Potion and Tool Pavilion can't break it easily. It's our natural defense," Bettina said with a serious face. "There are three entrances to the subterranean world. Besides this lake, the other two entrances are heavily guarded. If they want to get down here, they have to attack the three entrances."

Shi Yan, Xia Xin Yan, and Feng Yan were listening to her. They didn't intervene.

"What we should do now is guard the three entrances," Bettina paused for a while and then looked at Xia Xin Yan and Feng Yan. "Can your Windstorm guard one of them?"

Xia Xin Yan smiled, nodded, and gave her a resolute answer, "Not a problem. You just arrange it."

Bettina sighed and said, "Three thousand miles West stands an extinct volcano. The mouth of that volcano is one of the entrances. I leave it to you guys."

"Okay," replied Xia Xin Yan.

"You take this fantasy mirror. We can use it to transfer images onto this planet. You can contact me directly. I'll ask Fu Wei to take you there." Bettina pondered for a while and then continued, "Feng Yan mei-mei, when we find Incipient God Realm experts, please help us."

Feng Yan nodded quietly.

"Fu Wei, you take them to that entrance," Bettina advised.

Fu Wei stood on a stone-paved road, which was one hundred meters high and more than one thousand meters wide. They didn't know how long or deep it stretched. The Windstorm battleships were floating on that road and they didn't need to squeeze in at all. It showed Potion and Tool Pavilion's efforts in building this place.

Under her instruction, Shi Yan, Feng Yan, and Xia Xin Yan got on a flying bird battleship of the Windstorm. They slowly moved away on the stone-paved road.

On the battleship, Fu Wei often glanced at Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan with her blue eyes, her complexion strange.

Shi Yan had left and then returned with the outrage that he had almost killed people. He wanted to take Xia Xin Yan away with him. And Xia Xin Yan, with her high position in Fighting League, didn't hesitate to go with him even before making everything clear. This kind of absolute trust had surprised Fu Wei a lot.

Until this moment, she knew Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan had a relationship which wasn't normal at all. Linking to Shi Yan's unusual commotion in the main hall, she could vaguely recognize something.

She finally realized that Shi Yan went out of control, not because of Xia Xin Yan's glamor. Their small joke didn't harm anyone. Then, their disheveled clothes after they got out of the secret room weren't caused by a battle.

Fu Wei was a bit embarrassed as she knew she misunderstood Shi Yan. However, when she realized the truth, she didn't want to apologize. Actually, she was pissed off.

She thought that Shi Yan had deceived her, which made her indignant. And her attitude towards Shi Yan became not as warm as it used to be.

How smart was Xia Xin Yan? At first glance, she knew the woman's mind. Xia Xin Yan then smiled gently, walking towards her. "How are you related to Shi Yan?"

At this moment, Shi Yan was sitting quietly on the back of the dock. He stooped and closed his eyes as if he was preparing himself before the great battle. He was adjusting his energy and mind. He wanted to engage in this battle with his best condition. He didn't eavesdrop the two ladies' conversation.

"No. Not related." Fu Wei was a little anxious when facing Xia Xin Yan. She spoke strangely, "We're just friends. He used to help me a lot. I appreciate his kindness. Besides that, nothing... else."

"Is that so?" Xia Xin Yan smiled weakly. "I can tell that you care about him a lot, right? He... I know his characteristics. He's flirty. He's not content with his lot. Has he... ever teased you?"

Fu Wei was mild-mannered. She easily got shy. Listening to Xia Xin Yan, she couldn't help but blush. She instinctively remembered the romantic moment when they drank "Passionate" together. She remembered Shi Yan touching her body. She became flustered and didn't know how to answer her.

Xia Xin Yan smiled again, glancing at Shi Yan sitting quietly in the back. He didn't look tense before a great battle. She smiled and said, "He's heartless, indeed. Don't think that he has a deep affection for you if he flirts with you. I understand him deeply. He often teases the beautiful women. Then, he will throw you away like his old shoes. He won't miss you a bit. My advice to you, you'd better stay away from him. It's not going to give you anything

good. You will have more sorrow."

Fu Wei was baffled.

She looked at Xia Xin Yan. Pondering for a while, she asked, "So has he ever flirted with you? Did he ditch you like his old shoes?"

Xia Xin Yan was numb. She had a feeling that she just tied herself up by her own rope. Contemplating for a while, she smiled charmingly, "It's different with us. I think you can see it too. He knows he might be killed this time. But still, he came back for me. Yeah. You're a smart girl, so you know what it means, I suppose."

Fu Wei had a bitter face. Of course, she wasn't a fool. She knew why Xia Xin Yan said these things to her. She was protecting her territory. She didn't allow any other woman to trespass.

"I have nothing ambiguous with him. You're overthinking it." She pulled herself together, sighed, and then talked weakly.

Xia Xin Yan smiled and nodded, "It's good then."

Turning around, her bright eyes looked at the young man sitting quietly and solemnly behind. She cursed him under her breath, glaring at him maliciously. That bastard can't stay idle. When you were in Raging Flame Star Area, I wasn't there, so you had the chance to mess around with two women. Now that I'm here, I will never let you do anything rash!

Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes as if he had felt her indignant look. Shi Yan was surprised. Looking at her for a while, he smiled brightly. He didn't look embarrassed at all. He made her smile and angry at the same time.

"Here we are!"

Shortly after, Fu Wei screamed quietly, looking up.

One hundred battleships of the Windstorm War Department were anchored by a spacious and luxurious palace, which was as big as dozens of football yards. It looked like a small-sized city.

Above their heads was a brilliant mountain range. Rings of five-colored light illuminated the mountain range. They linked together and there were around one hundred of them. Those light rings were crystal clear that they could see the overcast sky through them. They could even see the battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Shadow Clan above the clouds.

Those light curtains were apparently defensive barriers. They layered above their heads like waves with fierce energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan got up, frowning and walking to Fu Wei. "Potion and Tool Pavilion is the superpower force of the star area, but you don't have Incipient God Realm experts? Bettina and Zha Duo are at Ethereal God Realm. But if you got only the experts at their realm, how could you protect your welfare?"

"Why did you ask this?" Fu Wei seemed to not want to answer him.

Shi Yan was astounded. He looked at her deeply and then glanced at Xia Xin Yan who was smiling gently next to him. He suddenly got something.

Of course, he saw that Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei had talked to each other. He also knew Xia Xin Yan wasn't a plain woman. She was famous for her intelligence while they were still in Grace Mainland. After she had arrived in Agate Star Area, within a short period of one hundred years, she had stepped on the peak of glory in Fighting League.

Of course, he knew Xia Xin Yan had a deep love for him. He understood her well. He knew that she had said something to Fu Wei, which had changed Fu Wei's attitude towards him.

Glaring at Xia Xin Yan, he didn't say anything. To him, Fu Wei was just a passenger who he met on his train of life. He didn't have any deep affection towards her. Thus, he wouldn't get mad at Xia Xin Yan because of her. However, he was just curious. As Potion

and Tool Pavilion was praised as the most mysterious and powerful force, if they said that they didn't have Incipient God Realm experts to guard the shrine, he wouldn't believe it.

"Potion and Tool Pavilion has three Incipient God Realm experts." Xia Xin Yan could see his doubts, smiling and explaining. "But all three of them are cultivating in seclusion. Unless Potion and Tool Pavilion encounters big troubles, they won't come out to deal with it. They won't participate in the internal competition between Elders in the Pavilion. The Elders have to do things to get their power. However, the internal competition of Potion and Tool Pavilion is a big issue in the entire Agate Star Area. It could get more forces from everywhere involved in this mess. For example, the Great Elder, Zuo Lou, can affect the Ghost Mark Clan. And I heard that the Third Elder has a good relationship with the Wood Clan. Is that so?" She looked at Fu Wei.

Fu Wei nodded quietly. "If Third Elder could contact them, as soon as they know our situation, the Wood Clan will send their hotshots to help us. However, I'm afraid... that we can't count on the Wood Clan."

"The Tricolor Sea is torn off." Feng Yan was always quiet. She hissed all of a sudden, her face solemn.

Everybody faced the sky, their complexions changing.

Chapter 1031: A Bloody Battle

Through the volcano mouth above their heads, they saw many battleships tear the sky to plunge into the atmosphere.

Feng Yan, Fu Wei, and Xia Xin Yan looked through the slit in the sky, their countenances solemn.

Shi Yan suddenly remembered something, turning to face Fu Wei. "Do the protective barriers up there use divine crystals as the source of energy?"

Fu Wei was bewildered. She opened the fantasy mirror, which showed her dozens of warriors in Potion and Tool Pavilion's uniforms. They were sitting neatly while waves of colorful lights rippled from their bodies. Those halos had many colors streaming together into many round crystals platforms.

Fu Wei sighed and explained, "Seems like Third Elder has a proper arrangement this time. We don't use divine crystals as the source of energy." She pointed at dozens of Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors, most of them at Original God Realm or Ethereal God Realm. "They're using the energy in their bodies to guide the barriers. That's how we prevent the Crystal Eaters."

Shi Yan nodded, saying nothing more.

After fifteen minutes.

Dozens of Ghost Mark battleships slowly emerged above the extinct volcano above their heads. The leader, surprisingly, was Du Lin.

Du Lin frowned, watching the mouth of the extinct volcano. He said something to a Dark Shadow warrior.

Then, they released around ten Crystal Eaters. They crawled on the five-colored barriers like spiders. They intended to chew off the energy of those barriers.

Apparently, it didn't turn out as they had expected.

The Crystal Eaters cried loudly while creeping on the barriers. They had tried, but they couldn't eat off any part of the energy of those barriers.

The Dark Shadow warrior shook his head reluctantly, indicating that the Crystal Eaters couldn't do anything this time.

Du Lin frowned, thinking. He then ordered something.

Right after that, their battleships started to fire scorching lightning dragons, bombarding the barriers. Their explosive energy impacted the light curtains.

"Ptui!"

Through the mirror, Fu Wei saw that the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion shook hard, their faces pale.

They were using energy in their bodies to support the protective light. Du Lin's battleships used divine crystals to generate dozens of lightning strikes that struck the barriers. This formidable impact had almost burst off the volcano, sending electric sparks everywhere.

Fu Wei looked at Du Lin appear above her head. She sighed, her face grim.

"This Du Lin is the hotshot of the Ghost Mark Clan's current generation. Great Elder Zuo Lou favors him a lot. Indeed, he's not an ordinary person." Feng Yan gazed at Du Lin, talking darkly.

Xia Xin Yan smiled, glancing at Shi Yan next to her, her face nonchalant. "Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. A whole realm higher than yours. Later when they barge in, you shouldn't storm over passionately."

Shi Yan was surprised, rubbing his nose but not retorting.

"An Incipient God Realm expert is coming!" Feng Yan was startled, knitting her brows. She sensed quietly for a while,

talking. "Not only one. Two! They're heading to two different entrances."

"They seem to understand the defensive structure of life star number 9 thoroughly, don't they?" Shi Yan looked at Fu Wei.

Fu Wei beamed a forced smile. "Great Elder knows all the life stars of Potion and Tool Pavilion like the back of his hand. If this is planned by him, it's not a surprise that they know the entrances."

"Precursor Feng Yan, Shi Yan, let's talk in private." As Xia Xin Yan heard two Incipient God Realm experts were coming, she became stern, talking immediately.

Fu Wei was surprised. She proactively walked to another battleship of the Windstorm War Department. She expressed that she didn't want to eavesdrop.

"Precursor Feng Yan, if Potion and Tool Pavilion can't resist, you will evacuate us," Xia Xin Yan took a deep breath, talking determinedly, "They must be aiming only at Potion and Tool Pavilion. Although our Windstorm War Department has a good relationship with them, we aren't going to sell our lives to them. I think the enemy doesn't know that you're here. The moment we can't resist anymore, we should find a chance to get away. Don't get too involved and end up dying here with Potion and Tool Pavilion's people."

Feng Yan chuckled, nodded, and then said, "Don't worry, I've spent one thousand years to reach Incipient God Realm. I don't think I will get myself deep in this mess."

"How about you?" Xia Xin Yan teased, "Would you risk your life fighting with the others for Fu Wei?"

Shi Yan was bewildered. "I initially wanted to take you away. I'm not interested in the internal war of Potion and Tool Pavilion."

Pausing for a while, he added, "Anyway, I like to watch bloody battles. I'm not hurried to leave. To me, my realm would have a

better chance to advance in the most brutal areas. I will check the situation first."

He had vaguely disclosed the secret of his Devouring power Upanishad to Xia Xin Yan. He didn't say it too clearly, but Xia Xin Yan knew more or less. Listening to him, she said, "Then you should behave. Don't kill yourself. I will notify you. With precursor Feng Yan and our Windstorm, we have a big chance to break the blockade and get away from this battle."

She was confident enough.

Shi Yan smiled, "Don't worry. I actually love my life."

"Even if you don't want to leave, I will drag you away. Well, since you're weaker than me, tell me if you feel shame getting dragged away like that?" Xia Xin Yan grinned.

"Oh, then I can save my energy," Shi Yan laughed.

While the strong enemy was about to attack them, Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan were both placid. They didn't fluster as they still had the mood to tease each other.

Feng Yan observed them quietly and didn't say anything. However, she often checked Shi Yan, her eyes showing a gleam of disdain.

She knew Xia Xin Yan's real identity. She knew about the blood bond between Xia Xin Yan's previous life and the Hegemon of Fighting Union. Through her time in Fighting League, Xia Xin Yan had won battles all across Shadow Ghostly Prison. She had proven her wise and prescient talents. Also, her terrific advancement progress had gained her the approval from the senior management level of the Fighting League.

Many young, talented, and handsome men in Fighting League had competed for Xia Xin Yan's heart. She had so many admirers and the number of her perfect matches weren't small.

However, Feng Yan had never seen Xia Xin Yan give her good

face to any young man. Besides cultivating and fighting, she had no signal of living together with any male peer. She kept herself pure. Many people rumored maliciously that she didn't like men and that she had problems with her sexual orientation.

But today, Feng Yan found Xia Xin Yan putting down her intimidation after meeting Shi Yan. Now she looked like a little girl falling in love. This kind of affection exposed from the heart had surprised Feng Yan a lot.

What did a man at only Original God Realm have to make the daughter of God of the Fighting League behave strangely like that?

Feng Yan looked at Shi Yan discreetly. She was confused and she couldn't get over it.

Boom!

An earth-shaking explosion echoed. The Ghost Mark Clan's battleships above their heads gushed out fiery lights, striking continually.

Through the fantasy mirror Fu Wei had opened, Shi Yan could see dozens of Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors unable to endure for longer. Two Original God Realm experts among that group had already vomited blood. Their bodies cracked, bleeding badly.

Their eyes were empty as their lives were taken away. Apparently, they were struck to death.

The area projected in the fantasy mirror seemed not far from him. Seconds later, two flows of Essence Qi from the death came to him, entering his acupuncture points.

He was baffled, but a discreet joy replaced that surprise shortly.

"You guys can't resist any longer," Xia Xin Yan waved at Fu Wei, talking to her when she approached. "I think you should lift up the barriers. Or else, your soldiers will die in vain. They use divine crystals as the energy to attack you while you use the warriors' flesh bodies to resist. You guys will lose, apparently. Compared to

that, it's much better to battle once. Perhaps you can save more lives."

Xia Xin Yan had been used to planning and making strategies for years. She developed keen eyes and her plan didn't have a flaw. She had soon seen the consequence.

Fu Wei sighed. She knew that they wouldn't get anything from such a sacrifice. She nodded, took out a Sound Stone, and sent out her new order.

Inside the fantasy mirrors, all the sitting warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion stood up quietly. They dodged through a door with pale faces.

Shi Yan looked at the sky. He saw doors appeared in the tunnel through the mouth of the volcano. Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion he had seen in the mirror walked out of those doors. There were several hundred of them. People who came last guarded the doors before they left. They were all alert, looking at the mouth of the volcano with stern countenances.

Layers of barriers in the tunnel slowly disappeared. The obstacles shielded the extinct volcano was clear.

"Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!"

The Sound Stone in Fu Wei's hand resounded hurriedly. Fu Wei held it close to her ear. She paled, talking. "Precursor Feng Yan, please... Please come to help the other two entrances. Uncle Duo... can't take it any longer. The Incipient God Realm experts also joined in attacking us."

Feng Yan frowned. She didn't agree immediately but looked at Xia Xin Yan.

Xia Xin Yan pondered and then nodded. She muttered, "If you can't deal with it, please return. I'm here. This place shouldn't be in much danger."

Feng Yan nodded, talking to Fu Wei. "Lead me!"

Fu Wei called a Potion and Tool Pavilion guard from the stone door in the tunnel. He plunged down, landing by her. She advised him in a rush. "Take this precursor to the entrance where Elder Zha Duo guards. Quick!"

The man didn't say anything, flying towards the open stone-paved at max speed.

Feng Yan floated slowly like a willow catkin. She followed him very quickly. She caught up with that warrior comfortably as if she could have traveled billions of miles in just a blink.

"Send one group in!"

Du Lin hovered above the volcano. His harsh voice wasn't blocked anymore. Fu Wei, Xia Xin Yan, and Shi Yan could hear him clearly.

Per his order, a group of one hundred Ghost Mark clansmen descended. All of them were at Original God Realm. They violently plunged into the mouth of the extinct volcano, their momentum like a rainbow. With different powers Upanishads, the light of energy from secret treasures poured down like waves as if they wanted to blow off the tunnel.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion had waited for them for a long time. They jumped off from the caves in the tunnel, storming towards them and releasing their powers Upanishads. In the canal that wasn't large, the bloodiest battle was about to take place.

Chapter 1032: That Blood Shield Again...

The battle spread like a red fire with the most brutal methods. Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Ghost Mark Clan became meatballs under Shi Yan and Fu Wei's team after they were killed.

Lighting strikes, flames, gusts of wind, sleets, and flowing water weaved with each other in this narrow space above their heads. This kind of specific beauty of the battle had frightened people.

Shi Yan quietly looked at the sky, his face reddening unhealthily. Pores all over his body opened while he shuddered from time to time.

Within that short moment, more than twenty warriors were killed. Their Essence Qi gushed like water that poured forcefully into his acupuncture points.

At this moment, his acupuncture points were swelling. This was a peculiar magical feeling he had when his energy brimmed.

The battle against Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Ghost Mark Clan was like a bloody feast to Shi Yan. It appeared like a beautiful picture in his Sea of Consciousness.

All of a sudden, his soul altar started to move as his Death power Upanishad was expanding uncontrollably.

His eyes suddenly brightened like diamonds!

He seemed to be able to see the life magnetic fields of those Ghost Mark warriors and Potion and Tool Pavilion's guards. He could see it clearly as if he could see through their skulls and soul altars to take in their life foundation.

While fighting, the warriors would have their vitality surge the most. In Shi Yan's eyes, their life magnetic fields were like fantastic fireworks that were constantly changing marvelously. However, when they died, their life magnetic fields ceased like rapidly withering flowers. Shi Yan could see the subtle signs when

their life signals disappeared.

He was struck. In his eyes, there was no human body. There was only a life magnetic field that was ever-changing.

Those life magnetic fields changed from vigorous life to death in just a blink of an eye.

He felt like he was watching blooming flowers die, which was beautiful and yet strange.

He seemed to be in a magical condition where his soul had escaped his body. His mind changed continually as he lifted his head and watched the sky to see the life magnetic fields change from a healthy condition to no longer existing. That glimpse of beauty flashed, giving him some touching emotions...

He sank into it. His soul sublimated while his soul altar vibrated magically. His Death and Life power stirred up, reflecting those beautiful moments of life and death in his heart. He comprehended quietly.

Not long after that, his soul altar started to revolve fast. His Death and Life power Upanishad seemed to sublimate. A kind of cognition related to Death and Life multiplied, filling his heart's chambers and giving him a deeper understanding of Death and Life.

His Sea of Consciousness began to seethe and expand. The Essence Qi Ancient Tree in his body grew. Its crystal branches extended upward. The vortex in his lower abdomen slowly moved, creating a fierce suction force.

It felt like a bucket of water was poured on his head. He shook, waking up from the miraculous intent domain.

He was so baffled. He looked up in the sky and couldn't help but shiver.

Ethereal God Realm!

At this strangely perilous moment, he had used Death and Life to break through to Ethereal God Realm, entering a whole new realm!

Boom!

The body of a Potion and Tool Pavilion's guard fell under his feet, which looked terribly bloody. His life was taken, his eyes begrudgingly desperate. His life magnetic field vanished little by little and became nothing.

"Retreat!"

At this moment, Du Lin gave a low shout from the volcano's mouth. Warriors of the Dark Shadow Clan who were soaked in blood flew up to the mountain's mouth with ferocious faces.

Du Lin took a deep breath. A lightning strike appeared in his hand, which started to release thunderbolts. That spear moved like a rainbow, grumblingly descending together with the thunderclaps. The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion who still stayed in the channel got hit. Their auras vanished instantaneously.

Around ten more warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion had died tragically under the Thunder God Spear by Du Lin.

Du Lin looked cold, his face faint and arrogant. The Thunder God Spear weaved divine lightning that was striking the sky. Another pressing attack was made.

Fu Wei paled. She hurried to mobilize her Mysterious Heavenly Glacier. However, she was one beat slower...

A magical energy wave rose from Xia Xin Yan like a water curtain. Her Time power Upanishad was urged. The breakneck darting spear slowed down. Time moved slowly. Everybody's attacks were held several times slower.

Xia Xin Yan frowned, still using her Time power Upanishad to resist the Thunder God Spear by Du Lin.

She was a little pale as if it was strenuous for her to parry Du Lin, an expert at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm with his Original Incipient Grade divine weapon. It was over her endurance.

Du Lin continued to pour more energy into his Thunder God Spear. However, his spear couldn't move faster. It was sluggish like a snail to the point that it could crack up people's nerves.

Although it was slow, the Thunder God Spear was still inching forward. As Xia Xin Yan was using her Time power, her energy was consumed rapidly. She looked paler, which hurt Shi Yan.

Frowning, Shi Yan slowly inhaled. He was so surprised to find that simply move had become so strenuous at this moment. It seemed like his God Body was bound by Time and he couldn't move freely.

Sluggishly looking at Xia Xin Yan who was also staring at him, Shi Yan hallucinated that his cognition was also affected. His reflexes had become numerous times slower than in the past. Space power Upanishad and Time power Upanishad were indeed marvelously extraordinary powers of this world.

Gritting his teeth, Shi Yan shouted. His voices shot away with space power, forcefully tearing the confinement of Time.

A blood column appeared right in front of Thunder God Spear. It was small at first. Gradually, the blood light expanded, turning into a Blood Shield with a strangely evil blood mark. A terrifying aura covered the entire channel.

Swoosh!

Xia Xin Yan bent her waist. She sat down all of a sudden, her eyes tired.

Boom!

The Thunder God Spear landed, but it couldn't thrust deep into the channel. It couldn't hurt any warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm War Department.

The Blood Shield stopped the spear. It acted as the toughest barrier shielding that sharp attack.

History was repeating itself!

The tip of Thunder God Spear drilled fiercely, but the Blood Shield stood still. The Blood Mark glowed, sparkling in the malicious light. It collected the death aura of the surrounding warriors.

Blood light expanded like raging flames from the shield. With its sinister aura, it flooded every corner.

Du Lin put on a cold face. He perplexedly looked down with fear in his eyes, which was barely recognizable. He pondered for a while and then took a deep breath. While his thoughts flickered, he wanted to retrieve the spear and carry out his other plan.

"Break!"

Shi Yan roared, his terrifying voice shaking and tearing the sky.

The mark on the giant blood shield sent out earth-shaking energy waves, which didn't resonate. However, the energy it stored was enough to break the entire world.

The Thunder God Spear that Du Lin was controlling couldn't get rid of the constraint. With exploding blood sparks, the spear cried loudly, springing constantly. It seemed to get hit terribly. The Thunder God Spear sounded like it was cracking, which was clear and loud like a human skeleton that forcefully broke.

Du Lin reddened unhealthily. He felt a bit of sweetness as he had almost vomited blood.

He was so frightened. He gathered the energy in his entire body, sending it to the Sea of Consciousness. He sent the Soul Consciousness to guide his energy the second time.

The Thunder God Spear trembled. Eventually, it turned into a lightning strike, returning to Du Lin's palm from the Blood Shield.

Du Lin sighed discreetly. He looked down through the volcano's mouth. He didn't dare to act rashly. He had a grimace as he was trying to confirm something...

Inside the extinct volcano on the spacious ground, Fu Wei was perplexed, looking at the gigantic Blood Shield in the sky. After a while, her neck craned as she moved, looking at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's eyes were red like an enraged brutal dragon. His murderous aura was so thick that he wanted to tear the sky. That murderous, malicious aura matched with that of the blood shield. When he looked at the shield, his breathing and heartbeat seemed to match that blood shield unconsciously.

Fu Wei suddenly understood.

She looked at Shi Yan, her face complex. She couldn't help but let out an inaudible sigh.

Last time, it was also this blood shield that came to help her resist Du Lin's Thunder God Spear. However, Shi Yan had hidden his deed. He didn't burst out angrily because of her.

Today, the Blood Shield appeared the second time. It wasn't because of her but the woman standing next to her. This time, he didn't hide and stood upright. He was so angry that his hair even rose. He had even harmed Du Lin's Thunder God Spear.

Fu Wei felt so bitter.

From two times he used the Blood Shield, she was sensitive enough to see that her position in Shi Yan's heart was much smaller than the woman next to her...

For Xia Xin Yan, Shi Yan didn't bother to hide his identity. He wasn't afraid to expose his biggest secret. He had even resisted the force he couldn't compare to. He had endured the backlash to make Du Lin pay a big price.

Because Du Lin had hurt the woman standing next to her...

Although Xia Xin Yan was pale, she was in high spirits. She was baffled as she looked at the Blood Shield above her head and Shi Yan with his ferocious face standing next to her. She smiled gently.

It was a satisfaction that came from the bottom of her soul, making her relax and refreshed. She thought it was enough to have a man who got mad and took risks for her.

Shi Yan panted, his eyes garnet. He looked up to see the battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan with a clear gleam of wildness in his eyes. He caressed the Blood Vein Ring. A blood-red broadsword appeared. He waved his hand and the giant Blood Shield fell in front of him.

Holding the shield in one hand while the other hand grabbed the blood sword, Shi Yan had an extremely earth-shaking aura as if he could kill anybody in this world. He looked like a God of Slaughter hovering in the sea of blood.

Chapter 1033: I Can Deal With Him!

Du Lin's hand tightened around the Thunder God Spear, his green veins bulging. He had a strange white light flash in his eyes as he looked extremely stern.

The Thunder God Spear whistled oddly as if someone was whining and wailing. Electric light dots sparked from the tip of the spear. Looking at it, people didn't know whether that divine weapon was excited or worried.

Stooping, Du Lin's eyes pierced through the volcano mouth, gazing at the young man who immersed in the extreme wildness.

He had finally identified the master of the Blood Shield.

It was totally different from what he had imagined. After the first time he was defeated and had run away, he had thought a lot to confirm the information. However, he assumed that the master of that giant Blood Shield should have Incipient God Realm cultivation base or his cultivation base at Peak of Ethereal God Realm, at least.

However, it was evident that the young man down there had just crossed the threshold of Incipient God Realm. He hadn't even solved the challenge of having the Ethereal Extent yet.

However, that man had parried his thunder attack twice.

And he was just at Third Sky of Original God Realm the first time he defeated him.

Du Lin suddenly felt dispirited, a feeling that he shouldn't have at this moment.

He was the new hope of the Krocs this generation. He was the captain of the Mad Shark Fleet. He was still young, but he had reached Peak of Ethereal God Realm. With the elite force of the Ghost Mark Clan and the Thunder God Spear, Agate Star Area was vast, but it didn't have many people who could be his rivals in his

eyes.

Today, watching the young man down there, Du Lin put on a complicated face. He suddenly knew that his achievement wasn't at the top of this universe when he had encountered a man who had suppressed him twice with a lower realm. The first time, that man had even made him helter-skelter run away. And Du Lin now had an unrecognizable evil barrier in his soul.

He suddenly sent power to the hand that was holding the Thunder God Spear. Dazzling lightning strikes projected from his fingers curled around the spear. The spear also had some harsh explosions.

Waiting by Du Lin were thousands of Ghost Mark warriors, standing by for his order with fierce countenances. They were accumulating energy, ready to strike.

"You've broken through to the new realm?" Inside the extinct volcano, Xia Xin Yan's eyes sparkled as she was happy. She couldn't help but scream.

Xia Xin Yan's gentle scream had awakened Fu Wei, the one who was still confused. She looked at Shi Yan and was shaken. Her charming face revealed her sudden and disbelieving joy.

Fu Wei knew before this battle, Shi Yan had had only Third Sky of Original God Realm. However, after just one hour, right in the battle site of a fierce fight, he had advanced. He had broken through in such a dangerous situation. What kind of talents and foundation did he have?

Light in Fu Wei's blue eyes rippled strangely. She couldn't control the vibe in her mind as she was discreetly excited.

Yeah, I've just advanced to the new realm," replied Shi Yan, his garnet eyes showing his eternal fighting will. He didn't look at the two women. His bloody gaze was fixed on Du Lin. "Are you all right?"

Xia Xin Yan smiled, shaking her head. "I'm fine. Although Du Lin has tried to use his sharp divine weapon, he couldn't actually hurt me. Don't worry, if we have to fight to the death, I think I'm not weaker than him." Xia Xin Yan looked arrogant. She had been fighting for one hundred years in Shadow Ghostly Prison. She got used to fighting decisive battles. She had no fear of any kind of challenge. This situation couldn't give her much of a threat.

"Du Lin... I can deal with him," Shi Yan suddenly whispered.

Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei stiffened their faces.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Windstorm War Department looked shocked. They had gleams of unrecognizable joy. Many people were confused. They had doubts.

"No kidding?" Xia Xin Yan was baffled. She reacted shortly, frowning and whispering, "Du Lin is at Peak of Ethereal God Realm. You... you've just broken through to Ethereal God Realm. Was it strenuous for you to parry his previous attack?"

Fu Wei shook her head, her face odd.

He had just reached Ethereal God Realm and he hadn't formed the Ethereal Extent yet. Now, he dared to talk arrogantly. Even though Fu Wei highly evaluated him, she didn't really believe him.

"Kidding?" Shi Yan said, his voice calm and husky. "I won't kid in any battle."

Shortly after he had finished, a blood light column soared up. The red light was like viscous blood with a thick, gross smell and Death's energy fluctuation. It shot up right into the sky.

Boom!

A flow of earth-shaking energy erupted from Shi Yan's God Body. The tide of energy twirled like a tornado destroying the world. Nearby Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors were rolling up with that tornado.

At the mouth of the extinct volcano, Du Lin held the Thunder God Spear in his hand, his eyes focused and his mouth cold and harsh. The Thunder God Spear in his hand turned into an electric dragon, which looked like it was formed by billions of lightning strikes. It was ready to resist that blood light column.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The canal that led to inside the extinct mountain had to bear a formidable attack as if someone wanted to eliminate it. The green stone wall sounded like exploding popcorn. Flames sparked as if they were the results of the energy impact.

The blood-red light shot up into the sky. At the mountain's mouth, it turned into billions of blood silky threads, tying the electric dragon. Lightning strikes and red light beams weaved in the sky. The narrow space of the mountain's mouth seemed to turn into a dazzlingly brilliant sea of light. The power of the energy attack had almost exploded the volcano.

Shi Yan suddenly rose his hand with the shield. The blood mark on the shield bloomed like a flower, which then stopped all the energy sparks from falling.

The sword in his other hand had garnet eyes opened. A brutal, sinister aura filled the whole place. Negative emotions included fear, desperation, bloodthirstiness, and extreme evil expanded like a seething sea, giving the blood threads above his heads more evil power.

Shi Yan was standing on the ground inside the volcano while Du Lin was hovering above the mountain's mouth. The volcano canal had billions of electric beams and sparks of flames. The sprinkle of energy light dots and flames was stopped by the massive Blood Shield. None of the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion or Windstorm was harmed.

However, the energy sparks sent up into the sky had attacked many Ghost Mark warriors. They instinctively dodged them.

In the dazzling energy attack, they couldn't see Shi Yan and Du Lin anymore as the light dots had blinded them. Their eyes now reflected a whole world of light that made them unable to recognize the real world.

Slowly, the energy fluctuation calmed down. The light dots inside the stone canal all disappeared. The real world emerged again.

Shi Yan breathed heavily, his eyes garnet. The clothes on his body were shattered, revealing his lean muscles like rocks. His muscle's robust energy could be compared to the intensity of the great warriors of the Monster Clan or Demon Clan. This kind of torrential, flooding energy in his flesh had shaken people's souls.

Many female warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm watched him with big admiration and heart eyes. They didn't even blink as their eyes lingered on the hard contours of his body. These kinds of perfect lines and explosive energy could stir up hidden desire from the bottom of those girls' hearts. Such beautiful outlines made them sink in affection.

Electric flashes crept over the sky. Du Lin gathered thunderbolts in both of his hands, his face dark and cold. However, he couldn't hold it, shaking lightly.

Warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan looked fearful as they watched him disbelievingly.

In this tough energy encounter, their leader hadn't... gained the upper hand!

This was beyond their common knowledge.

A Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert couldn't suppress a warrior who had just entered Ethereal God Realm in energy fighting. What was going on?

The rock canal exploded, creating dense cracks. Flames sparked, drawing lines in the rock wall. Two warriors, one in the sky and

one on the ground were watching each other. They held a deadly silence.

After a while, Du Lin took a deep breath, his face strangely stern. Suddenly, he shouted, "Who are you?"

"Nobody," Shi Yan grinned, his face bloodthirsty. The blood sword in his hand turned into a blood column, drilling into the sky. The moment the blood sword emerged from the mountain, people saw red eyes on the sword blinking and disappearing.

In the next moment, images of Ancient Demogorgons flew out of the blood broadsword. They started to assault and massacre the Ghost Mark warriors.

Those Demogorgons represented the negative emotions that included savagery, despair, resentment, fear, and bloodthirstiness. They came to this world like evil spirits. When they cried and began to hunt the Ghost Mark warriors, those warriors had lost their minds as if they had fallen into a fantasy world of the Demogorgons. The negative desires hiding deep in their hearts were driven, sinking them into an extremely negative sea. While resisting the Demogorgons, their wills collapsed gradually.

The bloody shadows turned to ruthless and evil Ancient Demogorgons. The negative emotions of the big races in this universe congregated as if an extremely evil creature was about to be born.

They didn't have a tangible body. However, their thoughts contained the evil energy. The Demogorgon jumped into the bodies and the souls of the Ghost Mark warriors, landing in their Sea of Consciousnesses and stirring them up. Once the Ancient Demogorgon got rid of their souls, the Ghost Mark warriors' vitality was cut off, becoming a cold corpse.

The Ancient Demogorgons that came from the broadsword were actually the blood eyes. The broadsword was like the most sinister and sharp weapon in this world, which made of negative emotions.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm faced up at the sky. They felt shockingly amazed when they eyed the young man with the blood shield. They were so excited. Many women gasped and screamed. Their beautiful eyes showed their passionate admiration. They hated they couldn't jump into Shi Yan's lap and offer him their bodies to show their appreciation.

There were Ethereal God Realm experts among this group and they didn't know why their sexual desire was so stirred up that they couldn't resist.

Strange light rippled in Fu Wei's blue eyes. She didn't take her eyes away from him even for a blink of an eye. Her full lips thinned as her emotions surged like turbulent water. She had some vibes and she couldn't help it.

At this moment, Shi Yan's clothes were just rags and his torso was naked. He had an unknown, deadly charisma to members of the opposite sex, making him a black hole that attracting everything. He was swallowing their love and lustful desires like a flame that consumed the moths.

Xia Xin Yan's brows stretched. She smiled tenderly as she was naturally proud.

That was my man!

He belongs with me! Only me!

She couldn't help but nod inwardly. Her dimples appeared like flowers. The lake of her inner world now had the deepest carvings that would never fade or vanish.

Chapter 1034: A Delighted Fight!

The lake in life star number 9.

The battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan hovered quietly by the horizon. Leader Cocker had an earthy yellow Ethereal Extent above his head which had continuous ranges of imposing mountains.

Cocker frowned. He placed his hand on his forehead, mobilizing his power Upanishad.

Rumble! Rumble!

The mountain ranges on the surface of the planet shook terrifyingly. Under Cocker's Earth power Upanishad, mountains started to grow from the ground. Then, they flew up. From hundreds of miles away, the imposing mountains fell grumbly on the crystal clear lake.

The lake bubbled and glistened. The lake turned into a mirror with the subtle power of Space.

The mountains grumbly descended, quietly disappearing into the lake. However, they couldn't make a ripple.

Cocker knitted his brows tightly. He was pissed off. He cursed, "Those who use Space power Upanishad are so annoying!"

He continued to revolve his soul altar. The mountain ranges in his Ethereal Extent started to shake. At the same time, the earth ground of life star number 9 also sounded and shook continually.

From a further distance, three more thousand-meter-tall mountains flew over. When they reached the lake, they exploded and turned into a shower of rocks, falling dangerously into the lake.

The Space power Upanishad changed again. The surface of the lake now had many dim and deep space slits which could have

contained anything.

The thick rain of rocks was swallowed into the chaotic current of a space basin, leaving no single chip.

However, while the space slits twisted and changed, it did have some unrecognizable pauses and those thick space slits couldn't close as fast as it did previously.

Cocker suddenly smiled. He sounded happy. "Space power Upanishad is subtly magical, indeed. Too bad you have only Peak of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. Your excellence allows you to endure for such a long time."

Under the water surface, many types of battleship were lining up in the main hall of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Zha Duo, the Tenth Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, was standing on a battleship. His face paled, his body shaking. He even had some bleeding cuts on his face. He looked helter-skelter.

He had resisted strenuously like this for quite a long time.

However, just like what Cocker had said, he had only the Peak of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. With the space slits that led to outer space, he had resisted several waves of attack by Cocker. Although his Space power was mysteriously mighty, he couldn't endure the pounding imposing mountains forever.

His face twitched. A deep cut appeared at his glabella that allowed people to vaguely see his brain through it.

It was the sign of his overusing Space energy. If it continued this, he couldn't stand for a long time. The space slit would tear his brain. His God Body would be killed.

The difference between Incipient God Realm and Ethereal God Realm was like the distance between the sky and earth. Although his power Upanishad was refined, their power was a hundred thousand miles different. He couldn't resist Cocker for a long time. This situation was also in his estimation.

Zha Duo sighed, lifting his head to watch the fantasy mirror next to him. He used one finger to touch it.

The mirror changed. First, it showed Bettina and the commotion there. It was also an extinct volcano canal. Bettina looked grim. Her sharp and bright eyes scanned through the mouth of the mountain to see Feng Yan and Hammer, the current Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan, entangling each other like two revolving light balls. Beautifully exquisite light patterns emerged in that twisted area.

Feng Yan was also at Incipient God Realm. Since their realms weren't very different, it wasn't very strenuous for her to fight against Hammer.

Zha Duo took in that glimpse. He sighed and touched the mirror fantasy again. This time, it was with a more ponderous mood.

He wanted to check Fu Wei.

There were only three entrances leading to the underground area. He guarded one, Bettina took care of one, and the Windstorm War Department defended the last one. As soon as one of these three entrances was broken, their enemies would flood in violently. At that time, the most brutal fight would take place.

He knew the force that the enemy had invested in this battle. Two Incipient God Realm experts, dozens of Ethereal God Realm experts, more than three hundred Original God Realm experts, and several thousand King God Realm warriors.

Once the enemy barged into this subterranean base, he knew it would be fatal to the force of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm War Department. They couldn't resist the two Incipient God Realm experts while the Ethereal God Realm experts of the enemy had outnumbered them. Their defeat seemed destined for them right at the beginning of this bloody melody.

Zha Duo was in a heavy mood. Looking at the fantasy mirror, he

was shocked, his eyes disbelieving.

Almost at the same time, Bettina seemed to have some premonition. She also checked the fantasy mirror on her side. Shortly after, she was perplexed. She shouted, "Impossible!"

The two different fantasy mirrors projected the same situation...

In the mirror, Shi Yan looked like a Demogorgon had possessed his body. He stood in the stone canal holding the Blood Shield, his face wild and bloodthirsty. His body shot up the murderous aura into the sky. He was urging his energy. At the entrance to the mountain, the Ancient Demogorgons were hissing and screaming while slaughtering everywhere. They were killing the Ghost Mark warriors fast and ruthlessly.

Du Lin's eyes were icy cold. The Thunder God Spear in his hand continually released earth-shaking thunderbolts, striking the stone tunnel.

Inside the canal, Shi Yan held the shield, lifting his head and laughing evilly. The blood shield was ever-changing. It seemed to be able to gather all the evil things of this world as it dissolved all of Du Lin's attacks.

During this process, the Ghost Mark warriors were still being slaughtered by the Ancient Demogorgons. Their pathetic screeching was unceasing.

In Zha Duo's and Bettina's eyes was the strange light of disbelief. They were looking at the two different fantasy mirrors, but they were watching the same scene. They became terrified.

They recognized Du Lin.

The new generation's outstanding warrior of the Kroc family of the Ghost Mark Clan who was holding the divine weapon Thunder God Spear was the elite warrior that was well-known in the entire Agate Star Area. He was the future Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan. Zuo Lou favored him very much.

However, such an earth-shaking character couldn't suppress Shi Yan using his aura. He even suffered from the Shi Yan's evil deeds. He had hurt his own fellows.

Zha Duo and Bettina were baffled.

All of a sudden, they got themselves together. The Blood Shield! That Blood Shield!

The two of them were utterly shocked. They immediately recalled what Fu Wei had asked them to search. They knew that this shield had saved Fu Wei. It was the thing that had forced Du Lin to retreat.

That shield... was in Shi Yan's hand now.

Zha Duo and Bettina suddenly felt bitter. Looking at the demon man who was so fierce in the mirror, they knew for the first time that they were wrong. Completely wrong!

They used to disdain Shi Yan as they thought that his realm was too low that it wasn't worth mentioning. They thought that he wasn't a good match for Fu Wei and that he was just a pervert who dared to harass Xia Xin Yan. He was just a jerk in a good shell.

But now, Shi Yan's performance was like a hard slap on their faces, making their cheeks burning hot.

—— It was a shame that they didn't have any guts to see people.

Above the lake, Cocker suddenly furrowed his brows. He suddenly had a strange feeling as his eyes seemed to be able to look through the layers to reach Du Lin's.

Du Lin has a strenuous battle. The Ghost Mark warriors were killed by the Ancient Demogorgon as if they were the silkworms devouring mulberry leaves. Everything appeared in his eyes as if he was actually there, joining the battle.

Cocker didn't have any feelings for the Ghost Mark Clan. Seeing the Ghost Mark warriors being slaughtered, he was just a little bit

curious. He was curious why Du Lin had fallen in such a helter-skelter situation. And more than that, he was curious about who could back Du Lin into the corner like that.

His line of sight switched to the illusions of the Demogorgons. He frowned, using his soul to feel.

After a while, Cocker seemed to remember something. A significant fear arose from deep in his eyes. He couldn't hold it. His body shook and he couldn't even talk. It looked like he was reacting to something really really formidable. Something had shocked this First Sky of Incipient God Realm, one of the leaders of the Dark Shadow Clan, very much.

"Why... Why is it here? How could it be?" Cocker looked like his soul had gone. He mumbled as if he had forgotten his mission in this operation. Abruptly, he left this entrance and dashed towards Du Lin.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

More electric beams bloomed on the massive Blood Shield. The electric flames sparked furiously, but the shield remained as if it was the toughest barrier in this world.

Shi Yan's spirit, soul, and Qi had reached the peak. Demon Blood was burning inside him. The muscles of his entire body were like erupting volcanoes, gushing wild and powerful energy.

God power rolled torrentially and unceasingly in his body. The acupuncture points of his entire body released negative energy. Energy from his nebula in his abdomen also gathered with the negative energy, the God power in his body, and his star energy. All burst out, bringing up the aura and energy of his when he had broken through to Ethereal God Realm. At this moment, his power had reached the summit of his life.

In this Third Sky of Rampage, he was cold and indifferent. He had only thoughts of brutal and straightforward killing. He would

do whatever to release his deadly energy.

He had used all of his lurking skills for the first time. It was also the first time he knew to what level of mightiness he could reach when releasing all kinds of energy at once.

It was not a challenge of skipping one level. He had actually leaped two levels. He had used his power at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, which he had just entered recently, to resist a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior's attack. However, he hadn't fallen into a lower hand situation yet.

This fighting desire filled his body, which was full of energy. If he couldn't release this annoying feeling, he would eventually get very irritated. He hated that he couldn't shout at the sky to compete with earth and heaven.

"Shi Yan, we shouldn't linger here. They have two Incipient God Realm experts. You... when the situation is favorable, we should stop." Suddenly, Xia Xin Yan muttered to him. She didn't bother that Fu Wei was grimacing. She said naturally faintly, "Du Lin's troops have the weakest defense. It shouldn't be a problem for us to force a way out of here."

"You... you guys..." Fu Wei paled, fumbling and screaming. However, she didn't know which excuse she could use to make them stay.

Zha Duo and Bettina weren't close to Shi Yan. He had no relationship with Potion and Tool Pavilion. He didn't have any responsibility that would make him risk his life for Potion and Tool Pavilion. The reason why he had stayed even though he was aware of danger wasn't that of Potion and Tool Pavilion. He stayed here for Xia Xin Yan.

Fu Wei understood it clearly.

Seeing Shi Yan transforming into an incredible Demogorgon as if he was possessed, Fu Wei was joyful as if she had seen the dawn of

hope. However, Xia Xin Yan told him to leave...

It was a heavy punch to her heart. She felt a strong pressure that suffocated her.

"We're not hurried," Shi Yan shook his head when Fu Wei felt so desperate and helpless. His eyes were still blood red. "I haven't released my brimming energy yet. To avoid the backfire, I should stay for a while to kill more, which would ease my condition."

Shi Yan's madly arrogant statement of killing was like God's words in Fu Wei's ears. It was like a mysterious but powerful fountain that gave a tonic to her soul, calming it down.

Chapter 1035: The Perfect Shape

The illusions of the big Ancient Demogorgons were still invading the bodies and the souls of the Ghost Mark warriors. Those Ancient Demogorgons were developed from the eyes of the blood sword. They seemed to have an extremely evil power. Once they killed a Ghost Mark warrior, they absorbed all the negative emotions before the warrior died, which boosted up the Demogorgons.

The extinct volcano's mouth was filled with Essence Qi of the dead. They rolled into energy streams, congregating in Shi Yan's body.

The acupuncture points in his entire body were brimming. He had a feeling that he wouldn't feel comfortable if he couldn't vent this energy out. He seemed to have an endless source of energy; if he didn't release it, his realm would be stuck and he would receive a backlash.

A shout reached the sky. Shi Yan who was hiding underground couldn't suppress his wild desire of slaughtering anymore. He stormed up into the sky, appearing right where the Ghost Mark warriors were gathered.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm War Department were shocked, but they were more joyful than upset.

Fu Wei's soft body shivered. Her maiden heart was filled with excitement. She looked at Shi Yan soaring. Her beautiful eyes were so mesmerizing.

Xia Xin Yan frowned. She smiled reluctantly and spoke to her subordinates, "Get up there!"

The battleships sounded deafening. As ordered, they stormed out of the stone-paved road. They didn't hide underground anymore. Each of them soared up into the sky, appearing on the surface of

this planet.

Fu Wei was baffled for a while. She thought quickly and ordered her warriors, "Get up there!"

Apparently, the situation here and the other two entrances were completely different. Du Lin at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm couldn't enter the ground. On the other hand, after Shi Yan had burst off his energy, his side seemed to take the upper hand.

Everybody knew what kind of advantage they could get when they pursued a retreating enemy. Fu Wei didn't want to hide anymore. She'd prepared to create the biggest loss to Du Lin in the shortest time.

Warriors of the Windstorm and Potion and Tool Pavilion rocketed to the mouth of the extinct volcano. They immediately joined the battle against the Ghost Mark warriors.

Holding the shield, Shi Yan had an imposing aura that he had never had before. He fought Du Lin alone. Slowly, he controlled his marvelous power to draw blood from the corpses floating around to create a viscous Blood Soul Sea. The beautiful red sea seemed to have its own consciousness as it aimed at the Ghost Mark warriors exclusively. Each of the Ghost Mark warriors dragged into the Blood Soul Sea would lose his mind. Instinctively, they would attack their buddies.

His powers Upanishads switched. The shiny space blades curved around Du Lin, dragging a tail of brilliant light.

Shi Yan smiled wildly. Tens of thousands of starlight dots congregated, creating starlight chains, which swept across the sky and tied up Du Lin.

The more he fought, the stronger Shi Yan became!

Du Lin at Peak of Ethereal God Realm became helter-skelter in resisting Shi Yan's changing, powerful attacks. He seemed to be losing.

The bloody broadsword had disappeared, leaving only the flying Ancient Demogorgons, which were slaughtering the Ghost Mark clansmen. Due to Shi Yan, the unidentified factor, the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Windstorm War Department stirred up. They were boosted, which helped them suppress the invaders easily.

The more Ghost Mark clansmen were massacred, the more Essence Qi of the dead gathered. Shi Yan's body enlarged. His huge body looked more imposing and intimidating with the extreme energy twirling around him.

As the Ghost Mark warriors died, Shi Yan's fighting competence increased unceasingly after he had absorbed more Essence Qi of the dead. His energy seemed to not have an upper limit. Gradually, Shi Yan's God Body couldn't endure it anymore. His skin and flesh cracked. However, the Immortal Demon Blood wasn't sent out. Each drop of Demon Blood lingered, sticking on his body like crystal blood. At this moment, he looked like a man made of blood.

"Vast Starry Sky. Shoreless Sea of Star. Endless Star Power!"

Shi Yan made some magical hand seals as if he could connect to the high sky. Dim stars suddenly emerged in the dark sky. Starlight twinkled like fireflies. They slowly enlarged, shining beautifully.

Billions of starlight dots fell from the dark, mysterious starry sky. They sprinkled heavily onto the planet as if Shi Yan could control them all. He seemed to hover in the brilliant galaxy and become the owner of the stars who could refine the starlight into whips that attacked Du Lin.

Du Lin's Ethereal Extent was like a fountain of lightning and thunder. It contained thousands of thunderbolts weaving in the unceasing thunderclaps.

Lightning strikes flew out of the Ethereal Extent like dragons. They engaged, entangling with the starlight in the sky and hitting

the space blades. They were facing evil willpower. Du Lin's power was consumed rapidly. His God Body slowly got numb and exhausted.

Shi Yan was at the opposite state. He was like a perfect war machine that never experienced tiredness. His energy didn't decrease but instead rocketed steadily to infinity.

Du Lin suddenly felt a chill in his heart. To this man who had stormed out all of a sudden, he had a feeling of being defeated. He had no mean or power to smash this man.

Talking about divine weapons, Du Lin's Thunder God Spear couldn't break the Blood Shield. Talking about energy, he couldn't oppress the other. But as for the realm difference, his realm was higher than Shi Yan's. However, his enemy had three different powers of Space, Death and Life, and Star that could make up for his inadequate realm. This combined energy was enough to resist Du Lin.

His unique advantages couldn't defeat Shi Yan in any aspects, which gave him a big headache.

Seeing that the members that the Crocs had specially trained were dying nearby, Du Lin felt his heart bleeding. He thought it was the biggest mistake he had ever made in his entire life to voluntarily accept this mission.

When the Ghost Mark Clan was at a disadvantage, a figure slowly appeared. It was a ferocious Dark Shadow man. His eyes were so cold and harsh. He didn't look at the Ghost Mark clansmen being killed, or even at Du Lin, Fu Wei, and Xia Xin Yan...

His eyes switched between the illusions of the Ancient Demogorgons as if he wanted to identify something.

He was shocked when he saw Shi Yan holding the Blood Shield. His line of sight didn't move anymore. He mumbled something and then suddenly took action.

Ten imposing mountains in the sky flew out as if someone had forcefully plucked them out with endless intimidation. The mountains were like heavenly drill bits grumbly pressing on Shi Yan's head.

It was the threatening pressure of Incipient God Realm experts covering the entire sky. People at lower realms couldn't help but gush out blood. They helter-skelter fell from the sky. The power in their bodies disordered, giving them hopeless distress. They even wanted to kneel down to worship.

At Incipient God Realm, the warriors understood the nature of powers and primary rules of powers Upanishads as if they could blend the earth and sky together.

Those mountains were sharp weapons in his hands, which were able to break anything. Under such grumbly pressure, the warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Windstorm War Department were shaken, trying to get rid of the battle range.

Everybody could see that the target of those mountains was only one person: Shi Yan!

Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei couldn't help but shout. However, under such an earth-shaking threat, they didn't have the power to resist for even a short moment.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The grand mountains fell like meteors. All hit Shi Yan. The ground cracked and collapsed inwardly into the ground. Shi Yan was pressed down and people couldn't see his situation.

This attack of an Incipient God Realm expert wasn't something that Du Lin's attack could compare to. In that glimpse, Shi Yan was pressed, but no one could see him.

All the warriors engaging in this battle stopped and held their breath. They were baffled watching the expert of the Dark Shadow

Clan who had just come out from nowhere, their eyes cold.

Xia Xin Yan paled. She was so frightened. She stayed perplexed for a while before facing the sky and screaming. She was calling for something.

From a place far from them, Feng Yan was battling with Hammer, Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan. She changed her eyes and didn't say anything before leaving Hammer and flying away.

Xia Xin Yan looked crazy. Her resentful eyes gazed at the Dark Shadow Clan expert who had just appeared. Her succulent red lips parted as she panted, her eyes chilled to the bone.

Fu Wei's soft body shivered, her blue eyes fixed on the pile of mountains. A bitter and sour pain multiplied in her heart. At this moment, she suddenly recognized that Shi Yan had occupied a spot in her heart when she hadn't known. She couldn't recognize it previously. But now, it became crystal clear.

Boom!

The mountains exploded. The Blood Shield reappeared.

Inside the mist of crushed stones, a blood shadow soared up into the sky. His elbows, shoulders, and knees had savage sharp spikes. His chest, waist, and arms were covered with scales like armor. It looked harmonious with his God Body as if it was a shell generated by his energy.

It was the perfect fighting shape with an explosive power accompanied by the warrior's blood-red eyes and sinister aura.

Cocker of the Dark Shadow Clan was startled for a while. He observed the feature of another race stinging his eyes. He muttered instinctively, "A clansman of... the God... God Clan!" He paused for a while and then reacted, "No! It's not true! Not a member of the God Clan! It's the Immortal Demon Clan!"

"Shi... Shi Yan?" Xia Xin Yan's beautiful eyes were disbelieving. She was baffled as she looked at the young man in his new skin.

Although his body changed, his aura belonged to Shi Yan.

As Fu Wei knew Shi Yan's relationship with Blood Devil, at first glance, she could react timely. Her bitter feeling was swept away instantly.

Shi Yan stood upright in the sky. He gasped for his breath. Although his God Body was bleeding, the ruby Demon Blood didn't fall off his body. Once a drop oozed out, it would solidify, stick on his skin, and create a hard shell to cover his entire body.

Shi Yan's God Body was damaged severely. His internal organs seemed displaced. Some vessels were broken together with some of his bones. Evidently, his situation wasn't good. He was hurt badly. However, he was from the Immortal Demon Clan, one of the clans with the toughest bodies in this world. He had just mobilized the peak power of his life, forcefully resisting Cocker's attack. Anyway, he wasn't killed.

Standing there, Shi Yan could feel the mysterious energy gushing out of his acupuncture points. His body was healed as the God power boosted him further. He felt like his fighting capacity increased significantly...

Looking at Cocker of the Dark Shadow Clan at Incipient God Realm, Shi Yan didn't know why he was calm. And at the same time, he had an endless fighting will.

Chapter 1036: The Bloody Massacre

Cocker of the Dark Shadow Clan grimaced. His piercing, brutal eyes gazed at Shi Yan with obvious murderous intention.

He had never thought that he couldn't kill Shi Yan with his attacks. Yet Shi Yan was able to receive his attack and then reappear with a new form.

It was an insult to an Incipient God Realm warrior!

Cocker didn't say anything. He just snorted and changed his Ethereal Extent.

The floating mountains inside his Ethereal Extent condensed into three massive, earthy yellow beasts with the impressive power of earth. Shortly after, they got rid of the constraint of the Ethereal Extent, storming towards Shi Yan with their inaudible screams.

The three massive beasts were several thousand meters tall. They looked savage as they belonged to some kind of monster that had never existed in Agate Star Area. The three earth-shaking forces aimed at Shi Yan's soul, covering his God Body instantaneously.

Nobody could see Shi Yan anymore. They could only see a turbulent, earthy yellow world. Vaguely, the beasts were moving around like shaking mountains.

Shi Yan's valiant roar was unceasing.

Suddenly, Shi Yan's roar stopped. He reappeared between the three strange beasts in Cocker's Ethereal Extent. He had wounds all over his body. Bones of his skeleton cracked. His face was covered with blood.

As his opponent was at Incipient God Realm, his total power couldn't resist.

However, at the moment when he felt like he was falling into a bottomless abyss, he saw something strange...

In the next moment, he felt negative energy in his acupuncture points, his God power, the Immortal Demon Blood, and star power seem to have a way to all be unleashed. They burst out at the same time, congregating at the illusions of the Ancient Demogorgon.

In the void, dozens of illusions of the Ancient Demogorgons slowly changed. They quickly merged together.

An incomparable aura that could extinguish everything generated little by little. The illusions of the Ancient Demogorgon merged into one body. In three seconds, it absorbed all of Shi Yan's energy and turned into one entity. Then, it changed again and became a several-hundred-meters tall Demogorgon.

The Phantom of the Ancient Demogorgon was like a reflection in the water. It wasn't so clear, but the pair of red eyes were like two bleeding suns and the blood mark on its forehead was very eye-catching.

Right when the phantom of the Demogorgon appeared in life star number 9, Shi Yan was shocked. He lifted his head and looked at the vast void.

Layers of barriers that blocked life star number 9 became stable in just a blink of an eye. The broken space nodes, which were destroyed before, were restored at that moment.

A flow of sinister, cold aura with the willpower of the devil came from an unknown area of this universe, pouring into that mountain-like body of the Ancient Demogorgon. At that moment, the Ancient Demogorgon had a world-shattering power as if it was the fountain of everything in earth and heaven. It had even shaken life star number 9. All the warriors at Incipient God Realm in the Shadow Ghostly Prison were shaken.

Shi Yan lifted his head to look at the giant Ancient Demogorgon. He suddenly had a feeling that the phantom of Demogorgon seemed to have a life!

And at this moment, Shi Yan had no bit of energy left in his body. While the Ancient Demogorgons were combining, they had drawn all of his energy as if it was to wake up some evil creature from a deep pitch in this universe, which then entered the body of the Ancient Demogorgon.

At the moment the Ancient Demogorgon appeared in the void, a pair of massive hands like an iron anchor suddenly grabbed the void.

The three strange beasts flying out of Cocker's Ethereal Extent were blown off, sending waves of earthy-yellow halos and turning into nothingness.

The Ancient Demogorgon stooped and sucked. The warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and Windstorm War Department had their lives taken away. They became dead corpses in just a blink of an eye without a single beam of life energy left.

Besides Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei who gathered to protect Shi Yan, all creatures' life energy was absorbed in that glimpse of time. They died tragically afterward, including Du Lin of the Kroc family and several thousand warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Windstorm War Department.

In that short moment, thousands of people died. They didn't have any bit of energy left.

Cocker, the leader of the Dark Shadow Clan shivered. He had a significant fear in his eyes. He shouted as if he had encountered ghosts, "Impossible... You... You were dead..."

He screamed as if he had mental problems. His soul altar flew away from his skull immediately as he was trying his best to escape.

However, the Ancient Demogorgon that looked like a grand mountain extended both of its massive hands, squeezing Crocker's

soul altar and Ethereal Extent respectively.

Crack! Crack!

Cocker's Ethereal Extent and soul altar were smashed, becoming countless beams of strange light and vanishing in earth and heaven.

Cocker at Incipient God Realm had no way to resist that Ancient Demogorgon. He was killed instantly.

The Ancient Demogorgon floated in the air. His line of sight seemed able to cross layers of distances. He extended one arm, reaching for the place where the battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan were anchored. His arm just deliberately swirled and all the battleships above the lake exploded like the most beautiful fireworks. All the members of the Dark Shadow Clan were massacred.

After he was done with all of these, the two blood eyes of the Ancient Demogorgon observed Shi Yan underneath. He gazed at Shi Yan and opened his mouth to say something inaudible.

The incredible aura disappeared shortly after. The Ancient Demogorgon faded little by little. The will that came to this phantom from a deep place in the universe left when it vanished.

However, that thought arose in Shi Yan's brain as only he could listen to the Demogorgon clearly.

"The Dark Shadow Clan can guess your identity. Before you've reached Incipient God Realm, don't let yourself be exposed. Do your best. I came here through the infinite space. I can't stay for a long time. I can only do that for you. I'm trying to help the Ring Spirit gather the last piece of its memory. After it has merged all its memories, you can know what mission you have to shoulder..."

As the Ancient Demogorgon's consciousness left, the phantom disappeared. Flash. The blood broadsword reappeared, falling by Shi Yan.

Keng! Keng!

The blood sword landed by his feet. The garnet eyes were still open on the sword.

Corpses were scattered around. Some floated in the void. Some lay on the ground. They had the same death: their lives were taken away.

Suddenly, a flow of Dead Qi seethed violently, which was much stronger than the raging sea. It poured from the sky and entered Shi Yan's acupuncture points.

It was the power of Cocker from the Dark Shadow Clan after he was killed. It was the power of an Incipient God Realm expert.

At this moment, Shi Yan's energy which had all been used up was refilled sharply. He couldn't endure such a heavy flow, his body shivering.

Standing next to him were the two women who were now looking at him as if they were looking at a ghost or a monster.

Several thousand warriors of the Windstorm War Department, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Ghost Mark Clan were now just dead bodies. Du Lin was dead. The Thunder God Spear of the Ghost Mark Clan turned into a lightning strike and flew towards Hammer's general direction.

Standing in between the corpses on the ground were three living people: one man and two women.

Shi Yan sat quietly, his body shivering uncontrollably. He was taking in the Essence Qi of Cocker. At Incipient God Realm, the energy of that man was more than the total energy he had absorbed from the others before. His acupuncture points were swelling and his negative feelings were arising.

The space nodes were restored. The enemy's blockade to life star number 9 was lifted at this moment.

This battle was strenuous. But after the Ancient Demogorgon appeared, everything turned upside down. Incipient God Realm Cocker of Dark Shadow Clan and many of his fellows were killed shortly after. The Mad Shark Fleet of the Ghost Mark Clan and its captain Du Lin were slaughtered.

Now, it was only Hammer's force that remained.

"Bastard!" Suddenly, Xia Xin Yan scolded. Looking at the dead bodies of her subordinates on the ground, she was so mad that it seemed like she could storm over and hit Shi Yan hard. "My people are all dead!"

Fu Wei paled, looking at Shi Yan. She didn't know whether she should she hit him or not. "You also killed all the warriors of our Potion and Tool Pavilion. What just happened?"

Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei woke up from their deep fear. They couldn't help but shout as rage flooded their heads, their bodies shivering.

Shi Yan tried to open his eyes. He pondered and then made a cut in the void. A space passage appeared. He looked at Fu Wei and Xia Xin Yan. "We should leave first. Don't worry. The danger of life star number 9 is gone. There's something... we should discuss in another place. I don't want the fourth person to know about this."

Xia Xin Yan frowned and nodded. She didn't ask for a reason and just got into the space passage directly.

Fu Wei gritted her teeth. She pondered for a while before sighing begrudgingly. Following Xia Xin Yan, she jumped into the passage.

Sensing a flow of earth-shaking aura flying towards them fast, Shi Yan discolored. He hurried to jump into the space passage and got away. That space passage vanished quickly.

After the three of them had left and the passage disappeared, Feng Yan descended all of a sudden.

Her deep and archaic eyes showed an unbelievable fear. She was

baffled as she looked at the terrible mess in front of her. Corpses of the Ghost Mark Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Windstorm War Department were floating in the void and lying on the ground. There was no living aura. No one was alive.

Feng Yan gawked. With her knowledge and cognition, she didn't know what had just happened here.

She just stood like that for a long time before she remembered to use the Sound Stone to contact Xia Xin Yan. However, when she activated the Sound Stone, she didn't receive anything.

Feng Yan grimaced.

Zha Duo lifted his head to look at the lake. He sensed in silence before he became baffled.

The Dark Shadow clansmen filling the sky above their head seemed to have disappeared into thin air and left no aura.

Zha Duo thought he might have had some problem. He frowned and tried again, his eyes twinkling strangely.

After a while, Zha Duo was hesitant when he made a space slit. Through the slit, he looked and gawked, his face frightened.

Countless broken fragments of the battleships and dead bodies of the Dark Shadow Clan floated above the lake. The entire area was filled with a heavy death aura. There was no single wave of life energy fluctuating. This situation was evilly strange.

All the enemies were massacred. And Zha Duo couldn't sense any beam of energy from the beginning to the end. He didn't hear the noise of a battle, either.

Zha Duo felt the hair on his nape raising. He felt so cold. He was scared as if he saw a ghost in daylight, his scalp tingling.

Chapter 1037: A Great Ruckus

The current Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan was full of mettle on the surface of life star number 9. Seeing Feng Yan disappear, he thought Bettina's defense down there was just an empty shell that he could smash with only one strike.

However, the moment he was about to take action, he saw an electric beam zooming over. It was a spear...

Hammer was surprised. He couldn't help but frown, raising his hand to grab the Thunder God Spear. He closed his eyes to feel.

This Thunder God Spear was the divine weapon of the Ghost Mark Clan which was kept by the Krocs for generations.

If its master hadn't died, the Thunder God Spear would never be able to escape its master's control. Although the spear was in his hand now, Hammer didn't feel happy at all.

Frowning, Hammer sensed and extended his Soul Consciousness in two different directions of the planet.

He grimaced so much that his eyes reflected a restless fear.

Besides his place, he couldn't feel vital signals from Du Lin's and the Dark Shadow Clan force!

Hammer discolored in fright. Fear crept, flooding his heart. He hesitated for seconds before he made up his mind. He shouted, "Retreat!"

Elders of the Feng Du family around were surprised and they looked at him confusedly.

Feng Yan had gone. They could break Bettina's defense in any minute to fulfill Zuo Lou's order. At the critical moment when they had finally seen the dawn of victory, Hammer wanted to retreat. They couldn't accept it.

"Run! Immediately!" Hammer growled. His eyes still had a great

fear.

The Elders of the Feng Du family saw his grimace and they recognized something. Then, they spread out his order.

Battleships of the Feng Du family that had traveled thousands of miles to get here suddenly soared up into the sky. They left at max speed.

Under the extinct volcano, Bettina felt unbelievable, her wrinkles twitching.

At the moment Feng Yan left, she thought she had to die here. Without an Incipient God Realm expert to support her while she had no special skills in fighting, she couldn't resist Hammer. All Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors standing with her here would have been killed by Hammer and his Ghost Mark warriors.

At the tensest, dangerous moment, Hammer and his Ghost Mark warriors withdrew. Bettina was stunned.

Not long afterward, Zha Duo's voice came from the fantasy mirror hovering by her. He sounded terrified. "The Dark Shadow warriors in my area are all killed. No one is alive including leader Cocker."

Bettina discolored in fright. "What happened?"

"I... I don't know." Zha Duo stammered, his face complicated. "There's no trace or sign of a battle. I didn't feel any energy fluctuating. The clansmen of the Dark Shadow Clan seem to have been erased in just a blink of an eye. They are all dead."

Bettina was shocked. She contemplated for a while before touching the fantasy mirror to watch Fu Wei's situation.

Dead bodies hovered in the sky, lying on the ground. They were warriors from the Ghost Mark Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion and even the Windstorm War Department. Corpses lay everywhere. Mountains were collapsed. Besides Feng Yan, they didn't see anyone else alive.

Bettina paled and looked at the images in the fantasy mirror. She kept silent for a while before talking to Zha Duo. Then, she flew at her max speed towards the area that the mirror had just shown.

Fifteen minutes later.

Bettina and Zha Duo appeared by Feng Yan. They were petrified as they looked at the bloody scene that was like hell in front of their eyes. Their lips trembled for a while before they were able to say, "It... What happened after all?"

"I don't know," Feng Yan frowned, taking a deep breath. "Cocker, the First Sky of Incipient God Realm leader, has been buried here."

She pointed at a floating corpse not far from them. That corpse was dried up as if it didn't have any drop of fluid remaining. It looked desperately pale with a deep fear on his face. He must have encountered something really terrible before his death. Otherwise, he wouldn't have such a horrible look on his face when he died.

Bettina and Zha Duo looked at where her finger was pointing. They stared at the bizarre Dark Shadow corpse. They felt a chill rising in their bodies, their scalps tingling.

An Incipient God Realm expert was killed silently together with thousands of warriors from the Ghost Mark Clan, the Windstorm War Department, and Potion and Tool Pavilion. In addition to the members of the Dark Shadow Clan from another place, the number of deaths would be more than ten thousand including the warriors at Original God Realm, King God Realm, Ethereal God Realm, and even Incipient God Realm.

Who was so fiercely strong to do this?

Who was this brutally bloodthirsty?

Feng Yan, Bettina, and Zha Duo exchanged looks. They could see the fear in each other's face. They kept silent for a while.

Long afterward, Bettina reacted and screamed, "Fu Wei's body isn't here!"

She was shaken and she hurriedly took out the Sound Stone. "She must know what happened."

Wisps of thoughts entered the Sound Stone fiercely. Bettina's face became more grimaced. The Sound Stone didn't send any sound. Fu Wei didn't answer her.

"Don't waste your efforts." Feng Yan furrowed her brows. "I've checked this place. There are three people who went missing. Xia Xin Yan, Fu Wei, and Shi Yan..."

After she found the strange situation of this area, her first reaction was to contact Xia Xin Yan. However, the same thing happened. Xia Xin Yan didn't answer her. Then, she carefully checked the battle site. She found no trace of Xia Xin Yan, Fu Wei, and Shi Yan.

"That kid, too?" Bettina and Zha Duo were surprised.

Feng Yan didn't bother to look at the two of them. She faced up at the dark sky and the battleships of the Ghost Mark Clan turning into black dots disappearing. After a while, she said faintly, "... An invincible expert had come here recently. He had used his thundering powers to slaughter people here. Then, he captured Xia Xin Yan, Fu Wei, and Shi Yan. As he could kill Cocker in just a blink of an eye and create such a bloody scene, I'm afraid... he's an existence at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm. Only this kind of person could do such a thing."

"Third... Third Sky of Incipient God Realm?" Bettina and Zha Duo trembled.

Feng Yan nodded. "Yeah, it should have been an expert at that level!"

Although Agate Star Area was incredibly vast, people could count the number of Third Sky of Incipient God Realm experts using just

one hand. Even though it has been one thousand years, it didn't guarantee to have a warrior at such a level. And no one knew if that expert had some relationship with Potion and Tool Pavilion or the Windstorm War Department or the reason why he came to create such a terrible massacre.

But if he came for them, why had he also killed the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Windstorm War Department? And if he didn't come here to help, why did he kill the Dark Shadow warriors?

They had so many doubts. They observed around confused as they couldn't figure out the reasons.

"We can't explain this commotion," Feng Yan sighed begrudgingly. "We can only know after we contact Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei. Through them, we would get the truth."

Pausing for a while, Feng Yan said, "The Windstorm War Department suffers a big loss this time. The battleships we've sent here accounts for one-third of the total number of the Windstorm's force. It's a tremendous loss. I have to return to the Fighting League to report this to the Hegemon."

Bettina and Zha Duo were stern. They felt embarrassed as they promised to make it up.

"No, it's not related to you guys. I hope after we have some evidence that we can explain this to each other then." Feng Yan waved her hand, her face tired. She immediately got on a war chariot and flew into the immense sea of stars.

Bettina and Zha Duo looked at Feng Yan as she was leaving. Then, they began to connect the people who had a close connection to Potion and Tool Pavilion. They wanted to use their wide-range insiders to know what had happened.

It was a magical space in Shadow Ghostly Prison that was filled

with light. That space seemed to be separated from the mundane world. Although it had no earth and heaven energy, it had many shooting meteors.

On a floating asteroid stood groups of palaces in alien architecture. Inside a hazy dark hall were three green oil lamps. One of them was extinguished all of a sudden...

One of the members of the Dark Shadow Clan sitting cross-legged in a corner of the hall was startled. He immediately paled and shouted, "Master Cocker is dead! Master Cocker is gone!"

His voice echoed through the lightning-fast moving asteroid. The space next to him where light streamers were flickering exploded with space slits as countless butterfly war chariots barging in. They gathered quickly and densely like clouds of locusts.

Those butterfly war chariots swayed between the space slits as fast as lightning. With various colors, they appeared like beautiful butterflies. Each war chariots carried the clansmen of the Dark Shadow Clan with pale faces.

A thin old man stood on a large war chariot with an appearance of a wailing ghost. His white, metallic gray hair swayed like sharp needles, releasing sharp energy. He had a chain decorated with skulls of different races on his waist. Those skulls hissed and hooted as if the malicious souls were still inside.

The old Dark Shadow man rode the war chariot, landing directly on the asteroid, his face as cold as ice.

This special meteorite was like a special battleship, which was still moving. Butterfly war chariots anchored. Many clansmen of the Dark Shadow Clan were traveling back and forth.

However, after he arrived, the Dark Shadow warriors who were crying quieted down and greeted him with great respect. "Master Kelda."

"Who said my brother died?" The old man looked like a

screeching ghost who held a dragon skull in his hand. The ghost flame fumed from the empty sockets of the skull together with the pathetic cry of the resentful souls.

"The lamp represents Master Cocker's soul in the great hall which was extinguished..." said a Dark Shadow warrior. He was trembling hard in fear.

Kelda's eyes lost their focus. A flow of icy aura diffused from him uncontrollably. He rose one hand and grabbed into the void. A pale energy hand squeezed off the head of the warrior who had just answered him. The soul altar of that man whined, begging for his mercy.

"Where did my brother go? What mission has he taken?" Kelda had his murderous aura shoot into the sky. His face twisted as if he was a demon from hell entering this mortal world.

"It was a co-operation with Potion and Tool Pavilion of Agate Star Area. They came to kill the people in life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion. He contacted Zuo Lou directly. I don't know the details," cried the Dark Shadow warrior. "Our Chief knows this. You can ask him for more details."

"Notify the Chief. Tell him I'm going out for a while." Kelda took a deep breath and stepped into a space slit.

Chapter 1038: The Shadow Ghostly Prison is Boiling!

"What?!? Xin Yan is missing? The Windstorm War Department lost one-third of its members?"

Fighting League's Headquarters in Shadow Ghostly Prison was situated on a blue life star. Inside the God of War temple in the center of the star, a handsome man was screaming angrily, his face pale with rage.

Feng Yan wore a forced smile and just stooped her head without talking.

"What happened?" Feng Han took a deep breath. He calmed down, but his eyes were still as sharp as blades.

"We went to life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion to discuss business..." Feng Yan explained what she knew about the situation with her head held low. She didn't dare to miss any detail.

Feng Han listened quietly. After a while, he said coldly, "You said someone at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm poked his nose in it?"

"If it wasn't a Third Sky of Incipient God Realm expert, Cocker of Dark Shadow Clan wouldn't have been killed instantly... and around ten thousand warriors wouldn't have died without screams," said Feng Yan bitterly.

"Cocker was truly dead?" frowned Feng Han.

"I can confirm that."

"Not good. Cocker was Kelda's brother. In Dark Shadow Clan, Kelda has the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm cultivation base. He would go crazy for sure." Feng Han pondered for a while and then sent an order, "Tell our warriors to be wary of the Dark

Shadow members. Once they find something, they must report immediately. Kelda will go out from the hidden base of Dark Shadow Clan. He will raise a bloody storm this time!"

Feng Yan nodded continually.

"Announce to the commander of each department of Fighting League to search for Xin Yan, Fu Wei, and that man. What was his name again?"

"Shi Yan."

"Yeah. And any information about Shi Yan. Tell them to rifle through every corner at once. If you meet people of Potion and Tool Pavilion, you must ask them. Keep a close connection with Bettina and Zha Duo of Potion and Tool Pavilion to exchange information."

"Understood."

"Anything else?"

Feng Han frowned as he saw that Feng Yan didn't hurry to spread his order. He asked impatiently.

Feng Yan hesitated for a while and then said, "There's something..."

"What's that?"

"Lady Xin Yan and the kid called Shi Yan seemed to know each other before. He must have been one of her old friends."

"Old friend? What do you mean?"

"They've known each other before they came to Shadow Ghostly Prison."

Feng Han was surprised, but he wasn't bothered. "Got it. You go and work on your mission."

Feng Yan didn't explain the situation clearer because she wasn't sure what the relationship between Xia Xin Yan and Shi Yan was.

If she made a wrong guess, she would provoke Feng Han. If that happened, she didn't know what might happen to her.

Eventually, she didn't tell him about her assumption. She just nodded and left.

On a moving star, the current Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan Hammer took out the Thunder God Spear, his face bitter and sorrowful. He explained what happened to Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Zuo Lou.

Zuo Lou frowned, listening to him. He didn't intervene even once.

After Hammer had finished, Zuo Lou said sadly, his eyes red. "I didn't take care of Du Lin well enough. I had promised his seniors that I would take care of him and nurture him. I had never thought that... Sigh..."

"Cocker was dead too," reminded Hammer in a low voice.

Zuo Lou looked tired. He didn't bother to turn and just pulled his hair. "When Du Lin attacked Fu Wei for the first time, a blood shield appeared. I wonder if it is related to that spear. Is it true that the expert who cultivates Death and Despair powers Upanishad has come again?"

Hammer didn't know the situation, so he just lowered his head without talking.

"Cocker died. His brother Kelda will come soon. We're going to give the Dark Shadow Clan an explanation. Also to Du Lin!" Zuo Lou's eyes got colder as he said resolutely, "Send out all the forces of Ghost Mark Clan to search for those three juniors. I will ask the Satellite Eye to gather the forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison. We must know what had happened back there!"

Hammer nodded, his vision shifting to the Thunder God Spear.

"You will keep the God Spear for now." Zuo Lou couldn't help but snort, waving his hand. "Go. I want to prepare. This time, I'm afraid that the Shadow Ghostly Prison will change greatly."

Hammer moved immediately.

By the edge of the dark Shadow Ghostly Prison, a group of almost one thousand battleships was running. Those battleships with splendid flags and banners belonged to Monster Clan and Demon Clan. On their way, the small forces around felt fearful and anxious like mice looking at big cats. They all tried to avoid this group of battleships.

"Why did the battleships of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan appear in our Shadow Ghostly Prison? These two intimidating forces have never been interested in Shadow Ghostly Prison, right?"

"Perhaps... it's related to the recent commotion, isn't it?"

"You mean the earth-shaking change of Potion and Tool Pavilion? And how Dark Shadow Clan's Cocker died?"

"Well, besides those things, what else do you think it might be because of?"

"The Fighting League, Potion and Tool Pavilion, Ghost Mark Clan, and dozens of forces around are working in Shadow Ghostly Prison to search for three people. We also received the request to keep an eye out for strangers around here. After all, what happened in life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion?"

"Dunno. Our Master doesn't know it, either. We only know that the strongest forces of Shadow Ghostly Prison seemed to have cracked it all."

From several thousand miles away from the battleships of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan, groups of smaller forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison were discussing the buzzing news.

"I'm afraid that Shadow Ghostly Prison is about to host the most ruthless war."

"Yeah, it's true. Cocker's dead. When an Incipient God Realm expert dies, no one knows how furious the bloody coming storm will be. We have no tools to predict that."

"Sigh. Shadow Ghostly Prison is a big mess. It's chaotic enough. I don't know how many people will die this time."

On a black-ink battleship, Blood Devil was sitting like a rock. He frowned, sending a wisp of thought.

Not long after that, Bath and Gu Te of Monster Clan together with McGee and Gu Mo and Ghost Hunter were approaching from the battleships of the Monster Clan. Bath and Gu Te looked impatient. Right when they arrived, they shouted at Blood Devil. "Asking us to come to Shadow Ghostly Prison, Aren't you taking this too seriously? You think we have plenty of free time?"

Blood Devil wore a stern face, talking. "Did you know about the commotion in Shadow Ghostly Prison?"

Bath and Gu Te nodded. Bath said, "Even if a Third Sky of Incipient God Realm had slaughtered people, what does it matter to our Monster Clan? Why have you asked us to come here?"

"The only remaining member of my tribe was involved. He's missing," snorted Blood Devil.

"Is that kid worth our two tribes traveling thousands of miles to get here? Blood Devil, you're too bored, aren't you? Yeah, that kid has saved my son. But it's not enough to shake all of our Monster Clan?" said Bath agitatedly.

"The last information I received from him says that life star number 9 of Potion and Tool Pavilion would have an earth-shaking change. It said he would encounter a danger that threatens his life. As of now, his message has come true." Blood Devil took a deep

breath and continued, "Besides, he sent me another crucial information. He said that Agate Star Area will undergo a tremendous transformation. It relates to all clans here. He asked me to take it seriously."

"Agate Star Area has always had earth-shaking transformations. What else could it become?" Gu Te frowned, "No matter how Agate Star Area changes, Monster Clan and Demon Clan will always remain as the strongest of the strongest clans. What should we be afraid of then?"

"It's not like that," Blood Devil shook his head. "He meant... Our Agate Star Area will be invaded by a mighty force!"

Finally, Bath and Gu Te discolored. Bath contemplated for a while before talking severely. "Could that kid make it up because he was afraid that you wouldn't come to rescue him?"

Blood Devil glared at him, talking in a low tone. "I believe him!"

"If he's the only remaining fella of your tribe, shouldn't you be able to locate him using Immortal Demon Blood?" said Gu Te, frowning.

"I've tried. I can't locate him at this moment. I'm sure he's still alive. But his condition should be somehow special. I can't contact him. I can only lock his direction." Blood Devil frowned. "We are heading towards his general direction. But it's a large scale. I'm afraid it will not be easy to find him."

"Never mind. We're here anyway. We will go and rock it with you." Bath shrugged. Throwing a glance to McGee standing next to him, he thundered. "If you don't owe him a favor, why did your father need to travel thousands of miles without a clue like this?"

"You're my father! You should take responsibility for me," McGee smiled, his smile provoking people to throw him a punch.

Standing next to McGee, Ghost Hunter looked like a savage sharp sword. His aura was cold and calm. He hadn't said anything from

the beginning.

Gu Te glanced at him, sighing inwardly.

He wasn't here because of Blood Devil or Bath. He was here for Ghost Hunter.

After he had heard that the only member of Blood Devil's race was in danger, he hesitated. However, right at that moment, Ghost Hunter suddenly talked that if Gu Te didn't want to join this, he would hand over the Brutal Dragon Token and officially leave the Brutal Dragon Tribe.

Gu Te didn't know about the real relationship between Ghost Hunter and Shi Yan. However, after this, he understood it. To Ghost Hunter, Shi Yan was much more important than his Brutal Dragon Tribe.

In a dark area of Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Dead stars hovered in that area like sand grains. Dead stars were rare. They didn't have earth and heaven energy or any valuable natural resources. They were desolate and belonged to a group of uninterested planets in the sea of stars. They could only be a temporary wharf for war chariots or battleships.

That area had dozens of dead stars in various sizes. The small ones were just larger than an asteroid. The big ones were as large as a city of Devil Blood Star.

Inside a cold, bleak dead star came the roar of wild beasts. This kind of noise was harsh and brutal as if someone was under an utterly indescribable pain.

Two beautiful shadows stood in a corner of the dead star, sighing worriedly.

"It has almost been three months. He has locked himself inside the dead star and screamed painfully like that. What kind of

torture does he have to stand?" Fu Wei's eyes were gloomy. She felt bitter inwardly.

Three months ago, Shi Yan built a space passage and brought Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei by crossing the space nodes. They landed on this group of desolate dead stars. He asked them not to contact the Fighting League and Potion and Tool Pavilion before getting inside the planet. Since then, he had to endure some kind of painful torture.

He had stayed inside the planet for three whole months. From time to time, he screamed and roared wildly as if he had fallen into bedevilment.

"The previous battle must generate a powerful backlash against him. He's using his unique method to recover." Xia Xin Yan looked calm. She sighed but she actually had a deep regret.

When they first arrived in the Endless Sea when she and Shi Yan fought with warriors of Yin Yang Holyland, she knew this secret of his. After each battle, he would receive terrible recoil.

One time, Shi Yan had asked her to lock herself while he was rolling on the floor to resist some kind of tremendous backlash.

It has been more than one hundred years and this lousy feature of Shi Yan's power hadn't changed. After he used the power that was much more beyond his real realm, he received such pain.

While Fu Wei and Xia Xin Yan were talking in a soft tone, the painful screeching that had been echoed for three months eventually calmed down. A brutal, evil energy started to fluctuate inside the dead star.

Chapter 1039: Accumulating Energy

Fu Wei and Xia Xin Yan approached the deep hole immediately. They craned their necks to look.

After a while, the fluctuating energy from the hole ceased. A figure soared up into the sky. He looked high-spirited as his Blood Qi was abundant.

In his black fighting suit, his lean, muscular body was exposed. His eyes were like diamonds with earth-shaking power.

Xia Xin Yan exhaled in relief, parting her lips into a smile. "Are you all right?"

Fu Wei also looked at him.

"Best condition ever," Shi Yan laughed brightly.

The battle on life star number 9 had taken all the energy in his body to drive a wisp of Soul Consciousness coming from a deep place in the mysterious galaxy, which had killed Cocker and the Dark Shadow warriors and overturned the situation. After that, Shi Yan was hurt while Immortal Demon Blood in his body was used up.

However, the Essence Qi of Cocker after he was killed had filled Shi Yan's acupuncture points, making up for the loss that he had suffered.

The energy of an Incipient God Realm expert was extreme, indeed. If Shi Yan hadn't been about to reach Ethereal God Realm, it wouldn't have been just that simple backlash. Perhaps, his acupuncture points would have exploded, leading to a body eruption.

After three months of strenuous digestion, he had absorbed all the energy generated from Cocker's death, which had expanded his Essence Qi Ancient Tree to the upper limit of First Sky of Ethereal God Realm and also helped him condense almost one thousand

drops of Immortal Demon Blood. Compared to himself three months ago, he didn't lose a bit of energy. Quite the contrary, his energy had rocketed to new heights!

Unfortunately, he hadn't deciphered the mysteries of the Ethereal Extent yet. Otherwise, when his realm was more stable, he could have broken through directly to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

"Can you tell us about the Ancient Demogorgon phantom that had appeared out of nowhere? What happened after all?" Fu Wei hesitated for a while before she decided to probe.

It has been three months and this doubt was still lingering in her mind. She could die to know why. She had made a lot of assumptions but none of them could approach the truth.

Xia Xin Yan understood Shi Yan's situation more than Fu Wei, but still, she didn't know about the phantom of the Ancient Demogorgon. She didn't know what kind of God it was.

"The inheritance I got has been battling with the God Clan for tens of thousands of years. The Ancient Demogorgon that appeared in life star number 9 was controlled by the soul of a precursor of mine. That's how it got such invincible power." Shi Yan pondered for a while, his face stern. "Once the Dark Shadow Clan knows about my existence, I will become the must-kill target that the God Clan won't hesitate to eradicate at any cost. My precursor worried that I would be exposed before I'm strong enough. Thus, he killed Cocker and all of the warriors of the Dark Shadow Clan. And he didn't spare your fellows."

Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei exchanged looks, their faces bitter.

To prevent Shi Yan's identity from being exposed, that man didn't hesitate to kill almost ten thousand warriors. He didn't spare their subordinates, either. Which level of ruthlessness this expert has?

However, they couldn't blame Shi Yan.

At the moment Cocker came, he had used his power at Incipient God Realm to take the upper hand. Without the help of that precursor, these two women could have been killed, too.

They were still alive. They had to thank that mysterious expert. But they couldn't be happy...

"Precursor Feng Yan has been trying to contact me... Zha Duo also sends Fu Wei messages after several days. We cut them off deliberately. But now, what do you want us to tell them?" Xia Xin Yan rubbed her porcelain forehead as if she had a headache. "The commotion your precursor had caused in life star number 9 was too big. Forces around Shadow Ghostly Prison do have concerns. We have to give them an explanation, anyway."

"Just tell them that it was a Third Sky of Incipient God Realm precursor who has a deep grudge against the Dark Shadow Clan. This person suddenly came and massacred people." Shi Yan had a plan, so he told them without any hesitation. "Tell them that precursor found out that Dark Shadow Clan and God Clan have a conspiracy. They will invade Agate Star Area. After he killed Dark Shadow clansmen, he captured us and took us away. He told us the evil plan of Dark Shadow Clan and God Clan. Oh right, don't forget about Great Elder Zuo Lou of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Tell them that precursor wanted us to inform every force in Agate Star Area about this."

"How about the dead warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Windstorm War Department?" sighed Fu Wei.

"Simple. Cocker of Dark Shadow Clan and Du Lin of Ghost Mark Clan had killed them all," Shi Yan said deliberately.

"Yeah, only that way," Xia Xin Yan wore a reluctant complexion. Suddenly, she glared at him angrily. "My Windstorm War Department has lost one-third of its members. You irritate me!"

Hearing her mentioning this, Fu Wei felt sorrowful, looking at him with bitterness and regret.

Shi Yan felt awkward. He just smiled and said nothing more.

"Can we contact the others now?" asked Xia Xin Yan irritably.

"Yeah, no problem, no problem," Shi Yan forced a smile.

Xia Xin Yan and Fu Wei immediately took out their Sound Stones.

Shi Yan pondered then furrowed his brows. He also sat down like the two women, closing his eyes. A scarlet drop of blood appeared on his fingertip.

Fighting League.

Feng Yan was shouting at the warriors of her Windstorm War Department with a cold face. She was startled all of a sudden, waving her hand to signal the others to stop talking. She took the Sound Stone from her sleeve, listening attentively.

After a while, Feng Yan's eyes brightened. She hurried to go to the God of War temple to meet Hegemon Feng Han.

In life star number 9, Bettina and Zha Duo were talking to an expert from the Wood Clan.

Great Elder Zuo Lou had his hysteria which made Bettina and Zha Duo increase their powers. Three months ago, they contacted the Wood Clan, the force that was close to them, and asked them to send over experts.

At this moment, life star number 9 wasn't weak anymore as it had more experts.

Zha Duo was shaken as he said, "We got the news!"

In the dark galaxy by a group of dead stars of Shadow Ghostly Prison, battleships of Demon Clan and Monster Clan were

scattering, searching through the dead stars.

Atop a battleship sat Blood Devil. His mind flickered when his eyes radiated strange light. He smiled, yelling, "Found him!"

Battleships of Monster Clan and Demon Clan gathered quickly, heading in a fixed generation.

On a meteorite by Shadow Ghostly Prison, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Benny, Zuo Shi, and Xuan Ming were sitting cross-legged, their eyes gloomy. It has been three months since the earth-shaking commotion in life star number 9 had happened. Even the wandering visitors like them got the news. They were so worried about Shi Yan. They didn't know whether Shi Yan had survived or not.

Ka Tuo suddenly got up, looking here and there. He screamed happily, "Senior calls for us!"

Seven days later.

The dead star where Shi Yan, Xia Xin Yan, and Fu Wei were staying welcomed the first wave of guests, which was a fleet of almost one thousand battleships of Monster Clan and Demon Clan.

Chuckling, Shi Yan relaxed his tense mind, Looking at the battleships approaching, he suddenly said, "Precursors, thanks for your trouble."

The Monster Clan and Demon Clan gathering made Shi Yan feel warm. When he was in danger previously, he had trusted Blood Devil enough to send him a rescue request. He wasn't even sure if Blood Devil could receive his message or not.

Shi Yan thought that even if Blood Devil had received his message, he wouldn't have mobilized a lot of people. At most, he would send some Demon experts to check his situation. When he could confirm Shi Yan's situation, he would send his big army.

However, it was beyond his imagination. Not only Blood Devil coming personally, but he also brought Bath and Gu Te of the Monster Clan. He had brought the strongest forces of Monster Clan and Demon Clan, combining them into one. It was because Blood Devil trusted him or he did care about Shi Yan's death or life much.

Shi Yan could see the biggest favor was that lonely member of the Immortal Demon Clan had for him.

Looking at the coming battleships and Blood Devil storming and landing, Shi Yan was touched as he said, "I couldn't believe you came here yourself. And you... bring your experts together with the Monster Clan."

Blood Devil laughed heroically. "Bath and Gu Te were quite discontented with me on our way here. Boy, help me explain to them. Or else, they would think I'm just acting unreasonably."

In the loud laughter, Bath and Gu Te appeared. Following them were McGee, Gu Mo, and Ghost Hunter. Their energy rolled powerfully, showing off the Monster Clan's might.

"What happened after all that?" Bath frowned. He was wearing a complexion that wasn't so friendly. "Kid, you sent a message and Blood Devil wanted a war. He had almost disordered the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. He forced us to send out our troops. We came to Shadow Ghostly Prison from our place. This route isn't short. Did you tell the truth about the danger coming to Agate Star Area?"

"Do you know about the God Clan?" Shi Yan's face was stern, hissing.

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te exchanged looks. They nodded with a heavy visage.

"Recently, the number of members of the other clans who have come to Agate Star Area have reached the figure of several

hundred. It was no exception that those people have come to Agate Star Area because their homelands have been invaded." Gu Te nodded and continued, "From what they told us, the God Clan... is an extremely intimidating force in this universe. Their fighting competence is said to be the strongest in this vast space. They are too invasive. They have always been working on expanding their territory. This clan has invaded many galaxies."

Shi Yan took a deep breath and said simply, "They've laid their eyes on Agate Star Area."

Everybody was shocked.

"The God Clan is about to invade us?" Bath changed his visage, his voice low and harsh.

"Almost," Shi Yan nodded, explaining seriously. "The Shadow Ghostly Prison here will be the entrance. Dark Shadow Clan is the watchdog of the God Clan. It's in charge of pioneering and cleaning the space barrier that stands between the two star areas. I'm sure that Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Zuo Lou, has sealed a treaty with God Clan. He will use the internal competition of Potion and Tool Pavilion to put Agate Star Area into chaos, which will be the pavement for God Clan to come here later."

After he finished, the experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan couldn't stay calm anymore.

They all knew about the power of the God Clan through the refugees from different galaxies who came to find shelter in Agate Star Area. At the same time, Potion and Tool Pavilion was a super powerful force in Agate Star Area. Great Elder Zuo Lou controlled one-third of the power of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Being an ally with God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan would bring Agate Star Area a destructive transformation.

"God Clan is much stronger than what you think," Shi Yan sighed. "They have more than one hundred Incipient God Realm experts. Each of the twelve great families of the God Clan is able to

rule an entire star area. In this vast sea of stars, God Clan has claimed almost half of the stars. If they lay their eyes on Agate Star Area, they would stir up this sea of star severely. Great but deadly commotion would happen."

Listening to his description of the God Clan's might, people took in a cold breath, their eyes frightened.

Chapter 1040: Allied forces

On the dead star, Shi Yan talked to Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and the experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan about the powerful forces of the God Clan.

Several days later, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and the others arrived on the dead star.

After a while, Feng Yan of Windstorm War Department came with dozens of battleships. She wanted to bring Xia Xin Yan back to the Fighting League, but she denied.

They met up on the dead star, discussing something discreetly while looking stern.

This dead star wasn't significant. It merely bore the number of the Monster Clan's and Demon Clan's battleships. When the Windstorm War Department arrived, they could only stay on a dead star nearby.

Several days later, Zha Duo of the Potion and Tool Pavilion brought hundreds of guards. They wanted to take Fu Wei back to the life star number nine.

When Zha Duo arrived, he looked at the battleships of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan with a different complexion.

Fu Wei and Shi Yan came to greet him. As Zha Duo met Shi Yan this time, he couldn't be natural. Anyway, he didn't wear his previously arrogant face.

Through the fantasy mirror, he could see some clues, more or less. He knew that Shi Yan wasn't ordinary. Although his realm wasn't profound, when he used all of his force, the destructive power he could generate was earth-shaking.

Before Shi Yan had reached the Peak of Original God Realm, he had taken action in rage, which had almost killed Zha Duo. If Xia Xin Yan hadn't interfered, he would have been killed.

With that experience, Zha Duo didn't dare to look down on Shi Yan anymore. This time, he was more cautious, as he was afraid of provoking Shi Yan.

"Third Elder wants you to come back," Zha Duo looked at the battleships parking from a distance, lowering his voice. "Third Elder minds that... thing a lot. She wants to ask you directly. Currently, Shadow Ghostly Prison has a lot of rumors. The other parties in our Potion and Tool Pavilion have also noticed this area."

"I can't return to the life star number nine." Fu Wei shook her head determinedly. Taking a deep breath, she looked at Shi Yan next to her, talking. "You're here in time. We can go and confirm it together."

"What do you mean?" Zha Duo was surprised.

"The God Clan's invasion!" Fu Wei said slowly but sternly. "We're done discussing. I will go with the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League to the space canal that connects to the God Star Area. I heard that the Dark Shadow Clan is working in there. We will check the situation first, then we will decide the internal matters of the Potion and Tool Pavilion."

Zha Duo was shaken, talking earnestly. "Is it true?"

"It's your Potion and Tool Pavilion's responsibility!" Standing by them, Shi Yan's face was cold. "If it weren't because of your Great Elder Zuo Lou, the Dark Shadow Clan wouldn't have been facilitated to clear the passage that fast. If we can't do anything, your Great Elder will be safe when the great army of the God Clan comes. But, you guys don't have a good relationship, so you wouldn't be able to dodge this kalpa. Dark Shadow Clan and God Clan will definitely help Zuo Lou claim the power of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. They will kill all of the opposing parties!"

Zha Duo's eyes were dark, gazing at Shi Yan. However, he didn't say anything. If it were in the past, when Shi Yan bluntly talked to him like that, he would redden in rage. However, at this moment,

he didn't have such guts.

After a long moment, Zha Duo nodded. "It's good to check it out."

Shi Yan said calmly, "As you Potion and Tool Pavilion people are here, we've gathered enough forces. We can depart now."

Fu Wei smiled tenderly. "People of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan and Fighting League have had an agreement in advance. Once we find out that the Dark Shadow Clan is actually doing such things, we will join hands and deliver a fatal strike. We must destroy that canal as soon as possible!"

Zha Duo was shocked. He looked at Shi Yan with strange eyes, sighing. He had just recognized that he had always underestimated Shi Yan.

This anonymous kid could promote such a big commotion, which got the Demon Clan, Monster Clan, and even the Fighting League involved. Zha Duo knew that it was impossible for the Potion and Tool Pavilion to stay aside and watch. Potion and Tool Pavilion had to join this operation. Once it was proven, it would affect all forces in this Agate Star Area.

Although Zha Duo knew this would give Shi Yan fame and a high profile, he had to follow the man. He wasn't able to pursue his other thoughts.

As Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan were Incipient God Realm experts, the famous characters of Agate Star Area, although Zha Duo was the Tenth Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, they didn't really appreciate his presence here.

They didn't join the meeting between Zha Duo, Fu Wei, and Shi Yan. After they were done, Feng Yan appeared to talk to Zha Duo. However, Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te had never shown themselves. They just sent Gu Mo and McGee to visit him.

Apparently, the three Incipient God Realm experts didn't consider Zha Duo an existence with an equal status.

...

Shadow Ghostly Prison...

Thousands of imposing battleships in different shapes divided into four fleets that were more like four sharp daggers, moving at breakneck speed in the dark space.

The battleships of the four forces had different flags and banners representing different forces. Sometimes, they passed some small troops of Shadow Ghostly Prison, and others would instinctively move away. They didn't dare to linger in the four forces' way to provoke them. Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion were famous for their might in Agate Star Area. Today, these four intimidating forces gathered and moved in the same direction, which made the others recognize that something big would happen soon.

"Has the internal war of the Potion and Tool Pavilion started? The Monster Clan and Demon Clan have never operated in Shadow Ghostly Prison. They all come here today for what besides the Potion and Tool Pavilion's competition, you say?"

"Who knows? That commotion has stirred up people everywhere. I heard it's because of a mysterious Third Sky of Incipient God Realm. Would they come for him?"

"It's possible."

"The Dark Shadow Clan's about to change. We don't know how bad it could be."

"Perhaps you don't know, but the forces of other races in Agate Star Area have noticed this area. Oh, yeah, I've seen experts of the Wood Clan. So, they are here as well."

"I saw Hammer of the Ghost Mark Clan half a month ago. He's in our Shadow Ghostly Prison as well."

"Holy sh*t! What's happened? Why are so many strong forces coming to our Shadow Ghostly Prison?"

"God knows."

"...."

The same conversation spread through different areas of Shadow Ghostly Prison. People knew something big would happen in this area, but no one knew what it could be. They asked their friends around, but they still had no clue.

...

On a moving planet, Great Elder Zuo Lou of the Potion and Tool Pavilion looked worried. The fantasy mirror hovering in front of him showed the image of Kelda from the Dark Shadow Clan. Kelda looked even worse than him, with the ignis fatuus-like eyes. The gloomy skulls on his waist whined and hissed scarily.

"We have found them. But, you better not act rashly." Zuo Lou's face was cold as he advised the other. "Those three juniors have gathered with the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League. Although you are at a high realm, you're not the match of this force. I'm still investigating to know what happened back then. You should wait for the result."

Kelda looked like he was about to send fire through his eyes as he said through his gritted teeth. "It's been five years. You're too slow. How long more do you want me to wait for?"

"Give me two months more. I must know what had happened there." Zuo Lou had a headache. "Our pavilion isn't quite peaceful these days. The dying Pavilion Master has heard about my strange commotion. He's summoning the three Incipient God Realm experts. It's strenuous for me to settle these things. During this time, I'm begging you to leave me alone. Don't cause more troubles."

"My brother's dead! My blood brother!" Kelda said with a murderous intent on his face.

"Don't worry. I will investigate to see who did that." Zuo Lou was

agitated. "It's not those three juniors. Their highest realm is just the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. I've heard that it was a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert. We don't know about that expert yet. I still need more evidence. In Agate Star Area, we can count the experts at the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm with the fingers of our hands. We just need to confirm those experts' whereabouts at that time. If some of them weren't at their place at that time, we would know who did that."

"I'll give you two more months," Kelda said with a dark face. "The Chief has also given you a deadline. The space passage is about to be cleared. The force that our Dark Shadow Clan depends on is about to lose its patience. If the Agate Star Area isn't as chaotic as they want when they arrive, things they've promised to you will be nulled. You know how strong they are, right?"

Listening to him, Zuo Lou was frightened. He nodded, his face paling. "I understand. I'll do my best on it."

"I'm waiting for your good news." Kelda cut off the communication and disappeared from the fantasy mirror.

...

On a battleship made of beast bones, Shi Yan, Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te were gathered, their faces grave.

"We've created a big commotion. In the next phase, we must conceal ourselves. Otherwise, if other forces see us, they will alarm the Dark Shadow Clan as well." Feng Yan frowned. "We're heading to an area where Dark Shadow clansmen often visit. It's the key area of their operation. Also, the small forces do have guards staying around. If they spot us, it will be troublesome."

Feng Yan was the expert of the Fighting League. As the Fighting League had been fighting against the Dark Shadow Clan for years, they understood about this clan's situation better.

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te nodded, showing that they had no

different ideas. They continued to listen to Feng Yan.

"I know a route that leads to... that area directly." Feng Yan pondered for a while, her strange eyes fixing on Xia Xin Yan as she explained, "Xia Xin Yan came to Shadow Ghostly Prison through that route."

Listening to her, Xia Xin Yan changed her face as she had fear in her eyes. She spoke with a slightly hoarse voice. "Precursor Feng Yan... it's not easy to get through that route." She looked frightened, as if what she had experienced there was still haunting her. "That year, I departed with hundreds of people. However, not more than ten made it through."

Everyone standing there discolored.

"It's all right," Feng Yan waved her hand as if she wasn't bothered with that idea. "We have four Incipient God Realm experts this time. We have more experts. Getting through that area won't be a problem."

As she said that, Xia Xin Yan gathered herself together. Looking at Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Shi Yan, she said calmly, "I had forgotten how strong we are now. Yeah, it shouldn't be a problem."

Chapter 1041: Ethereal Extent

"Ethereal Extent is derived from the power Upanishad. It's a miniature version of the soul."

"Ethereal Extent is a fantasy world that the warrior creates with his power Upanishad and energy."

"The Ethereal Extent can change unlimitedly under the control of the soul altar. It's not much similar to the soul altar, but it's connected to the soul directly."

"Ethereal Extent can extend forever without any rupture. It can enlarge unceasingly."

"..."

The experts with the Ethereal Extent, including Blood Devil, Fei Lan, Xia Xin Yan, and Fu Wei showed Shi Yan their Ethereal Extent. They told him their own definition of the Ethereal Extent, which they had experienced.

When warriors broke through to the Ethereal God Realm, the first thing they did was to create the Ethereal Extent. Without an Ethereal Extent, their First Sky of Ethereal God Realm wouldn't be complete. And, if only the Ethereal Extent appeared, the warrior could break through furthermore.

If the warrior could create the Ethereal Extent, when he battled against the other, he could use both the Ethereal Extent and his power Upanishad to increase his overall competence. Since the warrior could change his Ethereal Extent as flexibly as he pleased, it provided him with many new ways to use his power.

It could be said that warriors at the Ethereal God Realm must depend on the Ethereal Extent in fighting. Their God Body, energy, and power Upanishad had to connect to the Ethereal Extent to bring out their best abilities.

At this moment, Shi Yan had reached the Ethereal God Realm, so

his priority now was to create his Ethereal Extent.

Inside a secret room with an open ceiling in a battleship, Shi Yan lifted his face to watch the dark sky. He frowned in irritation as he got a feeling that he couldn't walk through the door.

To any warrior breaking to the Ethereal God Realm, creating the Ethereal Extent was a troublesome issue that he must fulfill. Many warriors had to linger for a long time at this threshold. It could take several years or even a dozen years. Perhaps, they suddenly get a flash of recognition one day, understanding something and breaking this door.

Blood Devil and the others gave him different descriptions of the Ethereal Extent. At the same time, their powers Upanishads weren't similar to his, so they couldn't give him much of a reference.

Depending on the different power Upanishads and the races, the ways to create the Ethereal Extent varied. Usually, even if they cultivated the same power Upanishad, their Ethereal Extents might not be similar. And, there were so many methods to create the Ethereal Extent.

Only if he could find the way that was suitable for him to evolve his power Upanishad could he build his Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan cultivated mixed power Upanishads. He had Space, Life and Death, Star, and the Devouring power Upanishad, the last of which he hadn't understood thoroughly yet. Having many power Upanishads caused a lot of trouble when he wanted to create the Ethereal Extent. He didn't have a clue where to start.

Lifting his head to watch the dark void up there and seeing not even a single beam of starlight, Shi Yan felt a little upset.

After an unknown time, he temporarily forgot the trouble of generating an Ethereal Extent. He calmed down his soul, trying not to think too much as he now focused on the soul altar.

His soul altar had three tiers, including the Sea of Consciousness, the tier of power Upanishads, and the host soul. However, today, as his consciousness was wandering, he found something new.

There was something with the host soul above the tier of power Upanishads...

Holding his breath and concentrating, Shi Yan erased the worries and confusion in his mind. His soul gradually became empty, without any mess of thoughts, as he just sauntered around that area.

Consciousness... Emotions... A borderless, hazy area... A chaotic place which looked like a miniature universe before it was developed.

It was like a sheet of white paper that had colors added from the ever-changing power Upanishads, thoughts, and energies, to sketch the animated lines and shapes. That area could have different things based on Shi Yan's swift imagination.

His consciousness floated, moving around that hazy and chaotic area. He didn't investigate, merely enjoying the magical mysteries in his soul. He felt relaxed and at peace like he had never been.

The sea of stars was vastly immense with countless galaxies. Different stars looked like grains of sand in the desert, which could be counted in the billions. He didn't know how vast this universe was. He didn't know how many races had been born, evolved, and gone extinct. He didn't know how many warriors had fallen, returning to nothingness and leaving no trace behind.

The borderless sea of stars concealed the most mysterious miracles in this world. There were so many imposing existences from the ancient time, and too many specialties that he could never imagine.

Shi Yan sank into the world of his soul and opened his mind to see his little self that was like a tiny dust particle in the outer

space. Gradually, his soul flashed, as the tier of power Upanishads was changing silently in his Soul Consciousness' view...

At first, he sank into his Star power Upanishad to carve the knowledge he had. He imagined himself as a tiny dust particle in this endless sea of stars. He was like a rock, a small, ordinary star which had bobbed for billions of years in this sea of stars from the ancient time. Even though it was small, it had its own way of showing the meaning of its existence.

Gradually, he felt a marvelous feeling: He had become part of the immense void, an originally small light dot in the sea of stars, which would then develop into a real star...

At the moment this feeling arose, Shi Yan didn't recognize anything. He was still immersed in his soul and star power. He wasn't aware of the change of the vortex in his lower abdomen, which was the fountain of energy of the small star he had. It slowly floated and moved towards his soul altar.

It was the Star power Upanishad he had cultivated, which was also the source of energy in his body, an immense nebula where a lot of starlight dots were scattered. It had a rigid orb, which was a star nucleus glowing magnificently in the vast galaxy.

While his consciousness bobbed, using his soul to explore the universe, the nebula that should be inside the vortex in his lower abdomen had flown out, entering his Sea of Consciousness, storming into the unknown, chaotic space in his soul.

It was like a white sheet of paper being dyed and drawn to make a beautiful yet magical picture. That hazy area suddenly changed as if someone had used a miraculous brush to illustrate a whole new world.

The area of primal chaos was empty at first. Gradually, it slowly generated something as if it had a big explosion that unceasingly sent light dots everywhere. That magnificent explosion happened in every corner and lasted for a long, unknown time. Slowly,

changes occurred. Starlight appeared like dots at first. Then, a brilliant star enlarged as many smaller pieces of broken stars moved around it. It looked as beautiful as a big diamond moving in a natural trajectory. Everything was working in accordance with the true meaning of the sea of stars and some unknown rules.

The hazy, immense area became marvelous with the newly-formed galaxy.

Gradually, when his Soul Consciousness moved between the glowing broken stars that looked like fireflies, he saw the space nodes. The biggest star seemed to enlarge in his view, and he could vaguely see things in that area of primal chaos. Slowly, the concept of space was introduced.

The miniature version of the immense sea of stars with all the space nodes and the definition of an extending space appeared, which looked more like a small model of the real universe.

Shi Yan didn't realize the changes in his soul altar. He also forgot his initial purpose, just immersing and witnessing the birth of a miracle. He felt touched.

He was touched on seeing the glamor of space and its changes. Observing the magical energy fluctuation of that gorgeous star, he felt emotional.

It seemed he had become the owner of this small universe. He understood the eternal loneliness of the sea of stars, and could feel the reluctance of having not even a single soul in the star. He now could understand the truth that people in this mundane world could never touch...

Being half-conscious, Shi Yan suddenly felt that this world lacked something...

It didn't have any creatures. It didn't have the evolution of life. It lacked the typical life cycle of birth, aging, sickness, and death.

When this thought appeared, his tier of power Upanishads

changed again. Life and Death power Upanishad was activated automatically and it merged with his Soul Consciousness, becoming an air current that poured into the magical world inside that small sea of stars. Although it was small, it did exist.

Slowly, wisps of Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness were empowered by the stars. He felt like he was the Grand Angel observing that biggest star. He felt that it was finally alive now.

After that, as his thought changed, the power of his blood started to give birth to creatures.

A viscous sea that looked like a small Sea of Consciousness was changing. It took in his Soul Consciousness to generate lives in an animated world...

Those creatures didn't have clear facial features. They all had his aura, as if they were generated by his energy only. They gave him a feeling of seeing flowers in the mirror or the bright moon in water. They were unreal, but their existence couldn't be denied. They existed in his fantasy, but they were so tangible that he couldn't distinguish.

Those vague creatures that looked like illusions were born, thriving and then dying. They seemed to be made of pure energy, which gathered when they were born and scattered when they died, returning to the heaven and earth.

Life and Death could be seen in that star. He could see things happen at any minute, which would never cease.

The sea of stars appeared, Space opened and the illusions of life and death were happening in another universe, which looked like a miniature universe that he had created.

And Shi Yan, he had become the sole God of this world. When his thought changed, the star, space, and life cycle would be adjusted accordingly. He could move the star, expand space, and give birth to lives. He could even make lives return to nothingness in just a

blink of an eye.

In that space, there was nothing he couldn't do. He could turn his imagination into reality as fast as he pleased.

However, that reality wasn't real. It was still a fantasy. Everything depended on his consciousness, energy, soul, and power Upanishads. It was just his subjective thought, so it would never possibly manifest in the real world.

When he died, all the things he had made up with his thoughts would cease to exist.

All the things in that world were real to him, as he could sense and recognize them. He could do anything in that world as it brought him a borderless space to promote his imagination. It couldn't get rid of his control.

It was the ethereal world, which they called the Ethereal Extent.

When Shi Yan got this point, his floating Soul Consciousness understood something.

He woke up, returning to the real world. He felt as if he had just moved back and forth like a shuttle in some world. He was baffled when he found a whole new world had appeared in his tier of power Upanishads and his soul. It looked like a miniature universe, with countless stars and an immense space.

It was also an Ethereal Extent, but it was utterly different from the Ethereal Extents he had seen. Others' Ethereal Extents were just a space generated by their main power Upanishad, and the mountains, seas, or thunderstorm in there were just the smaller projections of the real objects in the real world.

But, his Ethereal Extent seemed to include the whole world. It looked like a brand new world indeed.

Chapter 1042: Going Out

"Did you meet the battleships of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan?"

"No, they seem to disappear into thin air."

"Where are they going?"

"Dunno."

Leaders of many small forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison still kept an eye on the commotion of Monster Clan and Demon Clan. However, all of a sudden on one day, this mighty force disappeared.

Potion and Tool Pavilion and Fighting League remained silent. They didn't give any comment on this event or contact those small forces to ask them to do chores.

Leaders of many small forces were afraid of Demon Clan and Monster Clan. As the two powerful clans were making a big commotion, which most leaders had no information about prior to their arrival, those small forces were afraid of getting involved in this mess. They had to try all means to collect information. However, they got nothing.

Today, life star number nine of Potion and Tool Pavilion received a bony, senile old human with murky eyes.

However, when he arrived, the senior managers of Potion and Tool Pavilion including Bettina were shocked. They all came out to greet him.

It was an Incipient God Realm expert of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Being the super powerful force of Agate Star Area, of course, the Potion and Tool Pavilion had its own Incipient God Realm experts. They had been secluding to cultivate for entire years. They didn't care about business or any matter of the pavilion. Only when

earth-shaking incidents happened to the pavilion would they appear to handle the situation.

The three Incipient God Realm experts only listened to the Pavilion Master's orders. The other Elders had no authority to assign them tasks or ask them for help.

The expert who came here today had Second Sky of Incipient God Realm cultivation base. He was called Timlin, one of the consecrators of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

The three Incipient God Realm experts were all consecrators of Potion and Tool Pavilion. With the massive storages of earth and heaven natural resources that Potion and Tool Pavilion had collected, the consecrators had the privilege to use them first.

The consecrators were also full-time hatchet men, the three sharpest sabers of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Bettina and the other experts of Potion and Tool Pavilion bent their bodies slightly waiting for Timlin to talk.

"I'm here as ordered by the Pavilion Master." Timlin squinted, his voice calm and steady. "Although Master doesn't have the energy to handle the business of the pavilion, he's still the Master before he falls. He knows what you've done. He asked me to come and clarify what had happened."

"Great Elder has plotted for the Canon. He sent the Ghost Mark Clan and Dark Shadow Clan to attack us. We were almost killed." Bettina briefed the situation.

"Where's the Canon?" hissed Timlin.

Bettina hesitated for a while before talking, "Fu Wei keeps it."

"Where's Fu Wei?" asked Timlin.

Bettina kept silent.

"Hmm?" Timlin's eyes got colder.

"They're heading to the Dark Shadow Clan's territory."

Considering her words, Bettina explained. "They're suspicious of Great Elder and Dark Shadow Clan's cooperation. They thought that Great Elder and Dark Shadow Clan wanted to contact the God Clan to invade Agate Star Area. That's why they are trying to find the truth."

"What happened in life star number nine? Which force does that Third Sky of Incipient God Realm expert belong to?" Timlin continued.

"I'm not sure." Bettina forced a smile. "His realm is profound. According to Fu Wei, he had always stayed in a gray mist that made her unable to see his shape."

"You can't identify him? What were you doing at that time?" Timlin said, a little bit irritated.

"Hammer was attacking him at that time. I didn't have a free hand to take care of the other area."

"The God Clan is about to invade us? Who said that?"

"A junior called Shi Yan. He's the first one to spread this possibility. And now, the Monster Clan and Demon Clan are here. The Fighting League is also watching. We will have the conclusion of the truth soon."

"If it's true, Agate Star Area will receive an earth-destroying disaster. Once you receive any information, inform me immediately."

"Understood."

In a mysterious area of Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Many battleships were trembling hard as the experts on the ships were urging their energy to set up the barriers covering the battleships.

Fast meteors shot over like bunches of light beams with a

terrifying impacting power. They were wreaking havoc in this area.

Those meteors were harsh and brutal. While moving at breakneck speed, they barged into space and sent dazzling beams of light into the void. Countless meteors were moving and crossing each other in that area, which created a thick mesh light net.

Each of the big meteors was much bigger than the battleships and moving faster in accordance to some unknown rules. The hissing sounds it made when passing by the battleships made people shiver.

But the strange thing was that even though there were so many meteors shooting across the place, they had never made an impact with each other.

The battleships moving through this place encountered a lot of trouble. Those meteors were like imposing mountains with frightening power. Once it crashed into a battleship, that battleship would be smashed instantly and the warriors on the battleship couldn't avoid the fatal consequence.

No one could understand the trajectory of the meteors. They could only use energy to defend themselves. The warriors who were able to deviate those meteors were just some Incipient God Realm experts. Warriors at Ethereal God Realm weren't strong enough to do that.

The battleships of Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Windstorm War Department and Potion and Tool Pavilion were moving in that dangerous area. Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four Incipient God Realm experts, were guarding the four directions. They were using their powers Upanishads to protect the battleships from those destructive meteors.

Whenever the meteors approached at fast speed, they would run like firefighters and use their supernatural powers to forcefully deviate from it.

However, this place had countless meteors weaving into a thick mesh light net. The total number of the battleships of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Windstorm War Department, Monster Clan, and Demon Clan was more than one thousand. Each battleship had the possibility to make contact with the meteor. The four Incipient God Realm experts couldn't cover them all.

There were more than ten battleships that got smashed because they were late to rescue them.

However, as the warriors on those battleships could see the coming lousy situation, they all jumped off the battleships and landed on the other battleships before their ships exploded.

"It's not a good solution," Zha Duo frowned, his face grimaced.

Most of the ten broken battleships belonged to Potion and Tool Pavilion. Of course, he couldn't stay calm.

In this journey, among the four forces, only Potion and Tool Pavilion didn't have an Incipient God Realm expert. When the battleships faced danger, Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan would naturally rescue their battleships first.

When they weren't free to help, Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleships would be smashed as they became the exposed targets.

It was natural. Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan had their own ideas. They wouldn't ignore their force's battleships to rescue Potion and Tool Pavilion's.

After waves of attack, ten of Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleships had gone. Zha Duo couldn't be happy, indeed.

"That year, you came to Shadow Ghostly Prison from a chaotic space basin through this route?" Fu Wei admired her secretly. She looked at Xia Xin Yan, asking. "Which realm were you and what kind of vehicle did you use to get here?"

Elegant Xia Xin Yan was calm. Hearing her questions, she had a pain that she couldn't conceal on her face. She looked as if she

didn't want to recall that memory. However, she just sighed and said nothing.

That year, they got through a strange space inside the Ice and Fire Secret Domain to come here. The difficulties they had undergone were something ordinary people didn't dare to think or imagine. The warriors of the Pure Land and of the other forces following her to this place had all died one after another. There weren't more than ten survivors.

During her whole life, there wasn't any time more dangerous and terrifying than that journey.

Today, when she saw Blood Devil and the others effortlessly dealing with the meteors, which had smashed their souls and bodies that year, she felt something else.

She had become stronger. Her current status and position were higher. This time when she returned to that old, horrible place, her battleships of the Windstorm War Departments hadn't broken one. Now she knew that she wasn't that hopeless Xia Xin Yan from that year who was filled with despair and fear as she knew she would be killed in any minute.

Swoosh!

An electric beam crossed by. Feng Yan of Fighting League descended. She looked at the area ahead of them and exhaled. "Ahead of us is an area with less trouble. We should take a rest there. Is it okay?"

She looked at Xia Xin Yan because she knew how Xia Xin Yan had come to Shadow Ghostly Prison that year. She knew Xia Xin Yan had a clear impression of this place more than anyone else.

Xia Xin Yan nodded gently. "We should have three days to rest. After crossing the most dangerous area, we will reach the space canal where the Dark Shadow Clan bases."

"Seems like we're about to get over it." Feng Yan looked tired.

"Three days later, it will be more strenuous. At that time, we will lose many battleships." Along the way, Xia Xin Yan had kept a close observation of the four Incipient God Realm experts. She understood their reflexes. As she used to travel through that area, she knew how dangerous it was.

Zha Duo's face became more grimaced.

Every time the battleships of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League were in trouble, the four Incipient God Realm experts would instinctively rescue and support each other. However, they had abandoned Potion and Tool Pavilion.

After several waves of attack, Potion and Tool Pavilion had always borne loss. If it would be more perilous after three days, how could Potion and Tool Pavilion survive it?

Zha Duo regretted and thought that he shouldn't have come here.

While they were talking, Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te also arrived. This was the battleship of the Fighting League, which stayed in the middle of the formation. They used this battleship as their temporary meeting room.

"This evil place gives people a headache." Bath was foul-mouthed. "It still has another wave of trouble ahead. We must recover quickly. Hey... does Potion and Tool Pavilion have any pellets suitable for Incipient God Realm experts to recover their energy? Don't be stinky. Give me some bottles. I will take care of Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleships later, so you can save some."

Zha Duo's face was grimaced already. Listening to him, he looked as if his parents had all left him. He didn't reply.

Blood Devil laughed loudly. He was about to tease him before he saw something all of a sudden. He was shocked to see a battleship of his Demon Clan.

Seeing him surprised, the others also looked at that place. They

were all shaken.

A muscular figure was standing atop that battleship. He clasped his hands behind his back, looking forward. His eyes seemed to react to the meteors around while his body generated an unknown energy fluctuation.

Gradually, starlight glowed radiantly on his body as if he had formed a subtle connection with the meteors around. He seemed to become part of this chaotic shooting meteor area. Some surrounding meteors even had his aura.

That man was Shi Yan.

Chapter 1043: Shoulder the responsibility

Meteors moved around Shi Yan like flaming diamonds, changing constantly. They flew around while drawing beautiful lights with explosive power.

Shi Yan clasped his hands, standing atop the battleships and looking here and there. His soul was empty, but he seemed to know the directions of those meteors.

As soon as his Ethereal Extent was formed, he had a tremendous change. His power Upanishads had combined perfectly with the Ethereal Extent. When he urged different energies, the Ethereal Extent would change accordingly. It cooperated closely with the soul to perform the best subtle ability of one power Upanishad.

His Ethereal Extent looked like a new galaxy, with shining broken stars and a big star that used to be hidden in the nebula in his lower abdomen. That star had the vague energy of Life and Death.

The stars and space were the essential elements of the universe. Today, his Ethereal Extent seemed to perfectly resize the universe with the eternal life and death energy, magically and continually changing inside.

Being the owner of the Ethereal Extent, he was the sole God of that world who could control everything. His power Upanishads could change endlessly in his Ethereal Extent, and they could flash in the real world as well.

The only thing he regretted was that his Devouring power Upanishad didn't merge with the Ethereal Extent. He vaguely felt that the ability of his Devouring power Upanishad didn't need the Ethereal Extent to become effective.

His Ethereal Extent connected to seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his entire body. His acupuncture points

were like a bunch of small spaces. If the Ethereal Extent was a sea, the acupuncture points were seven hundred and twenty small lakes. As long as he could solve the mysteries in there, those lakes could stream into the sea.

Perhaps, at that moment, he could finally understand the magical abilities of the Devouring power Upanishad.

Shi Yan had a good vibe he had never had before. Looking at the rocketing meteors, he relaxed his mind to connect his Soul Consciousness to them. At this moment, he could see something inexplicable. The complex, disorderly trajectories of the stars reflected in his Sea of Consciousness. Shi Yan was now able to grasp a good knowledge of their flying rules and courses.

It was a new and exciting experience.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Silhouettes gathered from the other battleships. Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, Feng Yan, Fu Wei, Xia Xin Yan, and Zha Duo appeared, looking at him in awe.

"You've built the Ethereal Extent?" Blood Devil laughed, his face happy. Fu Wei and Xia Xin Yan had a strange light ripple through their pretty eyes.

"Yeah, I've successfully built the Ethereal Extent," Shi Yan smiled modestly. "Not as difficult as I thought."

The people there were frightened, having a brilliant light flashing in their eyes as they admired and sighed.

He had used several months to create the Ethereal Extent. Compared to the majority of warriors, his speed was incredible. They couldn't have even imagined this kind of a speedy breakthrough.

Zha Duo sighed inwardly, frightened of Shi Yan's outstanding talent. He realized his narrow-minded vision which couldn't recognize Shi Yan's powerful potential.

"This place... is a little strange," While people were still baffled, Shi Yan frowned, looking ahead of them as he said, "Those meteors are so powerful. They move really fast with an endless power. As we're flying in this place, we've met a lot of trouble, I assume?"

Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four Incipient God Realm experts exchanged forced smiles.

Zha Duo's face was grimaced. He lowered his voice, whispering. "Our Potion and Tool Pavilion has lost ten battleships."

Shi Yan didn't mind him. He looked at Xia Xin Yan, sighing. "You had to endure a lot of trouble that year."

He knew of Xia Xin Yan's realm a hundred years ago. He also knew that they had to jump into the chaotic space basin from the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. On the way to Shadow Ghostly Prison, they had to experience so many adversities. Shi Yan could feel for her, thinking about what dangerous and hopeless situation she had to overcome that year.

"I am living happily now, aren't I?" Xia Xin Yan smiled warmly and tenderly. Her beautiful face only had joy, as the gloomy thoughts were all washed away.

Fu Wei looked at Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan whispering to each other, and had a rare lost expression. She could only sigh weakly inwardly.

"We will enter the most dangerous area in three days. At that time, there'll be more shooting stars. The battleships would have to face impacts on a large scale. It's good that you woke up. Otherwise, if the battleship shook, it could have affected your condition." Blood Devil grinned, patting Shi Yan's shoulder. "Good. You're doing well. I think your future attainment would surpass mine."

As Bath and Gu Te saw Blood Devil being so excited, they frowned and then turned around to scold McGee and Gu Mo,

saying that they didn't put much effort, and were just playing and messing around. If they didn't set their mind on cultivating, they would never turn into the new stars.

McGee didn't bother with it as he grinned strangely. "My brother Shi Yan has extraordinary talents. Of course, normal people can't compare with him."

Gu Mo just glared at Shi Yan, saying nothing.

...

Three days later, the meteors in front of them could be seen moving like flaming balls. More than one thousand fireballs were moving, weaving with each other to create a thick-mesh light net. They traveled really fast, giving people an impressive visual shock.

Xia Xin Yan discolored, talking all of a sudden. "It doesn't look quite right!"

Feng Yan also knitted her brows. "It's much dangerous than the past. It's not what I've seen!"

Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath looked at the area ahead of them, their faces stern. They all raised one hand to signal their sauntering battleships to stop moving.

Feng Yan and Zha Duo immediately signaled to their battleships as well. The battleships of Fighting League and Potion and Tool Pavilion also halted.

Many warriors gingerly looked forward, knitting their brows.

Electric beams sparked in the void due to those interlaced meteors, creating an explosive energy. The collisions due to the shooting stars were extremely horrifying. No need to mention the battleships, even the Incipient God Realm experts couldn't relax while dealing with them.

"What awaits behind that area?" Shi Yan suddenly asked, looking at Feng Yan and Xia Xin Yan.

"It's a space hub with passages leading to other star areas. It's the most magical area of the Shadow Ghostly Prison, with countless space slits. However, most of those space slits aren't clear. The Fighting League isn't sure what kind of dangers await in those space slits, and which star areas they connect to." Feng Yan contemplated for a while. She couldn't help but look at Zha Duo and Fu Wei. "Your Potion and Tool Pavilion understands the general picture of Agate Star Area much better. Do you have any information about this place?"

Zha Duo and Fu Wei exchanged looks, forcing a smile. Fu Wei explained, "This area has the surveillance light mirrors of the Satellite Eye, which is a magical tool of Potion and Tool Pavilion. However, Great Elder Zuo Lou controls this system."

"Someone is using supernatural powers to block the area ahead. They want to prevent people from entering the area easily." Shi Yan pondered for a while, closing his eyes to sense. "Many shooting stars over there don't belong to the area. Someone has mobilized them and changed their trajectories, so they are wreaking havoc here."

Pausing for a while, he took a deep breath, opening his arms. "Don't be upset if I attack your confidence. Even if we have four Incipient God Realm experts to protect us, we will lose at least half of the battleships we have here. Hmm, it's just a modest estimation. I think that the losses would be bigger."

As soon as he said that, everyone couldn't help but grimace.

It had been several months since they had chosen the quiet route to enter the space canal controlled by the Dark Shadow Clan. They had to do that to prevent disclosing their whereabouts. If they used the regular route, the Dark Shadow Clan would spot them instantly, and it would be hard to carry out a sudden operation.

However, if they returned now, not only they would waste their time, but the Dark Shadow Clan would also have a chance to bust

them.

The Dark Shadow Clan had been operating in this area for so many years, and their understanding was much deeper than the Potion and Tool Pavilion or the Fighting League's. If they knew this force's whereabouts and purpose, they could set up preparations and ambush. Blood Devil's team would be the ones with bad luck at that point.

"As we're here, we can only move forward or retreat and quit entering the Dark Shadow Clan's space passage. When we change our route, this big commotion will cause us to fall into the Dark Shadow Clan's trap." Feng Yan pondered and then said seriously, "I suggest returning to Dark Shadow Clan and quitting this operation. If we have to pay with the loss of our force, I assume what we may obtain won't make up for our losses. It would be a big blow for us."

Zha Duo nodded immediately. "I agree."

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te frowned, hesitating. At this moment, they didn't know what to do.

"It's not impossible to get over it." While they were still discussing, Shi Yan intervened, causing everybody to focus on him.

While frowning, Shi Yan closed his eyes in front of many people. A wave of magical energy fluctuation expanded from him quietly, extending towards the chaotic area of madly shooting stars.

After Shi Yan had generated his Ethereal Extent, his understanding of Star power Upanishad had advanced by one more step. He could vaguely create a contact with many kinds of star. The meteors were also stars, so Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness as his eyes. He urged the Star power Upanishad, with his Sea of Consciousness surging. As a result, a dazzling, beautiful picture appeared in his soul.

It was the dangerous, ever-changing area in front of them.

Each of the ever-shifting flaming meteors with the terrifying explosive energy seemed to be reflected in his mind. Their trajectories that ordinary people could never know now had a wisp of Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness, which helped him understand the exact moving pattern of each meteor.

He concentrated, understanding them in silence. He stood still while having a good grasp of the flying rules of more than one thousand meteors.

Everybody watched him, not disturbing him with even a single word. They all had a miraculous feeling that they could trust Shi Yan. He was the one with the wonderful abilities to overturn this situation!

They could vaguely recognize that Shi Yan could use his Soul Consciousness to contact those meteors. With this thought, they knew that the ones who could lead them through that matrix of perilous meteors weren't the four Incipient God Realm experts. Rather, it would be Shi Yan.

This feeling was hard to describe with words. But, it was there in their hearts. They all looked at him with hope.

After a long time, Shi Yan took in a deep breath, his eyes as bright as diamonds. He smiled, "We will hover for now. Then, we will move forward in my direction. That's how we can get through that area without any harm. I've scattered my Soul Consciousness, sending wisps to each shooting star. I know their flying trajectories."

Everybody had their eyes brightening.

Chapter 1044: The remains of the Holy Beast

"Move forward, faster!"

"Stop!"

"Move at max speed!"

"Slow down! Slow down now!"

Shi Yan stood on the leading battleship. He squinted as if he was becoming one with the meteors and continually gave directions.

Around them were the thickly moving meteors. They fell like the heavy rain, moving along with the surging powerful energy. Around one thousand battleships of Demon Clan, Monster Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion were moving forward like the sharp lance. Sometimes, they ran fast, while they had to slow down at the other times. Still, they were moving steadily through the shower of meteors.

Each direction of Shi Yan was passed to all the battleships. This massive group of battleships followed his instruction to change its speed.

Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four Incipient God Realm experts, guarded the front and the back of the battleships. They were ready if something terrible happened.

Shi Yan would often make them enter the area with the thickest meteors. In the beginning, everybody was suspicious. They thought he was just making things up and guiding them around.

And, those meteors weren't still. They were moving at breakneck speed. In front of their eyes, it was a chaotic area of shooting stars. But when their battleships arrived, the meteors scattered, revealing a long, narrow canal, which could reluctantly allow them to keep moving through.

After several times, people could eventually calm their nerves.

They all followed Shi Yan's direction without any objection.

Shi Yan became the [Ruyji Jingu Bang](#) of this group. Under his direction, this group of battleships had to bob a lot. However, they were all safe, as they didn't have any deadly collision with the meteors anymore.

Zha Duo and Fu Wei looked at Shi Yan in the front of the battleship from a distance, their faces complicated.

They understood that without Shi Yan, when this group of one thousand battleships moved forward, their Potion and Tool Pavilion would have had to bear a significant loss.

They didn't have an Incipient God Realm expert to watch over them. Whenever they encountered danger, the Potion and Tool Pavilion would receive the harshest consequence. Ten smashed battleships were enough to prove this.

At this moment, they were struggling while moving forward through a more dangerous area. However, the battleships of Potion and Tool Pavilion were safe, and they didn't have to bear losses anymore.

Although Zha Duo kept his prejudice towards Shi Yan, he couldn't deny that the Potion and Tool Pavilion owed Shi Yan this time.

"This man's really mysterious and unpredictable," Zha Duo sighed. "After this event, he would receive more favors from the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and the Fighting League. His future in Agate Star Area would be clear and bright."

Fu Wei nodded. "He can break through to a new realm pretty quickly. At his current speed, he could reach the Incipient God Realm within one hundred years. At that time, he would have a position in Agate Star Area, and would become the new dazzling star, and even a new legend."

Zha Duo forced a smile. "I've underestimated him."

"Fortunately, he has a fair relationship with our party. If he were with Great Elder Zuo Lou, he would be our nightmare!" Fu Wei said weakly.

"Yeah, you have keen eyes. I'm not as good as you." Zha Duo admitted reluctantly. "It's good that you've already established a friendship with him. Without him in the life star number nine, the Ghost Mark Clan and Dark Shadow Clan would have killed us all." Zha Duo looked at Fu Wei with his torch-like eyes.

"Yes, it's true," muttered Fu Wei.

"That time... There's something we don't know, right? Did that Third Sky of Incipient God Realm expert come for him?" asked Zha Duo.

Fu Wei pondered for a while before giving a slight nod.

Zha Duo's eyes radiated faint light. He gazed at Fu Wei for a while and then said, "It's unfortunate that the Pavilion Master can't get married. Otherwise... if you could be with him, it would be something everybody would feel happy about."

Fu Wei blushed and sighed. "I don't have that fortune. Xia Xin Yan is much better than me in all aspects. You don't need to think much."

Zha Duo sighed, shaking his head. He didn't talk more.

...

"What's the relationship between you and him?" In another corner of the battleship, Feng Yan frowned while asking.

Xia Xin Yan was perplexed. She turned around, looking at Feng Yan. Then, she nodded and asked with surprise. "What do you mean?"

"I'm saying that... Have you and Shi Yan reached that step yet?" asked Feng Yan seriously.

While smiling, Xia Xin Yan didn't answer but pried, "Why does

precursor Feng Yan care about my personal matter?"

"Your personal matter is very important in our Hegemon's eyes!" Feng Yan hissed. Pondering for a while, she said, "I support you two."

Xia Xin Yan's eyes brightened as she smiled. "I think you always want me to save effort for my cultivation, don't you? In Fighting League, you've helped me stop many suitors. In front of the Hegemon, you've always opposed anything that may distract me. Why... do you say so today?"

"That boy is a good kid," Feng Yan looked at Shi Yan standing far from them, smiling lovingly. "And only he could be a perfect match for you. I was young once, and I've experienced the knot of love. It's regrettable that a woman does not have even a single romantic relationship to recall when she gets older. I don't want you to become an old, senile maid."

"He won't agree," Xia Xin Yan contemplated, smiling begrudgingly.

"He is really conservative and stubborn." Feng Yan's face was also severe. "He treats you like you're his blood younger sister, he always does. He thinks all the factors that can affect your cultivation should be squeezed off. It's not easy to convince him. Anyway, if that boy can be stronger to the point he gets the Hegemon's approval, and the Hegemon can't smash him with his tricks, perhaps your relationship would be successful."

"So, do you think he can reach such a peak?" Xia Xin Yan's face was happy.

Feng Yan pondered for a while and then nodded smilingly. "I think... he can."

Xia Xin Yan was so happy she couldn't hide it. She stooped and smiled joyfully.

...

"Hey old dog, your fortune isn't bad. You've got a strong fellow like him. No wonder why you didn't regret anything when you wanted to storm into Shadow Ghostly Prison to find him." Bath looked at Blood Devil, talking. "I didn't get why you did that at that time. I didn't know why you suddenly went crazy, either. But, now I know that you've done the right things this time."

Gu Te added, "Shi Yan isn't ordinary indeed. Our Agate Star Area hasn't had any outstanding juniors like him. As you and him are from the same tribe, Blood Devil, you have made a huge fortune this time."

Blood Devil laughed cheerily until his eyes squinted and said excitedly, "Sure I did!"

In Devil Blood Star, Shi Yan had given him the inheritance of Death power Upanishad, which had triggered his realm to the point of another breakthrough. From that moment, he knew Shi Yan wasn't an ordinary warrior. He appreciated and took care of this fellow carefully.

Thus, when Shi Yan sent him the message saying that he was in a trouble that could take his life, Blood Devil immediately went to Shadow Ghostly Prison to save Shi Yan. He wanted Shi Yan to be safe and sound.

What had happened had proven his premonition!

Shi Yan knew of the earth-shaking conspiracy of the Dark Shadow Clan and God Clan. With his charisma and the endless potential, Shi Yan had gained the approval from Gu Te and Bath of the Monster Clan. Blood Devil knew that from now on, Bath and Gu Te would consider Shi Yan as the number one character, no longer looking down on him.

Through this trip to the space canal of the Dark Shadow Clan, Shi Yan's reputation would reach another height. He would become a key person, such that the forces everywhere in Agate Star Area would have to keep their eyes on him.

Soaring was the word to describe Shi Yan's situation.

Blood Devil felt so happy. His smile became happier and broader.

...

Shi Yan didn't know how Feng Yan of Fighting League, Zha Duo and Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the three experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan had assessed him. He didn't know that after this time, he had stepped into the divine eyes of those famous characters for the first time. He had officially entered the great arena of Shadow Ghostly Prison.

His Soul Consciousness was still flying ahead as he was trying to capture the rules and trajectories of those meteors. After all, he had to give the directions continually.

After an unknown time, Shi Yan felt tired. He then sensed the directions of the surrounding meteors before he could exhale in relief. He could sense they had passed the toughest section. The road ahead would be much easier.

Taking a deep breath, he didn't release more energy. He retrieved a part of his Soul Consciousness, sitting down quietly.

Fifteen minutes later, two silhouettes approached him, looking thrilled.

Opening his eyes, Shi Yan was surprised. "What's happened?"

They were Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming, who should be staying inside the battleship at this moment. They looked so excited, pointing in a direction with their eyes brightened.

"I felt it. I did feel it. It's the aura of the remains of our Holy ancestor!" Zuo Shi flung her arms, jumping up and down. Her small, white hand pointed at a meteor, which was moving neither slow nor fast ahead of them. "It's inside that star. Over there!"

Xuan Ming's eyes were watery as he screamed continually. "We've finally found the remains of our Holy ancestor. It's right in

Shadow Ghostly Prison!"

Shi Yan was touched.

He knew why Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming entered Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was because of the body of the Black Tortoise, one of the four Holy Beasts in the Grace Mainland. He was an ancient beast in the Immemorial Epoch. He had left the Grace Mainland to enter the vast universe a long, long time ago.

Creatures that belonged to the Black Tortoise family knew how to swim. When they were born, they would have already understood the power of water, which made them incredibly strong. Their ancestors lived in the Immemorial Epoch, which was much before the time the seeds of the God Clan landed.

The four Holy Beasts had passed down the inheritance through their bloodlines. Zuo Shi's blood had the inheritance seal of the Black Tortoise. However, the seal was just a seal. It didn't carry the essence knowledge of Black Tortoise's realm advancement accumulated over tens of thousands of years.

According to Zuo Shi and Xuan Ming, the remains of Black Tortoise had the Water Essence of their ancestor. Once Zuo Shi got it, she could transform immediately.

No one could have expected that Zuo Shi could really sense the aura of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise in this area.

Looking in the direction her finger pointing at, Shi Yan sent a flow of his Soul Consciousness to check that shooting star. He found that the star seemed to have an ocean with thick moisture. His Soul Consciousness was blocked by the foam and water bubbles, such that it couldn't reflect the situation inside that meteor.

Shi Yan immediately knew that it should be something magical in the core of that shooting star. If Zuo Shi weren't wrong, the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise should be there.

"Shi Yan ge-ge, you must help me," Zuo Shi looked at him with begging eyes.

"Yeah, don't worry. I'll help you get it."

定海神针: is the poetic name of a magical staff wielded by the immortal monkey Sun Wukong in the 16th-century classic Chinese novel Journey to the West.

Chapter 1045: The change of the co-soul

Shi Yan didn't hurry to help Zuo Shi take the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. Although this area was relatively safe, the meteors were still moving. It wasn't a good idea for almost one thousand battleships to anchor here.

Informing Zuo Shi, Shi Yan closed his eyes, giving directions to guide one thousand battleships into the safe route.

Half a day later, when the meteors around them gradually disappeared, Shi Yan exhaled in relief.

Blood Devil's team gathered, their faces happy and full of smiles. Everybody knew that without Shi Yan, they couldn't have crossed that savagely disordered area.

Even Zha Duo, the one with a bad prejudice against Shi Yan, also came to express his sincere thanks. After all, without Shi Yan, the Potion and Tool Pavilion might have no battleship left after they forcefully crossed that area.

Feng Yan and the others could finally relax. They immediately turned to excited mode as they wanted to get into the passage which the Dark Shadow Clan guarded immediately.

"Wait for me. I need to get back there for several days," Blurted Shi Yan.

People didn't know what he wanted. "Why do you want to get back there?" asked Blood Devil with surprise.

"In that chaotic shooting stars area, I found something very important to me." Shi Yan didn't want to say it clearly. "Give me a war chariot. It won't take long. After I'm done with it, I will come and find you guys."

"Do you want me to go with you?" Blood Devil wanted to shoulder the responsibility with him.

"Ah, no need."

Blood Devil nodded. He didn't even ask him to be careful, because in his eyes, the dangerous place to other people couldn't trouble Shi Yan.

He then immediately arranged a war chariot for Shi Yan.

Shi Yan floated, jumping on the war chariot. He waved at Zuo Shi, then under everyone's gaze, he returned to the perilous area they had just got rid of.

Shortly after, the war chariot brought them back to the area of the chaotic shooting stars. Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness to navigate. He used his soul to drive the war chariot, moving slowly. Sometimes, it swayed to dodge the meteors, which seemed like flaming diamonds.

Not long afterward, Shi Yan's face changed, smiling. "I found it."

Zuo Shi smiled excitedly.

The war chariot turned into a beam of light, zooming over that massive meteor which had the flaming fluid on its surface. The star looked as red as a burning iron. While it was moving unceasingly, the meteor seemed like boiling, fiery lava.

Their war chariot couldn't stand the high temperature of that meteor, and was about to melt.

Shi Yan was frightened. He left the war chariot and hurried to use his energy, creating a light cage to cover himself and Zuo Shi.

Floating inside the beautiful light cage, Shi Yan and Zuo Shi slowly landed on the surface of the meteor. The surface of this star looked as if it had rivers made of flaming fluid, which released waves of fiery light. It was so hot that even his starlight cage was a little twisted.

"It's too hot." Zuo Shi stuck her tongue out, which also made her look cute. She took off her white coat, revealing her moon-bright

arms. Her innocent face reddened like a ripe apple.

Shi Yan chuckled while his mind flickered as he said, "We need something."

Touching his glabella, Shi Yan urged the energy of his co-soul to mobilize the extremely cold aura of the Ice Cold Flame. Shortly, the icy cold air diffused from his body, which strengthened the starlight cage, giving it a layer of crystal ice.

The hot temperature was blocked outside. The different energies of the ambiance and the ice cage collided, causing steam to rise up as the burning feeling was swept away.

Zuo Shi suddenly felt so cool and comfortable that she couldn't utter a word for a while. She then smiled like a blooming flower while talking to Shi Yan. "Thank you, Shi Yan ge-ge."

Shi Yan didn't say anything. His brows twitched as he observed the meteors underneath. A strange light shot out of his eyes.

After reaching the Ethereal God Realm, he had checked his co-soul. It seemed to have had some magical changes, but they were so subtle that he couldn't describe them. His co-soul seemed to have had changes in its structure. The aura of the heaven flames and Origin had merged perfectly with his soul.

Vaguely, he knew that his co-soul was transformed, but he didn't know the details.

However, after landing on this meteor, his co-soul released some marvelous vibes which resonated with some energy fluctuation in this place. He felt that it could give him a chance to understand something new.

It looked like something inside this meteor had attracted Shi Yan's co-soul, something that should be fused with the co-soul, as if it used to be a part which had gone missing somehow.

Zuo Shi didn't understand as she looked at him with surprise while asking. "What happened?"

Shaking his head, Shi Yan didn't answer immediately. He drove the light cage, taking Zuo Shi to sway through a crack on the ground, which could have been caused by a volcano eruption. They slowly descended to the core of the star.

Shortly after, a layer of viscous energy stood in front of Shi Yan and Zuo Shi like water, which the light cage made of starlight and cold energy couldn't get through.

Furrowing his brows, Shi Yan released a wisp of Soul Consciousness, trying to drill through the barrier.

Puff!

It felt like he was barging into a rubber ball as his wisp of Soul Consciousness bounced backward. He couldn't get through the water-like barrier at all.

"Eh?"

Seeing this, Shi Yan became interested. His bright eyes studied the barrier condensed by some special energy, trying to use his soul to understand it.

After several breaths, his eyes brightened and he couldn't help but shout. "It's the aura of the Origin!"

Each ancient continent had one Origin. Shi Yan hadn't figured out what the Origin was, but he understood one thing: The Origin of an ancient continent had the power to gather the energy of the immense universe.

The universe was immensely vast. Space, even a speck of dust in a galaxy, or the secret areas all had energy. Those kinds of energy floated and appeared everywhere in the universe.

Ordinary warriors couldn't collect this kind of energy, and it was of no use to them.

Only the ancient continents could gather the magical energies, storing them in the core of the planet to convert them into heaven

and earth energy. A part of this energy could form the divine crystals, or even evolve into living beings.

It could be said that the heaven and earth energy of a life star, the energy from divine crystals, Spiritual Qi, Demon Qi, Dark Qi, Corpse Qi, and Yin Qi that the warriors could absorb, as well as the energy of the sun and the moon, could be converted from this kind of energy that existed everywhere.

Although it existed in every corner of the vast universe, it was like an invisible ocean. Different kinds of energies one could use in this world were the results of such energy being converted into them.

The ancient continents with an Origin could gather those kinds of energies and convert them to allow the planet to have magical abilities.

Inside the water-like barrier under the surface of the meteor was the aura of the Origin from the Grace Mainland. It was weak and diluted, which was far behind the Origin his co-soul had. However, in combination with the Water power Upanishad, it gave the water barrier a subtle defense that was hard to resolve.

Of course, it was hard for ordinary people.

Shi Yan's co-soul was the Origin of the Grace Mainland, and that wisp of Origin underneath came from the same source as his.

Shi Yan calmed down, trying to establish a connection as his co-soul moved slowly. However, it could create a magical suction force, drawing the weak wisp of Origin that had merged into the water barrier. Then, that wisp of Origin entered Shi Yan's co-soul.

Without that feeble support from the Origin, the marvelous defense of the water barrier was resolved. Zuo Shi screamed happily as she tore the water barrier without waiting for Shi Yan to react.

The two of them got inside the meteor.

Behind the barrier was a world of brilliantly colored gemstones. The remains of an Immemorial creature lied there. It was several thousand meters long, with a snake head and a turtle body. However, it didn't have skin or flesh, but the crystalline, gem-like bones. Inside the bones, they could hear the water murmuring with a magical aura.

Shi Yan floated in the void. Looking at the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise lying on the ground full of sparkling gemstones, he felt a natural respect.

The body of the Black Tortoise was several thousand meters long, which was much more imposing than the biggest battleship he had ever seen. And, that was in the condition that there was no flesh remaining. Shi Yan could imagine how terrifying this Immemorial creature would have been when it moved in the air.

While he was admiring, Zuo Shi was crying. Her crystal clear tears rolled down her face as she sobbed. Her diamond-like tears dropped like precious gemstones, falling on the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise.

An unclear energy wave fluctuated from Zuo Shi and the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. In the next moment, the remains of the Holy Beast turned into countless shining spots. They became so dazzling while the solid body suddenly turned into an illusion. It flew up little by little until it hovered above Zuo Shi's head.

Zuo Shi was dumbstruck. She immediately sat down cross-legged, mobilizing her subtle energy to guide the illusion of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. Gradually, the illusion disappeared into her body.

The incomparable several-thousand-meter-long illusion was slowly disappearing into Zuo Shi's soft, petite body.

Shi Yan was so surprised that he couldn't move his eyes from Zuo Shi, his face baffled.

He saw some tattoo appear on Zuo Shi's exposed arms and shoulders. That mysterious tattoo was the trace of the illusion of the Black Tortoise. In the beginning, it was pretty clear. But after a while, it faded and completely disappeared, as if it had dissolved into Zuo Shi's flesh and blood.

Zuo Shi's body echoed the murmuring sounds of water. It was gentle to the ears, and could sooth people.

As Shi Yan listened to the relaxing flowing water sound, his heart calmed down. His soul started to change as his Soul Consciousness bobbed. It seemed like some magical abilities of his co-soul had been triggered.

He was shaken while a beautiful light sparkled in his eyes and he felt thrilled.

His co-soul was slowly gathering the scattered energy in the vast sea of stars, which were the remnants of different kinds of energies that only the ancient continents could have. The bits of such energies were guided by the co-soul, moving towards the Ethereal Extent he had just formed.

At this moment, his co-soul seemed to become a magical core of the ancient continent that could drag and absorb the energy scattered everywhere in this universe.

Although it was slow and little, it did exist. Shi Yan was sensitive enough to spot it.

He knew that those remnants of energy were the primal form of the heaven and earth energy. Although they weren't pure, they could be converted to the magical Essence Qi, Dark Qi, Demon Qi, Yin Qi, and the other pure energies. However, Shi Yan didn't know the true value of those kinds of energies.

Those remnants of outer space energy flowed into his Ethereal Extent torrentially, making it closer to the real universe. The radiant star in that world seemed to be developed into an ancient

continent, which was gathering energy from the real world to create a mysterious domain.

Chapter 1046: Cutting space

Shi Yan woke up feeling better than ever, his face joyful.

Although he didn't know what the energy remnant in outer space flooding his Ethereal Extent could do, he was sure it wasn't harmful to him, because he could feel his Ethereal Extent was changing magically in silence.

Inside the meteor lied so many colored gemstones which were so precious in the world of ordinary people. However, to Shi Yan, a warrior cultivating the heaven and earth energy, they were nothing.

Those gemstones didn't contain the heaven and earth energy. They weren't divine crystals.

On the other side, the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise had wholly disappeared into Zuo Shi's body. She sat cross-legged on the ground filled with magnificent gemstones, looking calm while smiling naturally.

Shi Yan studied her, and his eyes smilingly brightened.

Zuo Shi had broken through to the Original God Realm!

The remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise should have given many supernatural powers to Zuo Shi, the one carrying the Black Tortoise's bloodline. Otherwise, she couldn't have reached the Original God Realm that fast.

Zuo Shi's progress was incredible in Shi Yan's eyes. When he met her in this galaxy, Zuo Shi was only at the Second Sky of King God Realm. With the pellets Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion gave her, she had reached the Third Sky of King God Realm easily. Yet today, she made another big step forward.

Shi Yan wasn't hurried, as he stayed and watched Zuo Shi in silence.

Zuo Shi wore a pure long white dress, and her posture was so cute. Her delicate face was decorated with long eyelashes. Even when she was sitting, her long-limbed figure made people feel for her.

Shi Yan always had good feelings for Zuo Shi. When he was still in the Quiet Cloud Land or the Sky Meteor City, he had been close to Zuo Shi. With the relationship between the Shi family and the Zuo family, Shi Yan and Zuo Shi were engaged. However, since the "other Shi Yan" didn't want to cultivate his martial path but put his whole life effort on studying ancient books and relics, the Zuo family was utterly disappointed. Thus, they renounced the engagement unilaterally.

When Shi Yan's soul got into that body, he had exposed his talent shortly after. Zuo Xu regretted his past decision, and had mentioned this engagement one more time to Shi Jian.

At that time, Shi Yan had already left for the Endless Sea. So, they couldn't do anything about this engagement anymore. Even after hundreds of years, he had always been fighting, not having even a moment of peace. And, he didn't stay in the Quiet Cloud Land anymore.

Gradually, Zuo Xu erased that reluctant thought from his mind.

Sometimes Shi Yan thought that if he hadn't entered the Endless Sea, he would have had a marriage with Zuo Shi that everybody would have to admire.

However, their plan couldn't have followed the changes of wind. His character would have given him troubles, and wouldn't let him live in a place for the rest of his life.

He thought and chuckled after a while.

Zuo Shi opened her eyes, showing her clear eyes, which didn't have any conspiracies hidden in them. She looked at Shi Yan while smiling gently. "I've reached the Original God Realm."

Perhaps because Zuo Shi was so happy, she stood up, moving agilely towards Shi Yan. She threw her arms around his neck, talking happily, "I'm so happy I've broken through another realm. This time, I'm sure my grandpa would be thrilled."

Zuo Shi's body was soft, with a refreshing and sweet fragrance. She was like a good wine that seeped into people's hearts. Her small face wore an excited expression, which was so attractive.

As she was hugging his neck, Shi Yan couldn't help but feel his heart beating faster. Taking in the sweet aroma on her body, Shi Yan's breathing became heavy. This sweet maiden made him unable to hold it in.

"Shi Yan gege, you're bad." Zuo Shi could feel something. Her beautiful eyes rolled, pretending to throw a glance at Shi Yan's lower abdomen. She immediately let him off and swayed at her spot, covering her pink lips with both hands. "You're bad... So bad!"

Shi Yan was embarrassed. He smiled shyly before he could talk again. "As said in the agreement between the Shi family and the Zuo family, you and I were engaged even before we were born. Haha, you could be my wife."

"Ptsss!" Zuo Shi stuck her tongue. "I don't want to be your wife. You're flirty. I'm sure I couldn't be happy being your wife. I should be your little sister. Haha, I like the feeling when you protect me. I don't like your dissolute face."

Scratching his head, Shi Yan didn't want to tease her further. He said, "If you're done, we should go."

He was worried that Blood Devil's team would be worried for them and come back here to search. Since it was related to the invasion of the God Clan, Shi Yan didn't dare to act recklessly. He must get the answer as soon as possible.

"All right," Zuo Shi smiled like a blooming flower. "I've reached

the Original God Realm, but I think I can continue to break through."

"What happened to the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise?" asked Shi Yan. He was a little surprised.

"They merged into my soul. They have become an illusion of Black Tortoise in the form of a seal as a part of my soul." Zuo Shi didn't have any caution when talking to Shi Yan, so she explained to him clearly. "But, I don't know how to use it yet. I think... I need time to adapt to it and understand it further."

Shi Yan was amazed. He stayed baffled for a while before he could talk again. "Congrats! I think you've received the genuine inheritance of Black Tortoise. Your future will be immeasurable."

"Of course," Zuo Shi thrust out her ample bosom, talking confidently like an arrogant swan.

The two chatted for a while and then flew out of the meteor, landing on the war chariot anchored in the void. They immediately rode the war chariot back to the place.

After a while, Shi Yan knitted his brows, his face darkening.

Zuo Shi was also surprised. "Something's wrong. I can't feel their life energy fluctuation."

Before Zuo Shi had reached the Original God Realm and her soul had transformed, she could sense the warriors at the lower realm within a specific scale.

However, as Zuo Shi had just released her Soul Consciousness, she couldn't feel anything. She looked at Shi Yan with surprise. "Can you feel them? Within our sensing range, they shouldn't be far from us. Perhaps they left without us. Hmm, is it possible?"

Shi Yan darkened his face. "It's impossible."

He had earned the trust of Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan. It was just several days, and he did explain the situation to

them. Blood Devil's team weren't some sort of impatient people.

Shi Yan's realm was higher than Zuo Shi's. After he had reached the Ethereal God Realm, with a deeper understanding of Life power Upanishad, his sensing power towards life should be much more powerful.

However, it was the same when he sensed. He couldn't feel any commotion from Blood Devil's group.

It was just several days! Blood Devil wouldn't ditch him here and leave first. What had happened?

The war chariot roared, moving like a light arrow while heading towards the area where one thousand battleships were anchored.

Shi Yan's face changed. Looking at the area where space had collapsed, his face was extremely stern.

Space in that area collapsed deeply. They could see the fine space slits by the edge of that area, with brilliant outer space streamers. Since Shi Yan had cultivated Space power Upanishad, he was struck at first glance.

He knew what happened to that area...

That piece of space was cut off and moved away directly!

Shi Yan couldn't do such tricks. Although Zha Duo had also cultivated Space power Upanishad, even he didn't have such ability. Unless... that warrior who used the Space ability had reached the Incipient God Realm!

Observing that collapsed space, Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness to sense, and his face became even more severe while a strange light sparkled in his eyes.

After a while, he took a deep breath. "Some expert cultivating Space power Upanishad came here. That warrior used his supernatural ability to cut the space were the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and Fighting League were

gathering, and moved it away!"

Zuo Shi was frightened, asking. "That dangerous?"

Beaming a forced smile, Shi Yan said, "Yeah, the warriors who have cultivated Space power Upanishad to Incipient God Realm can be that strong. They can cut and move spaces. It's unimaginable to ordinary people, but they do have such powers."

"So, what should we do?" Zuo Shi looked upset. "Old Xuan Ming's still with them. Although he's strict with me, he just wants me to be better. I don't want anything bad happening to him."

"I don't want to see them encounter bad things either." Shi Yan frowned.

He also cultivated Space power Upanishad. Especially after he had stepped into Ethereal God Realm, he knew how terrifying the warriors with Space power Upanishad could be.

People with Space power Upanishad had many tricks to deal with the enemies. They didn't need to use much energy to attack anyway.

For example, if he fought with a warrior at the same level, he could tear a piece of space to drag the enemy in there. He could use the chaotic space basin to wear out the enemy's energy to death.

The chaotic space basin hiding in the space slits was extremely dangerous. Unless the enemy also cultivated Space power Upanishad, which would help him find the exit, it would be impossible to get out.

An expert who could cut the space should be able to apply such magical abilities. If the enemy brought the space where Blood Devil's team was staying to some death traps, even if Blood Devil and the others had reached Incipient God Realm, they wouldn't be able to break out of there.

Xia Xin Yan, Blood Devil, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Benny, and so many people he was concerned about were in that group. Shi Yan

knew that with his current realm and power, he couldn't help them much even if he could find them. Anyhow, he must find them.

"So, what should we do to find them?" Zuo Shi was so worried that her petite face had reddened. "Why did some expert with Space power suddenly attack them?"

Shi Yan fell into silence. After a while, he said, "Should be the Dark Shadow Clan."

"Why?"

"The Dark Shadow Clan is clearing the space canal, preparing the way for the God Clan's invasion. If they want to drill through the space passage, they must have some experts cultivating Space power Upanishad. I had thought about it earlier. But, I didn't expect the others to be so strong. They even have Incipient God Realm experts. If I had known it earlier, I wouldn't have taken risks."

The Agate Star Area didn't have any expert cultivating Space power Upanishad at the Incipient God Realm. Zha Duo was the strongest here, but he had only reached the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

Shi Yan knew how strenuous it was to break through to the new realm for such warriors. Thus, he instinctively assumed that the experts of their enemy had only reached the Ethereal God Realm.

He made such a presumption, and the Dark Shadow expert who cultivated Space power Upanishad had given him a slap on his face today with his actual ability.

"Sigh! I calculated wrongly. I forgot that the Dark Shadow Clan isn't a race from the Agate Star Area. They have been dependent on the strongest clan in this universe, and have operated in other galaxies as well. It has been countless years perhaps. It's not impossible if this clan has Incipient God Realm experts who

cultivate the Space power Upanishad."

"So, can you find them?" Zuo Shi was quite worried.

"I should be able to do that."

Chapter 1047: Poisonous Sea

A drop of scarlet Immortal Demon Blood boiled, evaporating into red mist, which flashed and then disappeared into thin air.

Zuo Shi frowned and looked at Shi Yan curiously. Her eyes brightened.

Shi Yan squinted and used the mysterious power of the Demon Blood to search. The Demon Blood was indeed magical. When he was still in Raging Flame Star Area, he could use it to sense life energy fluctuations of his family's members in Grace Mainland. Today, as he his realm had reached Ethereal God Realm, his understanding of Demon Blood also advanced. No matter where Blood Devil had gone to, he could sense and locate him.

After a while, his eyes sparkled and he lowered his voice. "I found them."

Driving the war chariot, he brought Zuo Shi flying forward at a very quick speed.

After one hour, they reached the most incredible area of Shadow Ghostly Prison. Staying between the radiant outer space streamers were the space slits that were torn apart.

This place was the entrance where Agate Star Area was connected to the other star areas. Many of those space slits could lead to other worlds out there.

Of course, most of the space passages here were stuck. Some passages hid the extreme dangers. Getting in without a thorough investigation could lead to a death which happened even faster than when facing a higher realm enemy.

Inside the space passages were different, mysterious and yet fatal traps that the warriors who didn't have Space power shouldn't enter. That was how they could save their souls from vanishing.

"So many space slits," Zuo Shi was curious. "It looks similar to the

Border Sea in Grace Mainland."

Shi Yan nodded. "There are so many magical things in the world. Many star areas connect to each other. To the experts, if they are strong enough, they could use those space passages to reach many different galaxies. I heard that a long, long time ago, the big star areas did have a close relationship. They would trade goods of their areas to receive cultivating materials from other star areas."

"It's not like that anymore?" Zuo Shi was surprised.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile, shaking his head. "No, it isn't."

"Why?"

"Because creatures couldn't escape greed."

"Why do you say that?"

"A long, long time ago, the big races have considered cultivating themselves as their top priority. Many clans loved peace. They wouldn't trespass. However, some clans started to become stronger and stronger. Gradually, they became less content with their lot. They began to invade other star areas."

After pausing for a while, Shi Yan continued, "Different star areas have different races and different forces. For example, the high-level star areas could have stronger warriors in general. If they find a new star area whose level is lower than theirs with a general weak competence, they won't be kind enough to help the others grow. Quite the contrary, they will slaughter to rob their resources."

Zuo Shi wasn't dumb. Listening to Shi Yan, she understood immediately.

"It's like when the experts of Agate Star Area come through the space passage to invade our Grace Mainland. What do you think Grace Mainland would have faced?" Shi Yan sighed. "In the best situation, we would be captured to become slaves or more likely, we would have all been massacred."

He continued his explanation, "That's why different star areas slowly cut off relationships with each other. Some star areas have unilaterally blocked the entrance or the space passage leading to other areas. They don't want the stronger forces from the higher-level star area come to invade their land. Especially when the God Clan is getting stronger and stronger. It becomes a nightmare of the big star areas."

"Is it true that most of the space canals in this area were broken purposely?" asked Zuo Shi.

Shi Yan nodded. "Yeah, it's true. Although Agate Star Area is a high-level star area, it's weaker than the God Clan. As they don't want the other strong clans to invade them, they will initially block or break those space passages. Xia Xin Yan was able to come here that year because Grace Mainland is a low-level star area. Perhaps in the Agate Star Area's experts' opinions, our star area could never be a threat to them. They may even have thought that Grace Mainland could be a potential target. Thus, they didn't destroy that passage."

Since Shi Yan had experienced many unfortunate events, he wasn't innocent anymore. His understanding of people's behaviors had become more thorough. He understood how evil and cruel people could be.

"Where are they?" asked Zuo Shi.

Shi Yan pointed at a torn space slit. "Inside that space slit."

"Do we need to get in there?"

"Of course yes!"

The war chariot hissed, moving like a lightning strike and swaying through the space slit in just a blink of an eye.

They had crossed many brilliantly colorful streamers as if they were moving in a space-time tunnel. After a long time traveling, the war chariot halted.

"It's so cold!" Zuo Shi shivered. She looked ahead of them, becoming very surprised. "Ah, there's a sea. How could a sea exist inside the space tunnel?"

Ahead of them was a sea with murmuring waves. Snowflakes were falling above the sea. It was strange that this sea had colorful steam and mist hovering which decorated with the ribbon-like outer space streamers.

There was no earth and heaven energy, no sun, moon, or any star. In this closed world, Shi Yan and Zuo Shi couldn't sense any commotion of living beings. However, the magical sea was surging as if it was changing somehow.

As their war chariot was hovering above the sea, Shi Yan at his Ethereal God Realm also felt chilled. He couldn't help but shudder.

The icy aura came from the sea, but that sea only had snowflakes. The water wasn't frozen. Gusts of cold wind blew from a far distance, which was so severe that they could freeze people's bones and crack them.

Zuo Shi had reached Original God Realm for not a long time. Her small face was pale, which showed how tremendous the cold air emitted from this sea was.

Blocks of green, purple, blue, and red smokes hovered above the sea as if they were the rising sea water.

A cluster of misty green clouds slowly approached their war chariot.

The rigid war chariot melted as the green smoke covered it. The iron was dissolved, oozing.

Shi Yan changed his visage and shouted, "It's poisonous! An extreme poison!"

He was so frightened, pulling Zuo Shi's hand to take her to another area. He sternly looked at the green misty clouds. He took a deep breath, "That smoke contains extreme poison that can erode

even metals. We can't stand it."

"So dangerous!" Zuo Shi discolored.

Shi Yan didn't reply and just frowned. He released his Soul Consciousness, wandering around the different colored clusters of cloud above the sea.

After a while, his face became more grimaced. Those colorful clusters of clouds were extremely poisonous. And among them, the purple one was the most dangerous. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't even stand it. The poison of that cloud could stick on the wisps of Soul Consciousness to enter his soul altar. It seemed to be able to attack the soul altar.

He hurried to urge the co-soul, using the heaven flame to create a flaming barrier to prevent the poison from entering his soul altar.

Those colorful clusters of smoke came from the evaporating mist of the sea. It was like something extremely noxious was hiding under the sea and releasing the toxins.

The location of Blood Devil he had sensed was also under the sea, which made Shi Yan more anxious and down.

He was sure that Blood Devil's group was under this sea. Although he didn't know what they were dealing with, he knew that their situation wasn't favorable.

"Don't use your Soul Consciousness!" shouted Shi Yan.

Zuo Shi shivered like a bird perching on a curved branch of a tree. Her small face paled as she spoke with fear, "The Soul Consciousness can't bear it, either?"

Shi Yan darkened his face, looking at the sea underneath. His brows knitted tightly.

There's a sea inside the space tunnel. It was a new experience for him, though. He didn't know if this sea was formed naturally or if someone had set it up with a particular purpose. However, he

could confirm that something really perilous was hiding under the sea. Otherwise, Blood Devil's group wouldn't be restrained down there.

"What should we do now?" asked Zuo Shi.

Shi Yan kept silent, releasing his Soul Consciousness one more time. This time, he didn't dare to investigate those toxic clusters of smoke but sneaked into the sea.

"Ssssss!"

Shi Yan took a breath of cold air. He was pale. He couldn't help but scream. "The sea water's freezing. My Soul Consciousness can't stand it. F*ck! What the heck is this f*cking place?"

Hearing him cursing in fear, Zuo Shi's small face wore a grimace. She didn't dare to release her Soul Consciousness. She looked at him uneasily. "Why do I feel everything is wrong here?"

"Yeah, you're right," Shi Yan sighed. "Before we figure out how, we shouldn't do anything rashly. Don't use your Soul Consciousness, either. Stay away from any unusual things. The sea water, the colorful smokes. Stay away from them. Those things can kill you. Our enemies must have absolute confidence as they had brought Blood Devil's group here. They must think that Blood Devil's group couldn't wiggle out of this place and that they will die eventually."

His mind was clear now.

Blood Devil and the others were at Incipient God Realm. If they were moved here, the one who did that apparently thought that this area could confine even Incipient God Realm experts, preventing them from using their supernatural powers.

Even the mighty Blood Devil was confined undersea. If Shi Yan could investigate it easily, it would be unusual, though.

"Even the Soul Consciousness couldn't get through that sea water. No doubt we would die immediately if we dip our God Body

into the sea." Zuo Shi stuck her tongue out, her innocent face fearful. "Did my old man die?"

"I don't know." Shi Yan was also confused and anxious. He frowned deeply. "For the time being, don't act recklessly. Let me check the situation first. We should walk around here to see if we can find an entrance..."

While talking, he held Zuo Shi's small and soft hand, gingerly moving above the sea and avoiding the colorful smokes.

Moving around the sea, he found that it was enormous. After one hour, he hadn't gotten out of the sea's area yet. He couldn't find any entrance.

Shi Yan felt his hands were tied.

Thinking strenuously for a while, he found that he had no solution. Eventually, he made up his mind. He would need help from the Ring Spirit of the Blood Vein Ring. He needed to know if it knew anything about this poisonous sea.

He contacted the Ring Spirit immediately, telling it the situation in the hope of receiving some guidance.

"Ah!" the Ring Spirit sent him a frightened soul message. "Why did it appear here? Why does it still exist?"

Chapter 1048: Departed Spirit Jellyfish

From what Shi Yan experienced, the Ring Spirit was rarely surprised. As it acted differently this time, Shi Yan felt his heart sinking. He knew that the situation wasn't right.

"This enemy is hard to deal with. Its entire body contains extremely toxins. It eats other venomous or poisonous things to grow. It's the most dangerous creature in the universe." The Ring Spirit sounded pretty serious. "You shouldn't mess with it. At your realm, you're not its opponent."

Right at the beginning, the Ring Spirit told Shi Yan to give up on it.

"What is it?" Shi Yan changed his face, but he was still persistent.

"It's called Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It's a unique living form from outer space. It doesn't have a skeleton. It's huge with viscous skin and flesh. This kind of space jellyfish has many holes in its body where it fumes smoke, which contains deadly toxins.

The Ring Spirit explained slowly. "When the Departed Spirit Jellyfish appears in a star area that star area will eventually fall into a deadly disaster. All the creatures will be poisoned to death. It used to appear before. It had finished two-star areas and turned them into desolate, dead areas. Nothing survived."

"It usually lives in extremely cold seas. It won't leave the sea, but it will continuously release the toxic smokes. If any creature contacts those toxic smokes, it will be poisoned to death."

"Doesn't it have any weakness?" Shi Yan was frightened. "The Incipient God Realm experts can't resist it, either?"

"You need to know what the power Upanishad that Incipient God Realm expert cultivates." The Ring Spirit sighed, "If you've reached Incipient God Realm, you would have had a chance to finish it and you may receive a surprising benefit. Anyway, the other Incipient

God Realm experts couldn't do anything to it."

"Why do you say so?"

"It should be an expert who has fused with the Origin, which is also the heaven flames. After he's reached Incipient God Realm, he can burn and refine it. If you want to refine it, you must burn the cold sea it's dwelling in. After that, you can attack its body directly."

"Besides the flames, we don't have any other option?"

"The body of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish is both liquid and solid. Even if it's torn apart, it can close the cut almost immediately. Its body is undying somehow. Physical attacks are not effective on it. Its toxins could enter the soul altar. Moreover, its soul is very odd. It's the combination of different souls and consciousness. When one soul is smashed, it can replicate another. Only an Incipient God Realm individual who cultivates Fire power Upanishad can refine it directly.

"Only the ancient continents have the Origin. However, in this vast universe, the ancient continents are extremely rare. Also, it's even rarer to see the warriors who could fuse the soul with the heaven flames of the Origin. Almost none of them can reach Incipient God Realm, though. If you can find this kind of character, you shouldn't think about attacking Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It's just tying yourself to trouble. You will be finished completely."

"Can the warrior cultivating Space power at Incipient God Realm deal with it?" Shi Yan tried to make it clearer.

"Someone cut space and threw your friends into the sea?" The Ring Spirit was surprised. "Although the expert who cultivates Space power Upanishad at Incipient God Realm can't burn the jellyfish, he has the ability to protect himself. If you can find someone with Space power Upanishad at Incipient God Realm, perhaps you can use the same method to rescue your friends from

the space undersea. But you can't kill the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. However, the warriors who cultivate Space power Upanishad to Incipient God Realm are even rarer than Incipient God Realm experts with the flames of the Origin."

Pausing for a while, the Ring Spirit added, "Your enemy is this kind of expert. So, the existence at the same level may not be able to move the space he had cut off. This option is much more difficult. I think you can't do it."

Shi Yan was worried. He couldn't stand listening to the Ring Spirit crossing off all the options anymore. "You don't have any solution, do you?"

"A solution... I have one, but it seems difficult. It depends on your effort." The Ring Spirit pondered. After a while, it gave Shi Yan a shaking solution.

"How do I do it?"

"You still need to find an expert at Incipient God Realm who has fused with the Origin. It's almost impossible for ordinary people. But if it's you, you will have a chance..."

"What's that searching method?"

"Come to the fountainhead of Powers Upanishads. The ones who have fused with the flames of the Origin can visit the fountainhead of Powers Upanishads too. If you have good fortune, you can meet the Incipient God Realm experts from other star areas. If the other knows about the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, he or she will cross the star area to get here. I told you. Even to those kinds of existences, the Departed Spirit Jellyfish is enough to make their hearts beat faster!"

"Is it good for him?"

"Big benefits. They will move, knowing the precondition that they know about the magical effects of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish."

"All right, let me try."

"Go to the fountainhead of power Upanishad and search in the area where the Fire power Upanishad is the most turbulent. You don't need to mind the other areas."

"Got it."

After he was done talking with the Ring Spirit, he lingered for a while above the cold sea. Suddenly, he pulled Zuo Shi's hand and took her out of this place, returning through the space tunnel.

"What are you doing? Giving up?" Zuo Shi was so surprised as she couldn't explain his deed. Her small hand struggled, trying to get rid of his grip. She told him bravely. "I want to save them."

"This place isn't good to linger in. Perhaps, there's some trap around that the enemy has set up before. If we are exposed, we don't even have a chance to think about the solution." Shi Yan didn't mind Zuo Shi wiggling. He just tightened his grip and pulled her away. We will find a solution after we get out of here. Of course, I won't just stand and stare."

Listening to him, Zuo Shi calmed down.

The two of them returned to the meteor where they had found the remains of the Holy Beast Black Tortoise. They got inside the meteor where Shi Yan took a deep breath and spoke to Zuo Shi, "I need to cultivate for a while right here. You shouldn't disturb me."

Zuo Shi looked at him with surprise. "Do you have any plan?"

"Yeah, I have a plan. We have a tiny chance, but we must try anyway." Shi Yan nodded.

Zuo Shi didn't say more. She sat down in front of him tenderly and obediently.

In the next moment, she found Shi Yan's body shake a little bit. Her beautiful eyes brightened up and didn't stop looking Shi Yan even for just a blink. She suddenly covered her mouth to not let

herself scream in fear.

She found that after Shi Yan had shaken for a while, his soul seemed to leave his body. Shi Yan sitting in front of her now was just a body without any soul energy fluctuations. This finding filled Zuo Shi with fear as she didn't know the reason. Her eyes became dull.

Zuo Shi remembered his advice. She didn't dare to bother him or create any commotion. She just sat and watched him cautiously.

Although she didn't know why Shi Yan was doing this strange course of action, she knew Shi Yan was defenseless at this moment. If someone attacked him, he couldn't do anything to resist. Zuo Shi understood that he trusted her utterly. That was why he had deliberately entered such a vulnerable state.

Zuo Shi was touched and frightened at the same time. She made up her mind to protect Shi Yan in his strange condition with her best efforts. She must not let anyone disturb him.

In the magical fountainhead of power Upanishad, two souls like the ignis fatuus were bobbing. They were Shi Yan's host soul and co-soul.

Every time he had entered this magical space, he appeared in this same particular area, not missed by even an inch. When he was at Original God Realm, the area that his two souls could access was limited. After he had reached Ethereal God Realm, his soul energy was increased massively, so he could move to a larger area.

He started to explore the strange territory.

He thought about the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. The more he thought, the more anxious he became. From what the Ring Spirit told him and the current location of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, Shi Yan vaguely knew the conspiracy of the Dark Shadow Clan and the God Clan.

The Departed Spirit Jellyfish stayed inside the space passage, which connected Agate Star Area and God Star Area of the God Clan. With its special features, once the Departed Spirit Jellyfish came to any star area, it always became the biggest nightmare of the entire place.

The God Clan and the Dark Shadow Clan had set up the jellyfish here. Shi Yan now knew their purpose.

From their point of view, if Shi Yan was a member of the God Clan or the Dark Shadow Clan, it would be much easier to invade Agate Star Area and capture the warriors and forces of the entire star area with the jellyfish there. It would be the best scenario.

However, if they met a stiff resistance or even failure, the price would be the significant loss of the God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan. Would it be much worse when the things they could claim couldn't make up the loss?

Could it be a better solution?

If their operation didn't go well, God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan would send the Departed Spirit Jellyfish to Agate Star Area with their brutal and cruel deeds. What could it do?

Shi Yan felt the hair on his nape rising.

Releasing the Departed Spirit Jellyfish to Agate Star Area would make the toxic creature release poisonous smoke that would poison the forces in Agate Star Area to death. Later on, the entire Agate Star Area would have no survivors. After that, they would move the Departed Spirit Jellyfish and Agate Star Area would become a territory of the God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan. From then on, they would be free to exploit any materials without facing any stubborn resistance. They would be able to claim everything in this star area.

As Shi Yan understood the conspiracy of the God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan, his heart sank to the bottom.

Too evil!

To invade a star area, they didn't hesitate to kill all the races and creatures of the entire star area. Billions of lives were going to be extinguished. This was too cruel and heartless, which was much more malicious than the most malevolent character.

Finally, Shi Yan knew the reason why the other creatures in the universe always hated and went against the God Clan.

He understood that he must defeat the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Otherwise, creatures in Agate Star Area would receive a deadly catastrophe. No one would be able to save them.

Shi Yan rushed.

He had moved around the fountainhead of power Upanishad for a long time, but he hadn't found any soul like him in this place. The vast universe had so many star areas with countless experts. However, just a few of them could enter this special place.

He knew that it would depend on his fortune, but he was rushing now. He had to find an Incipient God Realm expert who cultivated Fire power Upanishad and had fused with the Origin.

Shi Yan began to fly as fast as he could. The two souls moved like two shooting stars trying to locate the area of the Fires power Upanishads.

After an unknown time, his souls shook and sent out a vibe when he saw the gathering point of the Fires power Upanishad. He hurried to approach that area.

Chapter 1049: The Fountainhead of Powers Upanishad

Fires power Upanishads had many forms and each form had its own distinctive features. Relatively, there were many areas of fires power Upanishads in the fountainhead of power Upanishads. The different areas would have different fires power Upanishad, which could also depend on the realm of the warriors.

For example, warriors at Original God Realm, Ethereal God Realm, and Incipient God Realm had big differences between the Fires power Upanishad they had obtained.

When they cultivated in the fountainhead of power Upanishad, the areas suitable to them were different. Low-realm warriors found the area that suited their realms while the high-realm warriors could visit the area of more powerful and exquisite Fires power Upanishads.

The area where different Fires power Upanishads were weaving around that Shi Yan had just found was suitable for Ethereal God Realm experts to study.

The two clusters of fire that looked like weak ghost flames crossed the areas of the Thunder and Windstorm power Upanishads to gather at an area of the Fires power Upanishads.

That area was a sea of fire with clusters of fires flying around like red ribbons. Each bunch of fire seemed to have subtle changes all the time, which expressed their wild, brutal and hot features. The warriors who had fused with heaven flames could send their souls into those fireballs. As the fires were changing, they slowly tasted and studied the mysterious meanings of this class of power, which strengthened and advanced their realms.

Although Shi Yan's co-soul had fused with heaven flames, he didn't cultivate Fire power Upanishad. When he reached this area,

his host soul couldn't adapt well to the environment which made him uncomfortable.

Anyway, his co-soul felt relaxed and safe in this area.

"Ah!"

Shi Yan exhaled and his two souls turned into the shape of his body, looking in the same direction.

There were two souls moving in that area. They flew swiftly like flaming meteors. Shi Yan could distinguish between the two souls. One was a man and the other was a woman. They both looked elegant and beautiful.

However, those two souls weren't harmonious. They seemed to be arguing over something.

Apparently, the graceful woman was in the lower hand. She circled, trying to get rid of the sea of fire. She looked flustered and hurried.

Meanwhile, that man was laughing evilly. Neither slow nor fast, he released his soul magnetic field, blocking the area and preventing the woman from running away.

It was not the first time Shi Yan had entered the fountainhead of power Upanishads. He knew that if the soul wanted to leave this place, it had to stay away from the areas where the powers Upanishads were gathering. Then, it could leave this magical place immediately.

The female soul wanted to leave the fire power Upanishad's gathering point first and then leave this space.

The fountainhead of power Upanishad was the most mysterious place in this universe. Warriors who had fused with the Origin's heaven flames could send their souls here to study.

Those warriors could come from every corner of the universe. However, they all came to this place. When their souls came back

to their bodies, they would return to a different area.

The woman just needed to fly away from the area of the Fires power Upanishads so that she could return to her body. No matter how strong her enemy was, he couldn't cross the entire star area to chase after her. But if she couldn't escape the gathering point of the Fires power Upanishad, her soul couldn't return to her body. It would be really difficult.

Shi Yan stayed by the edge of that area and observed. His soul tried to sense.

He could hear the male soul teasing the woman. In this place, they didn't use verbal language to communicate. They used the soul to contact each other, which was much more convenient than talking. Only the souls could listen to such a conversation.

"Running eh? Stay here, girl. Let's have soul intercourse. Shall we have fun together? If you can please me, I won't smash your soul and take your wisp of Origin. We can stay in this magical area like a happy couple and enjoy those indescribable happy moments. Won't it be all about pleasure and joy?"

The sounds of the male soul expanded like a sound wave that was sent to every corner. He looked so excited and aroused, his handsome face filled with smiles.

"Get lost!" The woman didn't agree. She appeared to be frightened and agitated. "I will cultivate my way and you should cultivate your way. I don't want to have anything to do with you!"

Shi Yan was surprised. He continued to sense quietly.

After a while, he knew that they weren't the one he wanted to find.

Those people were from the different star areas. Since they had fused with the flame of the Origin, they met each other by chance in this area. They were likely the outstanding characters in their areas.

The souls could do magical sexual intercourse, which was rumored to be mysterious and even better than physical intercourse.

The man had an evil thought, obviously, and his realm was higher. He wanted to stay in this special area and have some soul intimacy, which was considered the most magical pleasure, with that woman. Meanwhile, the woman didn't want it. She wanted to get rid of him and leave. Unfortunately, the man's realm was higher than hers and he had set up a soul barrier, which prevented the woman from flying away.

That man should be at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm while the woman was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Although they could be famous in their areas, they weren't the ones Shi Yan wanted.

Observing for a while, as Shi Yan was hurried to find an Incipient God Realm expert, he didn't want to poke his nose into other people's business. He just wanted to defeat the Departed Spirit Jellyfish as soon as possible, so he prepared to leave already.

"Where are you from? Haha, I don't care what f*cking star area you're from. It's your honor to do soul intercourse with me. If I feel good, I will go to your star area to find you. I'm from the Ascot family of the God Clan. Our God Clan rules the whole universe. Receiving favor from me is your honor. Behave."

The God clansman called himself Spot. He smiled arrogantly.

"God Clan? You universe robbers! Who likes you?!" Hearing Spot reveal his identity, the woman didn't get happy. She got enraged, "You God Clan is a malignant tumor of the vast universe. You should be eradicated!"

Spot darkened his face. "How dare you wish my clan's demise! My clan has invaded half of this vast universe. My Clan will rule the whole universe! It's your fortune that I like you. If you don't behave, don't blame me."

"I'm not going to obey even if I have to die!" shouted the woman.

Shi Yan heard the man saying he was from the God Clan while he was hurrying to go. He halted.

"Bro, you shouldn't poke your nose into the other's business. There are some things you can't participate in." Spot seemed to find him earlier, sending over a soul message. "Well, you should take the chance to flee when I'm still busy! Or else, I wouldn't be afraid of smashing your soul first and then taking in your flaming Origin."

"Help me!" The woman struggled. She wasn't free to look around, so she didn't recognize Shi Yan. Hearing Spot, she reacted, shouted, and called for help.

Shi Yan's thoughts flickered. His two ghostly flames slowly turned into miniatures of his real body. They swayed, flying towards the gathering point of fires.

"You're from the Ascot family of the God Clan?" Shi Yan sent his soul message.

"You know my title but still dare to approach. You have guts." Spot swayed, his figure naturally handsome. He arched his long eyebrows, showing his arrogant face. "Oh, you made the flaming Origin your co-soul. Good though. You just have First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but you dare interfere with me? Want to die?"

Shi Yan wore a faint face, didn't answer him, and just looked at the two of them.

The figure that the woman turned into was just as big as a hand. However, she had delicate facial features accompanied by a sexy body. Her long hair cascaded like a waterfall. She looked like a fairy in people's dreams. No wonder why Spot of the God Clan had unleashed his animal instincts and forced her to do soul intercourse with him.

"You have only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm?" Hearing Spot,

the woman felt disappointed. She sighed, talking begrudgingly. "You should go. You can't help me. Don't get yourself involved."

The heaven flames could absorb each other. This rule was also applicable to the creatures that had fused with the flaming Origin. In this magical space, as long as he could smash the other's soul, he could take the flaming Origin that the other had absorbed and merge it with his own soul.

So if Shi Yan met any creature in this marvelous fountainhead of power Upanishads, it wasn't always something good to celebrate.

If the realms weren't too far from each other, he could be safe relatively. But if their realms had a big gap, the stronger would have malicious thoughts. He would destroy the soul of the weaker warrior to take the flaming Origin, which would strengthen his own soul.

Of course, it wasn't really good that the warrior should absorb more flaming Origin. He had to find a suitable aura to take in. Otherwise, it would bring him the counter effect.

When the woman heard that Shi Yan had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, she assumed that he wasn't an equal opponent of Spot. If he got involved, Spot would kill him and take his Origin.

"Let me check whether your flaming Origin is suitable for me or not." Spot smiled. A wave of subtle soul energy like a net extended from him towards Shi Yan's co-soul.

"Get lost!" Shi Yan's soul flickered. An icy cold aura arose from his co-soul, which was chilled to the bone. It had a faint blue color of falling snowflakes.

Spot was chilled. He frowned, contemplating for seconds. Suddenly, he screamed in fear, looking at Shi Yan. He couldn't hide his fright, though.

Shi Yan's co-soul contained ten different auras of flaming Origin.

It wasn't pure at all. Although Shi Yan was trying his best to hide it, Spot could still sense something. He was struck hard.

"You... How many people have you killed here?" Spot's eyes showed his fright. His soul shivered as he wanted to retreat. "Forget it. I'm having a bad day seeing you here. I'll leave that woman to you."

He thought that the ten auras of flaming Origin in Shi Yan's soul were the result of Shi Yan killing and robbing warriors with the flaming Origin in this magical place. He had done that himself, though. After many years wandering around in this place, he had just killed two souls to take two different flames.

As Shi Yan's soul had ten different flames, Spot thought that he was incomparably evil. Despite Shi Yan's low realm, Spot was still frightened.

He knew he'd encountered a bad, bad guy.

The woman was aghast. She looked at Shi Yan disbelievingly as she felt so chilled.

She knew how dangerous and fearful Spot was, and such a character had to retreat seeing Shi Yan, a warrior with a lower realm. To leave her to him, it was...

The woman instinctively assumed that Shi Yan was even countless more times brutal than Spot. She felt despair crawling on her body.

In her eyes, if Spot were a wolf, Shi Yan was the existence at the level of a brutal dragon!

Chapter 1050: Reverse in Just a Flash

After Spot said that, he immediately left.

The woman felt helplessly disappointed. She thought she had just escaped the wolf den and now, she fell into a tiger's mouth. Looking at Shi Yan, she felt her scalp tingling.

She had the same thought with Spot. She assumed that the ten heaven flames in Shi Yan's Origin were the results of his hunt of experts. She wasn't sure how malicious Shi Yan was. Even Spot had to run away despite having a higher realm. How could she escape this disaster with her terrible luck?

"If you are a member of the Ascot family from God Clan, you... shouldn't leave," Shi Yan's soul suddenly changed.

Layers of blue flame with the icy aura dashed towards Spot.

Spot was about to run. His face changed as his soul turned into a flame dashing toward the edge of the Fires power Upanishads area.

Shi Yan's ruthlessness terrified Spot. With one level different between their realms, he was haughty enough to attack Spot. In Spot's mind, Shi Yan was that sort of skilled assassin. Spot didn't have the thought of engaging in a fight. He just wanted to leave here as soon as possible.

The icy cold flame glowed in blue halo. In the beginning, it was just like a small flame. In just a blink, it expanded massively.

The dim blue flame burned ahead of Spot. The fire suddenly burst out radiantly with the chilly to the bone aura that filled the area and froze it. Spot's soul was frozen.

He discolored, talking with rage. "Dude, don't be too harsh! I've left that girl to you. What else do you want?"

While talking, he urged his flaming energy. Two flames shot out from the pupils of his soul. The flames twisted like dragons

patrolling around him to wash away the cold energy Shi Yan that had released.

A spot was surprised.

He figured out that the flame he had condensed could burn down Shi Yan's barrier easily. He stopped and thought.

Shi Yan's main power wasn't Fire. He didn't cultivate the heaven flames, which were fused, making his co-soul. Moreover, he wasn't good at soul fighting. So, when he released the extremely cold energy, he couldn't harm Spot.

Frowning, he continued to gather more energy. Another dark blue flame shot out with his Soul Consciousness, covering Spot.

This time, Spot hovered at his spot, opened his mouth to spurt out an orange-red fireball. That fireball turned into a flaming phoenix shortly, which then extinguished Shi Yan's blue flame directly.

Spot grinned fiendishly. "Oh well, empty vessels make the most sound. You motherf*cker, you startled me!"

He was able to simply dissolve Shi Yan's two attacks. Spot didn't want to leave anymore. He laughed evilly. "No wonder why you've made the flaming Origin your co-soul. Your ten heaven flames aren't harmonious, though. Well, such a scum. I did think that you were really tough."

The woman was dumbstruck, looking at Shi Yan oddly.

She also thought that Shi Yan was powerful. Otherwise, Spot wouldn't have to leave that fast. However, she could never imagine that Shi Yan's attacks were dissolved easily. At this moment, as Spot didn't want to leave anymore, she vaguely understood something.

Looking at Shi Yan, the woman had a contempt look. "You're not strong enough and your realm isn't too profound. You dared to make a mess. Oh, you brought yourself into deadly trouble."

The woman was enraged, glaring at Shi Yan.

You scared Spot! You just needed to stand there and pose your hotshot's appearance. Spot would run away. You and I would have been able to escape this! Why do you want to show off like that! Now your weak competence is exposed. You've dragged me into bad luck with you. You moron!

The woman cursed Shi Yan under her breath.

"Wow, ten different heaven flames of the Origin. Haha, I'm lucky this time. Not only have I found a beautiful girl to do soul intercourse with, but I also get the flames. Haha, I'm so happy." Spot laughed excitedly, approaching Shi Yan.

The flaming phoenix he had spurted out spread the wings and made beautiful curves in the air, releasing waves of fire and burning heat.

The fire phoenix came close. It enlarged. The bird wings with a dazzling halo now turned into fire snakes, which looked indeed beautiful and scary. They were the attacks that could burn down the soul.

Shi Yan's co-soul changed again, summoning another heaven flame. With the power of the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, the energy released was a thunderbolt. The flame was now the key to unlock scorching thunder and lightning. All were aimed at that flaming phoenix.

The blinding halo of the impact expanded in this magical place. The flaming phoenix meandered. Its feathers shot out brutal fires. It wasn't afraid of the energy of the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame as the bird crossed the layers of lightning to approach Shi Yan.

"This flaming aura has thunderbolts! Awesome! Really awesome!" Spot was so excited and he screamed, "If the warrior who cultivate Thunderbolt power Upanishad got this kind of heaven flame to

fuse with it, he would achieve big things. What a pity you morons can't promote its supernatural abilities!"

Spot laughed. His soul changed when the flames flew out of his eyes, which were really sharp like metal with the terrifying fire energy.

Shi Yan changed his attacks continually. He had used all ten kinds of heaven flames. However, he was still in the lower hand. He had to move continually to avoid Spot's vehement attacks.

The ten heaven flames with the aura of the Origin had entirely merged with his co-soul. Anyway, Shi Yan had never put any effort to cultivate the co-soul. His understanding of the Origin wasn't deep enough so his attacks were limited. He couldn't promote the true power of the ten heaven flames to the upper limit.

The weakness of having blended, impure powers was revealed at this moment. Meanwhile, Spot's flaming Origin was honest and terrifyingly pure. Despite Shi Yan's different flames, he had to continually back off.

It was the first time Shi Yan used the co-soul to fight. However, he couldn't really use the abilities of different flames. He knew his mistake now. He was sitting on a pile of treasures, but he didn't know how to use them.

The woman saw him struggling hard, her face more disdain. She hesitated for a while, looking around. She was startled realizing that she should take this chance when Spot was concentrating on Shi Yan. She sneakily flew backward, approaching the edge of the gathering point of Fires power Upanishad.

She didn't mind whether Shi Yan could survive or not. In her eyes, Shi Yan was a moron. It was obvious that his competence was just trash and he dared to provoke Spot with it. Eventually, he had to take such a result.

She knew Shi Yan wasn't Spot's equal opponent, so she had to

save her life first. At first, she moved slowly and then accelerated, turning into a tender shooting fire to escape.

"Haha, well well well, I've always laid my eye on you. Don't think about running away." Spot smiled contentedly. "Origin and the beauty, I want to have both. Stay here and watch. After I'm done with this stupid boy, I'll have fun with you."

Ten flames shot out from Spot's pupils, which had triggered some magical powers of this area. Each of the flames started to set up the fire barrier added with Spot's soul.

When the woman barged into a barrier, she felt like she was hitting a cotton cluster, which prevented her from getting away.

She turned around, glaring at Spot with rage. Pondering for a while, she made up her mind and shouted, "Hey dumbass, you and I should attack him! We will join hands. Even if we have to die, we must skin him!"

The woman was indignant. She didn't think about leaving anymore. She turned around, her succulent lips trembling. She opened her mouth and spurted out a dazzling fireball. This fireball was light purple with marvelous fire. It revolved in the sky, making a beautiful purple curve and aiming at Spot's back.

Shi Yan looked at her and felt things were getting more interesting. Using the co-soul as the source of energy to fight wasn't familiar to him and he couldn't use the stronger ability of the flaming Origin.

As he had used the co-soul to fight, he had recognized his mistakes. So, even if he wasted more time, he couldn't gain anything.

Thus, he decided to end this fight.

He began to use the host soul...

Thoughts changed. While the co-soul was still engaging in the battle with Spot, Shi Yan's host soul took action.

A thought with the power of the desolate Death intention grumbly gushed out from his host soul like a disastrous flood. The will of Death that could disorder the soul overflowed everywhere from him as the core. It swarmed towards Spot in just a blink of an eye.

While fighting with Shi Yan's co-soul, Spot suddenly felt fear. He was struck, his soul twisting and shivering. Abruptly, he got a desperate feeling that he would die here. Instantaneously, he knew what had just happened. He discolored in fright. "You... Your host soul is much stronger than your co-soul!"

Spot deeply regretted. He finally knew that Shi Yan hadn't used his real competence to fight with him yet.

The co-soul was apparently Shi Yan's worst ability. And Spot now knew the reason why Shi Yan didn't consider the flaming Origin his main power Upanishad. It wasn't that Shi Yan was stupid. He just had a better option!

He regretted that he would have a big trouble this time. He shouted, "I'm a member of the Ascot family in the God Clan. My soul is recorded in the clan. If I die, my clan will know it immediately. They will hunt you down. No matter where you are, you can't escape our Ascot family's pursuit!"

Spot looked strong, but he was weak as he started to use his strong background to threaten other people.

Shi Yan didn't change his visage, talking calmly. "I'm going to kill the member of your Ascot family. If I didn't know you were from this family, I wouldn't interfere with someone else's business."

Shi Yan's power Upanishad changed the second time!

Swoosh!

A space blade condensed, slashing towards Spot's soul. Being invaded by the Death power Upanishad, his power Upanishad was disordered. At this moment, he didn't have any means to resist. As

he had concentrated on the battle with Shi Yan's co-soul, his soul was defenseless.

Swish!

Spot's soul was halved by the space blade.

The space blade continued to cut him. After several seconds, Spot's soul was minced into many pieces.

Spot died at his spot.

The woman was turning around to assist "little moron" Shi Yan seeing that she was discolored in fright with a deep, fearful impression.

Chapter 1051: The Talkative Woman

Spot was dead. His soul was minced. Traces of his existence in this world gradually vanished.

The woman was scared. She dully looked at Shi Yan as fear rose higher in her heart.

Shi Yan was in the lower realm, but he could burst out and kill Spot in just a blink of an eye. Now, she thought that Spot wasn't wrong. Shi Yan was actually that sort of brutal and heartless character. He wasn't the "little dumbass" that she'd imagined.

He was actually a bad murderous star! The woman regretted so much. She shivered as she didn't know how to deal with him.

While she was so frightened, a red-orange flame flew out from the remnant of Spot's soul. That flame was palm-sized, bouncing continually. It had life energy fluctuation.

Shi Yan was surprised. He looked at that small flame, astounded.

He knew that the flame was also a wisp of the Origin, which had fused with Spot's soul. After Spot was killed, it had escaped his confinement. Now it was an available flame with intelligence that he could absorb.

However, Shi Yan hadn't reacted timely. The magical red-orange flame bounced for a while as if it was very afraid of Shi Yan. Shortly after, the flame flew out, entering the woman's soul.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck, his face angry.

He was about to take in that flaming Origin. However, that flame had life, so it could choose its master. Apparently, the flame had chosen the woman, who was watching aside.

She was also startled. She was dull as she received the big, sudden fortune. She immediately became restlessly fearful. Her face changed dramatically.

She instinctively assumed that Shi Yan was harsh and ruthless. As he could gather ten wisps of flaming Origin in this area, he must have killed a lot of experts. This sort of character would have an intense, obsessive desire for the spoils. She was petrified. She had taken in the spoils that belonged to Shi Yan. How could she not be frightened?

"I... I didn't want to take it. It... it came to me." The woman was frightened. She instinctively moved backward. "I just know how to take the flaming Origin. I don't know how to extract it. I can't return it to you... Please... Don't hurt me."

She was so frightened as she worried that Shi Yan would kill her. Witnessing Spot's tragic death, she knew that she wasn't Shi Yan's equal opponent. Even if she told him her strong background, she couldn't stop him anyway.

Spot was a member of the Ascot family from the God Clan. However, he was killed after he had revealed his identity. Could she dodge this kalpa?

The woman was so scared. She didn't dare to move. She was so hurried and anxious that it looked like she was about to cry. "Please don't do that. Even if I die, I won't do soul intercourse with you. I... I have a lover already."

Shi Yan was surprised. He didn't know whether to cry or laugh. He looked at her, talking impatiently. "I killed Spot not to claim you. I don't have time and effort to waste here with you. Do what you need to do."

The woman was startled. She carefully assessed him to see if he was serious or not.

She looked at Shi Yan, hurried to back off. As soon as Shi Yan made a move, she was going to parry with her max force.

However, Shi Yan didn't do anything or release any strange energy. The woman slowly moved backward until she reached the

edge of the place. Seeing Shi Yan hovering idle, she leaped out of the area of Fires power Upanishads. Her face was filled with happy smiles.

She knew she was safe.

Outside the area of Fires power Upanishads, as soon as she wanted, she could return to her body and escape the fountainhead of power Upanishad.

This time, she thought she had to endure a big kalpa. She hadn't expected to be safe. But now, in the end, she even got a flame that suited her power, which was an immense benefit to her realm and life form. She was so happy.

Leaving the area of power Upanishad, she knew she was safe now. The stress and fear she had were washed away. She gathered her guts and shouted at Shi Yan, who was still in the area of the Fires power Upanishad. "Hey, you're dumb, you know that?"

Now, she wasn't afraid that Shi Yan could threaten her. Her mischievous character burst out. Her beautiful and witty eyes rolled and teased, "You're dumb, really. The ten wisps of flaming Origin you have collected can't mingle with each other. And if you have taken that flame one step earlier, it wouldn't have escaped. I wonder how you have collected those ten flames. You're too dumb."

Shi Yan was surprised listening to the woman teasing. He gave a reluctant smile, waving his hand impatiently. "Don't be wordy. Go away."

The woman kept smiling. "You can't do anything to me now. Why should I be hurried? I'm telling you, you're in big trouble. The Ascot family of the God Clan is very strong. Each member of the main lineage will save one wisp of their soul in some hidden place. Once one of them dies, they will know who the murderer is. The God Clan in the vast universe is the overlord. No matter where you're from, they can track you down. So, you've got bad luck this

time."

"Thank you for reminding me, but I don't want to waste my saliva talking to you." Shi Yan furrowed his brows, flying out of the area of Fires power Upanishads. He released his Soul Consciousness to find another place of more profound powers Upanishads. He was trying to find Incipient God Realm existences he needed.

"Aren't you here to cultivate?" asked the woman seeing him flying away. "You haven't surpassed Ethereal God Realm yet. This area keeps the subtle Fires power Upanishads, which are much suitable for you. What makes you get out of there? For your information, there aren't any more suitable Fires power Upanishads for you to cultivate besides this place. If you want to cultivate, you should stay here."

Listening to her, Shi Yan was touched. "Are you familiar with this area?"

The woman nodded arrogantly. "Of course. I often cultivate here, so I know it well."

"So, do you know any area of Fires power Upanishads that is suitable for Incipient God Realm experts to cultivate?" Shi Yan hastened to ask her. "Since I have saved you once and gave you that wisp of flaming Origin, tell me what you know."

"The flaming Origin came to me. You didn't give it to me. I don't owe you anything." The woman pouted as if she didn't appreciate his deed. Pausing for a while, she said relaxedly. "Anyway, you aren't like Spot. You didn't want to harass me because of my beauty. For this point, I can tell you a place."

"Please."

"But your realm isn't high. You can't cultivate in that area. Why do you need to go there?"

"I want to find an expert who has fused with the flaming Origin

and is at Incipient God Realm in any star area. I'm in a hurry."

"What do you want? Do you want to die? Your soul has ten wisps of different flaming Origin. If you meet such a character, you will be killed even before you have a chance to talk. They would kill you to take the Origin. Are you really stupid?" the woman was astounded.

As Shi Yan was so worried, he was enraged. "You're too talkative! Can you stop talking nonsense? Just show me the way. You don't need to mind anything else!"

"I won't tell you!" She snorted as if she was also angry. She talked to him arrogantly, "There are so many men chasing after me in my star area. I didn't give them a glance. You bastard dare to say I'm talkative. Show me a grim face, eh. You don't have a bit of the manner of a gentleman! I'm not going to help you."

Shi Yan was bewildered, cursing under his breath.

Obviously, this woman was indulged since she was a little girl. Although she was young, she had reached First Sky of Ethereal God Realm and fused with the flaming Origin. In any star area, she could be an outstanding character. Moreover, she was really pretty and her background force was also influential, perhaps. Naturally, she had developed her classy personality. As she felt Shi Yan couldn't intimidate her, she exposed her real self. The manner of a haughty lady appeared.

Shi Yan felt reluctant as he knew it was impossible to suppress this woman when he had left the area of Fires power Upanishads. She could leave this area at any minute. That was why she wasn't afraid of him anymore. Talking reasonably to women was something that gives people a headache. Shi Yan sighed, speaking curtly. "Alright, please. May I ask the beautiful lady over there the direction to the area of Fires power Upanishads that is suitable for the Incipient God Realm experts?"

"Now you talk." The lady grinned contentedly. "But I'm kind

enough to remind you this. You will die if you go there."

"Yeah, right. I don't want to live anymore. Please show me the way so I can get myself killed there." Shi Yan felt so annoyed. This woman was too talkative. She had said many things but it wasn't what he wanted to know. He hated that he couldn't scold her directly.

"Oh hey, why do you need to find an Incipient God Realm expert?"

"To give him a chance as big as the sky." Shi Yan said through his gritted teeth.

"Ah? What kind of chance is that? Can you tell me more? I'm interested."

"It has nothing to do with you!"

"No no no! I can help you find an Incipient God Realm expert who has fused with heaven flame of the Origin. The place I told you hasn't received an Incipient God Realm expert for dozens or hundreds of years. If you want to go there, you have to wait for many years to see one. But if I agree to help you, it will be so fast!" The woman stopped for a while and then said arrogantly, "My teacher is an Incipient God Realm expert who has fused with the heaven flame. If the thing you say could help her, I can ask her to meet you."

Shi Yan was shaken. He pondered for a while and then said, "Inside a space tunnel in our star area has the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. If your teacher knows about this creature, she would be interested in it."

"Departed Spirit Jellyfish?" The woman's beautiful eyes sparkled. She hurried to scream. "I know it. I've heard about it from my teacher. Your place has the Jellyfish? Are you sure?"

"Nonsense! That thing could invade my star area. If I can't find an Incipient God Realm expert with the heaven flame of the

Origin, our star area will receive an apocalypse that leaves no survivor. Otherwise, why would I hurry to enter this place?"

"Wait for me! I'll come back shortly! Wait for me. I'm going to bring my teacher here. It will take half a month back. I will come back. Wait for me!"

Listening to him, the woman looked hurried, but she was still talkative. After that, her soul faded as she disappeared little by little.

Chapter 1052: A Whole Entity

Shi Yan was happy immediately. It was like he was lost in a jungle that he couldn't find the way out of but by the end of the day, he saw a village.

The talkative girl became excited from hearing about the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. She looked thrilled even more than Shi Yan. She left the fountainhead of power Upanishads shortly after.

Shi Yan knew that he had to wait here for a while. He contemplated for a while before returning to the area of the Fires power Upanishads, hovering in there.

After a fight with Spot, Shi Yan knew that he hadn't invested in the co-soul yet. Thus, he couldn't promote the abilities of the co-soul.

His co-soul was formed by his soul and the Origin of Grace Mainland. Grace Mainland was a rare ancient continent in the vast sea of stars. Of course, its Origin was compelling and magical. If ordinary people got it, they would invest their whole life effort to study it.

Anyway, Shi Yan knew that he couldn't do that. His host soul had more mysterious and mighty abilities. Space, Death and Life, and Star power Upanishads were the rare and peak powers Upanishads in this universe. Shi Yan didn't feel anything wrong with investing in these powers.

However, he was wrong that he hadn't done anything with his co-soul.

As he had to wait here for a while, he decided to sink into the Fires power Upanishads area and use his co-soul as the foundation to learn the mysteries of the flames.

The co-soul had ten different heaven flames. While hovering in this magical area, Shi Yan slowly understood...

The co-soul contained ten different heaven flames. Although they stayed together, their auras were identifiable. Ten heaven flames circling the co-soul released different energy fluctuations. Some of them were similar as if they could fuse with each other one more time.

Shi Yan calmed his mind, sending his consciousness on the flames to study.

Among the ten heaven flames of the Origin, the Vermilion Bird True Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Purgatory True Flame all had scorching auras, which had a similar frequency of energy fluctuations. They seemed to be able to blend with each other one more time.

Shi Yan made up his mind, sending his Soul Consciousness to the three heaven flames with the same characteristics. He tried to concentrate his mind to begin studying them.

Gradually, Shi Yan found that the three heaven flames' fluctuations happened as if they were connecting the flames inside the Fires power Upanishads area. His soul felt something suddenly reflect in his heart. The auras of the three heaven flames were now like three threads, slowly approaching...

Today, two halos flashed outside the area of the Fires power Upanishads. The light slowly transformed, creating the shapes of two women.

A mischievous girl that looked like a little nymph with a small, elegant face had her body covered in a blurry dark red halo. She was agile but tender.

The other was a beautiful woman in her thirties. She had a high updo hairstyle with a noble and refined makings. Her voluptuous body was covered by a blue halo, which exposed only her porcelain arms and a pair of mysterious deep eyes that showed her different indescribable emotions.

"Master, he's over there," said the girl, "He's dumb and his verbal language is vulgar. I don't know if he told me the truth. The Departed Spirit Jellyfish is an ancient being in legends. Even you haven't seen it before. We don't have such fate to meet it. That man has ten auras of the flaming Origin. His flames aren't harmonious, though. I don't know what he thinks... He's shallow, I suppose."

"Little Fei, you said that when the soul of the God-man called Spot vanished, the wisp of flaming Origin proactively flew towards you... Is it true?" The noble, beautiful woman pondered for a while before asking.

"Yes, of course, it's true. I didn't even move. That flame flew to me. Hehe, I'm outstanding. It's normal that that flame likes me. What's strange here?"

"Heaven flames have intellect. They know they should stay with strong warriors. From what you told me, that young man is much stronger than you. That heaven flame should have gone to him. It's strange, you see."

"Nah, he isn't strong. If he was strong enough, would he collect heaven flames with different features? I think he's just a dumbass. He knows nothing. Perhaps, he comes from a low-level star area."

"If he came from a low-level star area, he wouldn't be able to cultivate to this level. And he wouldn't dare to kill Spot after knowing his identity. This man is... extraordinary."

The two women with different markings were whispering to each other while entering the area of Fires power Upanishads. The elegant, beautiful woman glanced at Shi Yan from a far distance. She was shocked, her face changed immediately. "Oh, that's how it is..."

"What?" The girl didn't understand anything.

The beautiful woman sighed weakly, looking at Shi Yan and her

face admiring. "That kid is so lucky!"

"What kind of luck? If he was lucky, why did that heaven flame leave him to enter my soul proactively?" The girl muttered in disagreement.

"That heaven flame has intellect. It knows it would never have a chance to fuse with that man's soul. That's why it chose you." The woman shook her head, explaining. "It's because that young man's soul is a whole entity."

"I don't get it." The girl was bewildered.

"Wisps of flaming Origin in this world come from ancient continents. Each ancient continent could give birth to different heaven flames. Warriors who have fused with the heaven flames like us have two shortcuts to make our living form perfect and increase our realms."

The beautiful woman said softly, "The first way is to use the heaven flames with the same aura. It's similar to what you and I are doing. We can search for the heaven flames in different star areas as long as they have the same features as our flames. When we fuse with them, our realms will be increased subtly and magically. Our souls will also evolve."

"You said that when you taught me. You said it's our best opportunity." The girl was still baffled. "And now you're telling me we still have another method."

"The reason why I didn't tell you that because that method isn't suitable for you and me. So, I didn't teach you." The woman sighed and then continued, "The ancient continent in our star area had disappeared for a long time. We don't know where the heaven flames it had created had gone. We are so lucky we have two of them. It's impossible to gather them all."

She continued to explain, "The second method is to gather all the heaven flames that the Origin of an ancient continent had created.

Although the auras and characteristics of the heaven flames from the same Origin aren't harmonious, they can fuse with each other eventually even though it would take a lot of time. This kind of cultivating method is one level higher than our current method. Well, let's say it like this. Warriors like us would have to spend a lot of time and effort to gather the heaven flames with the same aura and features. Anyway, we will never reach the perfect state. Meanwhile, the warriors who could gather all the heaven flames that are from the same Origin of an ancient continent could make their soul perfectly complete. They could have many incredible abilities."

Pausing for a while, the beautiful woman sighed. "That young man is the second type of warrior. The ten different heaven flames in his body come from the same ancient continent. They have similar auras of the Origin. Once he fuses with them completely, his soul will be perfect. His level was higher than ours right from the start. The heaven flame that came to you knows that the heaven flames in his body are a whole entity now. It wouldn't have room to grow. That was why it chose your soul to stay in."

"So he won't need any other flames of the Origin?" The girl vaguely got it.

"Of course. The route he has chosen is the second method I've told you, which is more reasonable and stable. He has successfully gathered all the heaven flames of an ancient continent. If he continues to gather the heaven flames of the other ancient continents, it's stupid. The dummy you say is much smarter and luckier than you. He knew his direction. It's not what you can imagine. Sigh, that kid is really lucky that he could gather all the heaven flame of the same ancient continent. He makes us envy him, indeed."

The girl didn't talk more, her face dispirited.

"He's trying to fuse the flaming Origin. He's heading to the utmost step by step. When he reaches Incipient God Realm, his

attainment will surpass mine." The woman paused and then forced a smile, "I do want to curse this guy. He's so lucky but he has just wasted his fortune by making the heaven flames of the Origin his co-soul. Does he know that for warriors with the heaven flames, gathering all ten heaven flames from the same ancient continent is just a chance that we can't even dream of?"

"God is unfair!" The girl gritted her teeth.

The two of them were talking to each other by the edge of the Fires power Upanishads with odd complexions. They didn't use intense soul energy, which would disturb Shi Yan.

Long, long time afterward, Shi Yan suddenly woke up. His soul flickered when he saw that the three auras of the Earth Flame, the Vermilion Bird True Flame, and the Purgatory True Flame were twisting with each other like a rope. Their auras seemed to gradually combine into one.

He knew that it would take time for the three heaven flames to fuse into one entity. Anyway, he found someone coming and he remembered his purpose being here. He stopped his process and said, "You are here."

The beautiful woman and the girl immediately flew over. When they looked at him, their faces were a little odd as if they hated that they couldn't refine iron into steel.

Shi Yan hadn't recognized it and he just said simply, "Precursor, I stay in Agate Star Area. There's a space passage in Shadow Ghostly Prison leading to Ancient God Star Area. A Departed Spirit Jellyfish stays there. I'm sure that the Dark Shadow Clan, a watchdog of the God Clan has brought that jellyfish there. They want to destroy Agate Star Area. At this moment, my friends are confined to the cold sea where the Departed Spirit Jellyfish stays. They are in an emergency situation. Please, I'm begging you to go there and refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. You can take all the products from refining the jellyfish."

"Agate Star Area? I've heard about it. But the space passage from our star area to that area is blocked. I want to go there, but I'm not sure if I can."

The beautiful woman looked bitter.

"I cultivate Space power Upanishad. I will try to open that space passage," Shi Yan said hurriedly.

"If you can open it, I'm sure I can go. I will tell you the current situation of the space passage. You find it and make a slit. I can go through directly." The woman sounded excited.

"No problem!"

Chapter 1053: Able to Break Any Unyielding Thing!

After Shi Yan's soul returned to his body, he stood up. Then, he saw Zuo Shi who looked terribly exhausted.

Zuo Shi was disheveled. She had dust all over her body and even her face. However, her big eyes were still fixated on him. She looked startled.

"How long have you not rested for? Why do you look even more tired than I do?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Since you'd begun cultivating, I haven't rested." Zuo Shi smiled begrudgingly. She exhaled in relief. "It's good that you're alright. I can ease my mind now and I can start to recover."

Looking at her, Shi Yan felt warm. He muttered, "Silly girl, it's safe here. Why were you so tense? The meteors are running at breakneck speed here. No battleships dare to enter so there would have been no one else in this area."

"But when you were cultivating, your soul had left your body. If someone came, he could have killed you quickly" Zuo Shi said seriously.

"You should rest well. I'm going out to handle something." Shi Yan was touched. He didn't know long this girl had been protecting him. She was afraid that something unexpected would happen to him while he was cultivating.

"I'm going with you," Zuo Shi opened her big eyes, urging her energy to pretend that she was in high spirits. "I'm all right."

"Stay here!" Shi Yan glared at her, talking persistently. "You can't help me even if you go with me. You should recover your energy first."

Usually, high-realm warriors didn't need to sleep to recover.

However, they still needed meditation to adjust their conditions. Zuo Shi's nerves had been tense for a long time without a break. It affected her realm and energy. Shi Yan knew how harmful it was to stay focused for a long time. He wouldn't let her consume her mind energy furthermore.

"Okay then," Zuo Shi was always obedient. She wasn't stubborn at all. She took out the divine crystals and sat down in front of Shi Yan to recover her power.

Shi Yan eased his mind. He told her, "You should be more cautious."

He immediately flew away from the core of the meteor, heading to the most spectacular area of Shadow Ghostly Prison. Looking at the space slits there, he released wisps of Soul Consciousness and sent them to those space slits.

While staying in the fountainhead of power Upanishads, Shi Yan had talked thoroughly to that beautiful woman and her disciple. He had some information about their identities.

The beautiful woman was called Yu Shan, an expert at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. The young girl's name was Xuan Fei. She was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. The two of them came from Fiery Rain Star Area. They seemed to belong to a mighty force.

The Fiery Rain Star Area was like Agate Star Area. It was also a high-level star area. This star area was one of the rare star areas that the God Clan hadn't touched. It had fought against the God Clan year round. Of course, the forces there didn't have any good impression of the God Clan.

The reason why the God Clan didn't bring the Departed Spirit Jellyfish to Fiery Rain Star Area was that the experts in Fiery Rain Star Area cultivated Fire power Upanishad, the nemesis to the jellyfish. And many of them had reached profound levels.

As the God Clan knew that the Departed Spirit Jellyfish couldn't do anything to Fiery Rain Star Area, they didn't plot anything with it. If Fiery Rain Star Area didn't have the experts who had fused with the flaming Origin at Incipient God Realm like Yu Shan, perhaps, it would have been treated like Agate Star Area.

Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area weren't far from each other. In the early epoch, the two star areas used to have a good relationship with clear space passages.

However, later on, the two star areas turned their back against each other. Wars burst out. Within the short period, both sides had borne significant loss. No one could take the upper hand. They were equally strong. To prevent the further useless war, the two had agreed to block the space passage. For tens of thousands of years, the two star areas hadn't had any relationship.

During that time, the God Clan had been already infamous. However, they hadn't had the power to invade Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area. And the two star areas didn't have the same enemy to join hands and resist.

After tens of thousands of years, Fiery Rain Star Area had officially engaged in the war against the God Clan. And the Ascot family had laid their eyes on Agate Star Area. And the two star areas now had the same enemy. If the space passage was torn, they didn't have any reason to fight anymore.

Now, they had a big opportunity to unite as one force.

Thus, when Yu Shan knew the situation of Agate Star Area, she frankly agreed to come over and help Shi Yan deal with the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. She could also receive something good too.

According to Yu Shan, the space passage connecting Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area had fire raindrops, which was the unique feature of Fiery Rain Star Area. The border and the area near the edge of Fiery Rain Star Area had the same fire raindrops.

That was why this area was called Fiery Rain Star Area.

The fiery rain was formed after one of the ancient continents of Fiery Rain Star Area got shattered. It stored some magical power, which created a natural border that blocked Fiery Rain Star Area.

Any space passage connected the Fiery Rain Star Area to the other star area had the same fire raindrops. As long as Shi Yan could find the aura of that kind of unique raindrop in Shadow Ghostly Prison, he could confirm that space passage leads to Fiery Rain Star Area.

Each flow of his Soul Consciousness moved in and out inside the space splits in front of him as it searched.

As time passed, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness elongated, projecting what it'd seen into his mind. Shi Yan could see the space slit clearly.

Many space passages connected this star area to the other areas were blocked. They seemed to be sealed by an invisible wall. At the same time, Shi Yan could also see some clear space passages. However, those space passages had the terrifying space energy of the disorderly chaotic space basin. If he made a wrong step, he would be mashed.

A familiar space slit appeared in his head, which made him astounded.

Shi Yan felt the aura of Grace Mainland in that space passage. His co-soul even shivered as he had a subtle feeling of seeing the homeland.

He was a little surprised as he recognized that direction should lead to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain in Grace Mainland. The space energy fluctuated vehemently and disorderly. In that space, different energies madly twisted and twirled like tornados that could cut off everything. Even in his current realm, Shi Yan knew that it was really tough to get through that space passage.

How did they get through it to come here that year?

He couldn't help but remember Xia Xin Yan. He sighed, knowing that Xia Xin Yan was lucky and had spent a lot of effort to enter Shadow Ghostly. She earned trust from the Hegemon of the Fighting League. He knew she had to endure hardship to have what she had today.

While he had many thoughts in his mind, his eyes brightened as he spotted a place with scorching flames.

Shi Yan was shaken. He immediately retrieved the other wisps of Soul Consciousness he had sent away. Instantaneously, he turned into a bunch of electric lights, gliding through the rigid, elongating space passage, Shi Yan saw the fiery raindrops Yu Shan had told him. Those raindrops filled the entire place like someone was burning the sky. Countless fiery raindrops sparked and scattered beautifully, giving the space passage a magnificent look.

However, those fire raindrops were blocked by a magical, invisible barrier. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness could sense the heat but couldn't touch it.

After his God Body had come to that invisible barrier, he sensed for a while before he could confirm that it was the barrier of Fiery Rain Star Area, which could be set up by the experts of Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area. It was half manmade and half natural, which made it tough and flexible. People couldn't break it easily.

Although he had cultivated Space power Upanishad, it wasn't easy to break this space barrier.

Releasing wisps of Soul Consciousness, Shi Yan urged his power. Ten shining space blades came from his ten fingers, trying to cut that barrier.

Scratch! Scratch! Scratch!

The sharp blades made of his Space power Upanishad hit hard on

the barrier, trying to cut it. However, only the explosion echoed. Ten beautiful slashes of light sparked. However, the barrier stood still without a little scratch.

Since Yu Shan was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, he just needed to make a small slit to help her get through. And only Incipient God Realm experts could move through a half-blocked space passage. Yu Shan didn't ask him to do a big thing. He just needed to tear a small slit.

However, even if he had used his best powers to hit it, the space blades he had released looked weaker than this barrier. He couldn't make even a tiny cut.

Shi Yan grimaced. He was worried. He frowned and continued to adjust his power. He had even urged the Immortal Demon Blood to enter Third Sky of Rampage. He had tried everything he could, but he still couldn't break the barrier.

He suddenly recognized that although he had reached First Sky of Ethereal God Realm and had an understanding of Space power Upanishad, he was still far behind the experts who had set up this space barrier using natural powers.

He couldn't even make a small tear.

He suddenly knew that the difference between realms wasn't something he could make up with an innate endowment. Darkening his face, Shi Yan didn't hurry to attack more. He gathered himself, trying to think...

Talking about the sharpest power in this world, Space power could be on the top list. However, his space blades couldn't break it. Which power did he have that could do that?

Did he have anything sharper than Space energy?

He lingered on this thought.

After a long time, his eyes brightened. His thoughts flickered as he hauled out the blood broadsword. His fingers clasped around

the handle of the sword, sending his energy, Immortal Demon Blood, God power, and negative energy into the sword. The blood eyes in the sword opened strangely and evilly.

A brutal aura shot up into the air from the tip of the sword, which looked like a bloody beam of hundreds of meters!

Suddenly, the energy of his entire body gushed into the blood sword. At this moment, the blood sword had become a top evil divine weapon that could break any unyielding thing! The blood beam that gathered all the terrifying energies tore the sky, slashing the space barrier.

Swish!

The barrier that had troubled him for a long time was pierced through, creating a slit as big as an arm. The bloody beam continued to thrust further, entering the sea of fiery raindrops before vanishing.

Shi Yan's energy was used. He was so exhausted as he looked blankly at the hole. Then, he urged his soul energy to contact Yu Shan.

"I'm coming right now!"

Yu Shan replied. She seemed too surprised as if she didn't think that Shi Yan could make it through that fast.

Chapter 1054: The Ones Who Cross the Border

Life star number nine of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Bettina was grave as she tried to contact Zha Duo and Fu Wei. However, she hadn't received any response.

"Still no information?" Consecrator Timlin frowned. "It has almost been one year. Where have they gone? Why we can't have any information from them? The Elder Conference is scheduled. Zha Duo and Fu Wei are the two elders. They should understand how important the Conference is. Especially when Fu Wei is keeping the Canon! What the heck are they doing?"

The Elder Conference of Potion and Tool Pavilion was responsible for appointing the new Pavilion Master. At this moment, it was as hot as boiling oil.

Being the Elders, Zha Duo and Fu Wei were the two important participants. If they didn't show up at the conference, it meant they had given up their rights.

Third Elder Bettina had planned this for years. Rumors said that they kept the Canon too. They were the party that had the most prominent candidate for the Pavilion Master position. At this moment, Zha Duo and Fu Wei were missing. To Bettina's party, it was a destructive event.

"I don't know what has happened." Bettina grimaced. "If they haven't met anything unexpected, I think they would have answered. I think they are in big trouble."

Bettina knew what Zha Duo and Fu Wei were doing and she approved it.

If Zha Duo and Fu Wei could prove that the God Clan was about to invade them and the Great Elder had joined hands with the alien

Dark Shadow Clan, the participants in the coming Elder Conference would handle Zuo Lou directly. At that time, not only would he not get the Pavilion Master position, he could also be expelled or even executed.

Bettina knew what Zha Duo and Fu Wei wanted to do and it was related to the election of the new Pavilion Master. She tacitly agreed.

She had never thought that at the critical moment, Zha Duo and Fu Wei would suddenly disappear and leave no clue. Bettina was worried and gloomy because she knew that Zha Duo and Fu Wei were now in a deadly situation.

"We don't have much time left," Timlin sighed. "According to you, your party could reach the peak of glory this time. You've found the Canon, anyway. But now Fu Wei and Zha Dou are missing. You guys don't have any evidence to show that you have the Canon. It's hard to verify what you've said about the Great Elder. I'm afraid this time you will fail too."

"It's definitely because of Zuo Lou!" Bettina gritted her teeth. "He keeps the Satellite Eye. He must have some insiders in Shadow Ghostly Prison. He must have sealed a secret agreement with the Dark Shadow Clan. He's confining Zha Duo and Fu Wei somewhere."

"Even if it's true, we don't have any solution." Timlin looked reluctant. "Wait until the dust settles and Great Elder takes the Master position. He can brush away everything. At that time, even if Fu Wei and Zha Duo come back with the Canon, they can't shake his position in the pavilion."

Bettina felt so heavy-hearted.

On a floating life star by the peripheral area of Shadow Ghostly Prison sat the Great Elder Zuo Lou with a calm face inside a

massive potion cauldron. He was gathering energy as if he was refining medicines. He didn't look anxious as the Elder Conference was near. He looked strangely placid.

Hammer, Chief of the Ghost Mark Clan, came here alone. He was sitting silently by the cauldron as if he was waiting for something.

After a while, Zuo Lou opened his eyes. The cauldron diffused the aroma that could enter people's internal organs. He smiled and said, "I'm lucky this time. The pellets I've refined are all turning out good. Hammer, you can take some. They can strengthen your Soul Consciousness. You've done well this time."

Hammer smiled. "It's you who had arranged everything with the Dark Shadow Clan."

Half a year ago, clansmen of the Ghost Mark Clan had found the commotion of the Demon Clan, Monster Clan, Fighting League, Zha Duo, and Fu Wei through their shortcuts. Hammer immediately contacted Zuo Lou who then contacted the Chief of Dark Shadow Clan.

They had planned and the Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan had done something discreetly. They made the strong league that had frightened the forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison disappear oddly.

Hammer didn't actually know what had happened. He just knew that those people would disappear forever.

He knew that the clansmen of the Dark Shadow Clan had done that. He was so frightened because he couldn't imagine what kind of force they had that allowed them to destroy the allied army of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Zha Duo.

Hammer had become warier of the Dark Shadow Clan.

"Don't worry. They will never be a threat to us anymore. Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan has personally guaranteed me that they will never show up again. Without this unknown factor, I will finish this Elder Conference!" said Zuo Lou with confidence.

Hammer started to act servilely.

Under the icy sea hovered a massive light cage, which was made of pure energy. It illuminated the icy seawater, releasing waves of light. Different colored water currents meandered around the light cage. When the currents touched the light cage, it sizzled as if its energy was eroded.

Inside the light cage were many battleships anchored in this unreal space. The flashing light reflected on people's restless faces.

Those were the battleships of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion. Around one thousand battleships were kept here for a long time.

Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four Incipient God Realm experts, looked tired as they had to spend a lot of energy. Feng Yan couldn't hold it anymore. Her face paled and didn't have a tinge of color. It was the sign of using a lot of energy.

Around one thousand battleships circled in this area. Warriors of the four forces hid inside the battleships and gathered energy. They all looked gloomy.

"I don't know what that f*cking trap is! So evil!" Bath was so agitated. "Our combined power couldn't kill it. That thing has many souls. When we kill one, it generates another. I have never seen anything close to an immortal creature like this."

"It's not a creature that Agate Star Area should have. It has toxins all over its body. And those toxins affect both the God Body and the soul altar. Honestly, if I didn't see with my own eyes, I would never have believed that something like that still existed in this world." Gu Te also forced a smile.

"We can't hold on to it for a long time. We must find a solution." Blood Devil frowned deeply. "The deadly toxins of that thing have been eroding our defensive barrier. It wears out our energy.

Among the four of us, Feng Yan can't help it anymore. Our recovery speed couldn't make up for the consumed speed. If we don't have any solution, I think we have to bury our bodies here."

"Recently, we've tried all means and solutions. Nothing works." Zha Duo of Potion and Tool Pavilion had a gloomy complexion. "That Incipient God Realm expert who has Space power Upanishad has destroyed the space structure around us. I can't tear a space slit. Otherwise, we would have had a chance to get out of here."

"Fortunately, Shi Yan wasn't with us." Xia Xin Yan was still calm. Since she had experienced the same hopeless situation, she was trained to be as firm as a stone. "Perhaps he had found this strange situation and returned to Shadow Ghostly Prison to tell the others. We may have a chance to survive."

"He didn't leave this area!" Blood Devil erased her hope, his face awkward. "Although this area is strange, I can still feel him. He's lingering around here. He has never left."

"Ah?" Fu Wei was astounded. "He should leave. With his power, he can't help us. If he has returned to Shadow Ghostly Prison to find the Hegemon of Fighting League or the elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion, perhaps we could have had a chance to be rescued. But now..."

People exchanged forced smiles.

Nobody thought that Shi Yan lingering here was a wise move. Even the four Incipient God Realm experts Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan couldn't escape with their powers. Staying here, what Shi Yan could do?

"He's not foolish. He knows what happened. I think he has a solution." Blood Devil squinted and spoke slowly, "We should draw upon all useful opinions. Just try all the mysterious or magical solutions you can. Anything. Just tell us and we will try to see if we can get out of here."

Hearing him, the others put on gloomy, contemplating faces, sighing unceasingly.

They were the group of outstanding warriors who could swagger in this world, but now they were confined in this area without a possible solution. This gave them an unavoidable sorrow.

Inside the magical space passage.

Shi Yan looked at the tear on the barrier, retrieving the blood sword. He then adjusted his condition, not to show the other his helter-skelter situation.

One slash of the sharp sword had taken one-third of his energy to open a small slit on the space barrier. However, he didn't think that it was a failure. Now, he had one more visual experience of this incredibly sharp sword.

Tens of thousands of years ago, experts of Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area had built the space barrier based on the natural features of this area to cut off the connection between two big star areas. As Shi Yan had only the Ethereal God Realm cultivation base, if he didn't have that divine sword and struck the barrier with all of his energy, it was just like scratching the wrong spot. It wasn't going to work.

However, the blood sword could make a tear in that barrier. Shi Yan wondered how sharp the sword should be to do that.

The mighty Original Incipient Grade divine weapon was really extraordinary. It could break even the hardest defense.

Shi Yan checked his appearance. His eyes brightened up as his soul got something. He hadn't waited for a long time.

Two lights, one blue and one scarlet, were moving like shooting flames, drawing beautiful curves through the fiery raindrops towards Shi Yan.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The two lights swayed through the slit. The lights transformed, turning into two beautiful feminine figures.

Yu Shan wore a long blue dress. She looked elegant and graceful like a fresh, blooming flower. Xuan Fei wore tight, orange-red clothes. She looked mischievous despite her amazing curves. Her eyes rolled as if she couldn't stand still for a moment.

A beautiful woman and a pretty girl curiously gazed at him as soon as they appeared.

"How did you poke through that barrier? With your realm and cultivation base, I thought it would be really strenuous. You did it strangely fast. It's beyond my estimation." Yu San's voice was soft as she had a faint smile on the corner of her mouth. She was like the sister from next door who often made people felt warm and relaxed.

"My fortune is quite good." Shi Yan was hurried, so he didn't want to explain in detail. "Shall we go now?"

"Sure," Yu Shan smiled calmly.

"Then we will go now."

Chapter 1055: Refine the Sea

Shi Yan guided Yu Shan and Xuan Fei back to the icy sea. They hovered above the sea where poisonous smokes fumed.

Shi Yan had come back here after several months and this time, he felt much different. The first time he visited this area, his hands were tied. He had had no solution facing this sea. His Soul Consciousness couldn't intrude the sea and he was so fearful for the Departed Spirit Jellyfish hiding under the chilling sea.

But it was different today as he had brought a Second Sky of Incipient God Realm expert who had the heaven flame of the Origin. This time, he was more certain.

Yu Shan flew above the sea, her bold brows knitting. She sensed for a while and then smiled. "You're correct. It's the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. I can't believe I can meet this world-wild infamous, legendary creature once in my life."

"Precursor, please take action!" Shi Yan solemnly asked.

"Of course. I've crossed the border to get here for the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. I won't let it go." Yu Shan smiled gently. However, she didn't take action immediately and just looked at him curiously. "Anyway, we need to make it clear first. If I refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, I will take everything from it. Any objection?"

"No." Shi Yan looked earnest.

"How about those people down there?" Yu Shan smiled again.

"No, either!" Shi Yan nodded again.

"You can decide for them?" Yu Shan was surprised.

As she had Second Sky of Incipient God Realm with the heaven flame, the seabed where Shi Yan couldn't search wasn't a problem for her. At the moment she'd arrived, she had released her Soul

Consciousness to sense. She knew how strong the characters undersea were.

Four Incipient God Realm experts! Three of them have reached Second Sky of Incipient God Realm!

In their Fiery Rain Star Area, the existences at such level were all top characters. Since Yu Shan had cultivated the power Upanishad that was the nemesis of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, she was confident that could refine it. However, once the people confined down there could get out and they had some malicious thoughts towards her when she was refining the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, she wouldn't be able to bear such attacks.

Although her power Upanishad could subdue the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, she couldn't oppress those four Incipient God Realm experts. If they tricked her when she had consumed a lot of her energy to refine the jellyfish, she would be restrained here too.

She had her worries. She wasn't sure that Shi Yan's position and status were enough to talk those people down there into this agreement. Thus, she was hesitant.

"I can guarantee that as long as you can solve the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, they wouldn't have any unfriendly commotion!" Shi Yan was dumb. He knew what she was worried about and he tried to show his commitment. "I can make a pledge!"

Yu Shan waved her hand and smiled, "I believe in you. Our Fiery Rain Star Area and your Agate Star Area are also plotted against by the God Clan. I think we will have more chances to cooperate later. I know those people down there understand the general picture well."

She immediately urged her soul altar to use her power Upanishad. Shortly after, the clusters of dim blue flame flew out of her sleeves unceasingly. They looked like columns of clouds that slowly approached the icy sea.

The terrifying scorching flame filled the area. The entire space passage felt like it was burning. The heat was increasing unlimitedly.

Shi Yan felt as if he was standing in melting lava, which hurt his God Body. He was frightened as he finally knew how intimidating the Incipient God Realm expert who had the heaven flame could be. Those dim blue flames seemed to be able to melt the entire space passage. It was so powerful, indeed.

The dim blue flames gathered, creating a flaming blue sea that covered the icy sea.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

All of a sudden, the colored smokes vehemently fumed from the sea. The cold sea was boiled and evaporated. The cold air and the high heat confronted. Energies engaged and created thicker mist.

"Be careful of those smokes! They are all poisonous!" Yu Shan reminded.

Xuan Fei's lively eyes moved; her power Upanishad was urged. A refined orange-red flame shrouded her graceful body like a feather blanket. The scorching aura expanded, covering her in an orange-red halo. As her face was illuminated by the red flame, she looked delightful.

Shi Yan frowned. His thought flickered and a scarlet flame gathered, making a light curtain shield his God Body from the poisonous smokes.

The dim blue flame gushed out unlimitedly from Yu Shan's sleeves. It looked as if it could connect the earth and heaven. It surged and wanted to burn the whole sky and vaporize the earth. This kind of evil heat was much beyond Shi Yan's imagination.

She looked calm, moving two hands and making magical hand seals. Her God body and flames blended around her, making the blue flame sea seethe violently. The icy sea was evaporated faster.

The seawater surged torrentially. As Shi Yan was watching, it dried up at a speed naked eyes could observe...

Deep inside the space passage on a massive shooting star were many butterfly battleships of the Dark Shadow Clan anchored. The Dark Shadow clansmen were moving in and out of those battleships.

Brilliant outer space streamers shot fast like electric arrows moving around this meteor. More and more war chariots were running to and fro on the meteor. Several thousand Dark Shadow clansmen were working on expanding something. They all looked busy.

The ancient palace of the Dark Shadow Clan was situated on the biggest meteor. Kelda, a leader of the Dark Shadow Clan, was talking to Chief Bello in the meeting hall. Many commanders of the clan were listening to them.

"The space passage is clear now. Our critical task now is to clean the dregs inside the passage. It would facilitate the massive battleships of the Ascot family. We must focus on this." Chief Bello advised, "Don't enter Shadow Ghostly Prison from now on if you don't have any duty there. It's complicated now. We should wait until Great Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion successfully takes the throne of the Pavilion Master. He will make the entire Agate Star Area chaotic. After that, we will lead the Ascot family in to clear the Fighting League first."

Kelda nodded. "The Fighting League has been troubling us for years. Feng Han isn't a wise leader. He has always been stubborn. It's time for his death now."

"Feng Han is a big character," Bello frowned. "I've contacted him personally. I expected that we could merge the Fighting League with us without fighting with them. But he denied me. I'd offered him big benefits. Anyway, he didn't want to follow us. This man is

placid. Without the Ascot family, our Dark Shadow Clan couldn't chew the Fighting League off."

"Chief, you're just modest. Haven't you solved the three Incipient God Realm experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan?" Kelda appraised.

"It's the merit of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish." Bello didn't want to earn the merit. "Without that Departed Spirit Jellyfish, even if we used all of our power, it would have been very strenuous to deal with that force. I was lucky with my handy opportunity so I've arranged that thing at the area they had to pass through. Then, I cut their space and moved them under the sea of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. If they have prepared, I wouldn't have succeeded that simply. They have four Incipient God Realm experts, anyway. This force is really powerful. They have troubled Zuo Lou of Potion and Tool Pavilion a lot. Their Satellite Eye is everywhere, indeed."

"It's true. Without their information, we couldn't finish many tasks." Kelda could help but agree.

Bello and Kelda then discussed many details of the Ascot family's invasion, so as their subordinates could understand thoroughly.

While talking, Bello's face changed. He jolted up from his seat and shouted, "Something is wrong!"

Kelda was surprised. "Chief, what's wrong?"

"The space restriction I've set up at that area loosened. I can feel a scorching aura!" Bello was worried. "We got the Departed Spirit Jellyfish from the Ascot family. If something happens to it, we can't have any reason to explain to them."

"It's impossible." Kelda was scared. "From Zuo Lou of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, we've confirmed that Agate Star Area doesn't have any Incipient God Realm expert who had the flame of the Origin before we took the Departed Spirit Jellyfish here. When did we make a mistake? Zuo Lou has set us up?"

"Not true." Bello took a deep breath. "It's crucial now. We should go there to check the situation. If it's so, we must do our best to stop them!"

"Okay!"

Under the icy water, brutal dragon Bath was exhausted and hot-tempered as he was standing in the center of the massive energy barrier. He was foul-mouthed as he couldn't calm himself to swallow this anger.

They had tried many means and solutions, even something magical or evil. However, they still had no solution to deal with the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. This made the experts become hot-tempered. They got angry easily, which kept their subordinates away from them. They didn't dare to come close to their masters to prevent getting hit from the sparks.

Feng Yan couldn't stand it for a long time. She had to use the pellets from Potion and Tool Pavilion and divine crystals to restore. In the coming time, she couldn't do anything to help them.

Bath and Gu Te had to pour energy into the light curtain from time to time. They were on the edge of collapsing already.

Blood Devil had to use his Demon Blood already.

The situation was very tense and they had never experienced this before. All of them knew that if there wasn't an external force to help them, they would never escape this confinement.

At the moment Bath and Gu Te were complaining noisily, Blood Devil was surprised. He lifted his head to look at the dark sea water and said, "Here he comes again."

"Shi Yan?" Bath snorted. "What if he comes? We can't break it. Do you think he can?"

"He can't do anything even if he comes here. If you still can

connect to him, you should tell him to stay away from this area," said Gu Te begrudgingly.

"No, it's different this time." Blood Devil closed his eyes to sense. Suddenly, a dazzling light radiated from his eyes. "You guys sense it. The icy water above our head is evaporating!"

People were shaken. They released their Soul Consciousness to see. They jolted. All looked cheered up and they could see the thrill in each other's eyes.

They all felt the chilling water above their head gradually disappear. They could even feel a beam of chaotic energy intruding.

"Holy sh*t! That boy can help us get out of here. I'm convinced in heart and by word!" Bath roared with his red eyes.

Chapter 1056: See the Sunlight Again

The blue flame covered the entire icy sea and evaporated it. The poisonous smokes diffused, filling the space passage. However, they didn't flow into Agate Star Area.

Yu Shan was calm as she floated above the sea while the quiet blue flame on her body gushing out unceasingly. It congregated above the chilling sea, bumping energy continually.

Shi Yan and Xuan Fei hovered silently by her. They stooped to observe the sea underneath. They all had the flames shrouding their bodies to avoid the toxic smokes.

The heaven flame of the Origin was so scorching it could evaporate the smokes. When the smokes approached the flaming barrier around their bodies, they exploded and vanished.

"Hello!" As Xuan Fei felt bored, she called Shi Yan loudly.

While concentrating on the sea underneath, Shi Yan was startled. His body trembled as he gave her a forced smile. "Miss, why did you call me?"

Seeing the icy sea dry up and send steam into the air, Shi Yan calmed down. His tense nerves were finally relaxed. Now, he had the mood to talk to that outer space crafty girl. However, he wasn't so friendly. Although he respected this talkative lady, he couldn't get close to her.

"You bastard, how could you gather all the heaven flames of the Origin of an ancient continent? Did you kill that many people?" Xuan Fei snorted and cocked her head to look at him. "Obviously, you aren't a good guy."

Shi Yan was surprised. "Why am I not a good guy?"

"You've killed a lot of people to rob the heaven flames. Of course, you're not a good guy." Xuan Fei had a disdainful look on her face. "I hate cunning and evil people like you the most. There are many

people like you in the fountainhead of power Upanishad. They want to enjoy but not labor."

"I didn't kill anyone in the fountainhead of power Upanishad to get my heaven flames of the Origin." Shi Yan explained begrudgingly. "I can say that I was lucky."

"Why don't you use the Fire power Upanishad as your main power? Do you know what we think about your situation? You've wasted the fruits from God!" Xuan Fei was angry. "We've spent a lot of effort, but we couldn't gather all the heaven flames of an ancient continent. You have such fortune, but you've made them your co-soul. I really hate people like you."

Shi Yan didn't know whether he should cry or smile. He didn't want to mind her anymore.

"When we were in the area of Fires power Upanishads, why weren't you interested in me?" Xuan Fei was enthusiastic and she had the guts to ask him such a thing. Seeing him not want to continue talking, she yelled louder, "Am I not pretty? I've met many guys like Spot in the fountainhead of power Upanishad. They all had a passion of me. Hey... do you have any problem?"
[G3] [G4]

Shi Yan darkened his face but didn't answer.

"You like men?"

Shi Yan kept silent, his face more grimaced.

"Oh, right. No wonder. It means I have no problem with my charisma. It's you who has a problem." Xuan Fei looked as if she could confirm something. She thrust her chest out and lifted her chin arrogantly. "In our Fiery Rain Star Area, many men feel proud when they talked to me. Sigh. I know it. Your sexual orientation isn't normal. All right, I can ease my mind now," sighed Xuan Fei.

Although Shi Yan grimaced, he wasn't that bored to react to her. He thought, if I didn't ask for your teacher's favor, daddy would

show you how dangerous I am!

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Suddenly, more toxic smokes fumed out from the icy sea. The smokes were so thick with different gross smells shooting up into the sky.

Yu Shan was shaken. "Here it comes!"

Shi Yan and Xuan Fei immediately focused on the surface of the sea underneath, longing to see something.

The Departed Spirit Jellyfish was the most mysterious and ancient creature in the vast universe. No one knew how it was born. They just knew that it ate the most poisonous things to grow. It liked to eat toxic grass and pellets the most. This thing was a rare monster, indeed.

This kind of creature was extremely rare. It was a descendant of the oldest bloodline with the power of earth and heaven. They all wanted to see how the Departed Spirit Jellyfish looked.

As the seawater evaporated, the Departed Spirit Jellyfish's shelter was destroyed. It couldn't be patient deep under the sea anymore. It slowly raised to the sea surface.

It looked like a big mass of gray seaweed floating and moving upward in the sea. The Departed Spirit Jellyfish did look like a real jellyfish in the sea that Shi Yan knew. It had an umbrella-shaped bell, which was squishy and viscous without a skeleton. It looked like a mountain of flesh in the sea with many nauseating pimples, which had some small holes where fumed the colored toxic smokes. Its body could pulsate magically.

This creature didn't have a head or limbs. It was like a malignant tumor floating on the sea. Taking a look at it, people would lose their appetite immediately.

Its soul was scattered in each of those meat lumps. Each soul was dependent but it was connected to each other. This creature

seemed to be a multi-soul living being, which was beyond Shi Yan's cognition.

"Eww. It's too gross!" Xuan Fei wiped her mouth as if she wanted to puke. "I have never seen anything so ugly. Master, can you burn it faster? I can feel my scalp numb seeing it."

Yu Shan also grimaced. Evidently, it was also the first time she saw the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Her bold brows furrowed as she said, "Really ugly, indeed. I've never thought that this creature could be such a freak. It doesn't have a head or limbs and its soul scatters! Tens of thousands of meat lumps in its body can produce different toxic smokes. We're lucky that I've cultivated its nemesis power. Otherwise, I wouldn't have gathered the guts to fight with it."

"Finish it quickly, please!" Xuan Fei flung her arms as she turned away because she didn't want to look at the jellyfish anymore.

Shi Yan was placid. He assessed the floating Departed Spirit Jellyfish seriously. He observed, not wanting to miss any little detail.

His endurance was much stronger than Yu Shan's and Xuan Fei's. He had accepted the King of Demonic Insects, something much uglier than this. He had seen many disgusting things. He got used to it. Thus, nasty things couldn't affect his mind.

Shi Yan was curious, so he tried to sense the Departed Spirit Jellyfish's soul.

It was true that the jellyfish had many souls. Each of them was hiding inside the ugly meat lump. Although those souls look dependent, they could connect and reflect each other, creating a whole entity.

It was the first time Shi Yan saw such a unique creature. He got more curious as he observed it.

Pfff! Pfff! Pfff!

All of a sudden, the gross lumps of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish gushed out colored venom, which was shot out violently like erupting volcanoes. The columns of venom were even bigger than human arms, shooting up into the air. There were thousands of them that darted towards Shi Yan's team like water arrows.

Yu Shan was frightened. She hurried to urge her power and create a blue flame wall. She screamed at Shi Yan. "Take Little Fei away!"

Since Xuan Fei didn't want to look at the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, she had turned her back to it. Yu Shan understood her disciple well. She knew that the girl couldn't do anything to those ugly things. She could only ask Shi Yan to help her.

"Okay!"

Shi Yan agreed immediately. He reached with his arm and wrapped around Xuan Fei's delicate waist. In just a blink of an eye, he urged his energy to move away from Yu Shan.

Xuan Fei's waist was quite slender. It felt so soft as if it didn't have bones or fat. And it felt soft and warm, which made touching it a pleasure. Shi Yan felt touched. Recalling Xuan Fei's evil words to him, he pinched Xuan Fei's waist with his big hand. He found that this girl was marvelously slender.

"You! What did you do!" Xuan Fei's soft body shivered. She stiffened her waist as she hurried to push Shi Yan's arm away. She blushed when she glared at him. "Why did you pinch me?"

"I was afraid that I couldn't hold you tight enough," explained Shi Yan deliberately.

"You asshole!" Xuan Fei stared at Shi Yan. She acted as if she wanted to show her fangs and claws. "Didn't you just want to touch me?"

"Nope. Your teacher asked me to bring you away," said Shi Yan naturally.

Xuan Fei didn't say more and just glared at him as if she wanted to murder him right here.

Shi Yan looked calm. He didn't bother with her gazing at him as he still looked at Yu Shan who had turned to a massive blue fireball at this moment. She descended from the sky and furiously attacked the Departed Spirit Jellyfish.

Yu Shan's power Upanishad was the nemesis of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Her flames had burned down all the toxins. This kind of blue flame was so scorching. It belonged to the top energy of Yang class. When she urged her energy, it was very intimidating, indeed. As the seawater evaporated, they could see a massive light curtain slowly float up.

Inside the light curtain were big, blurry shadows. Taking a closer look, those shadows were battleships.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he tried to see the situation inside the light curtain. He even mobilized energy to his eyes to have better vision.

They were the Blood Devil's team, who had disappeared unknowingly!

When he saw Blood Devil's group, those people inside the light curtain also saw him. A loud cheering burst out as if they wanted to blow up the light curtain. At this moment, the icy seawater had been burned to the bottom. The trap that confined Blood Devil's team was gone.

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te used their supernatural power to control the light curtain, which looked like a massive light globe that floated up into the sky. It avoided the Departed Spirit Jellyfish and headed toward Shi Yan.

Puff!

Shi Yan didn't blink. His God Body was shaken as a flow of recoiling power shot out from his body.

"Ah!"

Xuan Fei screamed painfully from behind him. Her small fist felt like it was burned. She was trying to flip her hand back and forth as she screamed, "You! How did you train your God Body? It's more rigid than metal! Ouch! I'm hurt!"

She had ambushed him and punched his back. However, she couldn't hurt Shi Yan and she hurt herself instead. The recoiling energy from his body affected her hard. She felt as if her wrist was broken. Her painful face looked both cute and pitiful. "You! I will remember it! I will never let it slip away!" Xuan Fei pointed at Shi Yan with her other hand, trying to give a threat weakly.

Shi Yan turned around to look at her, laughing dryly. He didn't say much and just waved at Blood Devil and the others, asking them to come to him.

"Daddy is convinced! Kid, you saved us. Oh, you motherf*cker, Blood Devil, you're so lucky." Bath shouted, his voice like thunderclaps.

Blood Devil also looked at Shi Yan with an odd face. He looked at Shi Yan and nodded. Between them, there were many things they didn't need to say to understand each other.

Chapter 1057: Meeting the Enemy Head-on

Yu Shan concentrated on dealing with the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Her blue flame moved like clusters of clouds in the space passage, occupying most of the space.

The Departed Spirit Jellyfish was quite hot-tempered at the beginning. It gushed more toxic smokes. The meat lumps all over its body squirted venom. The massive body of the jellyfish was now covered in different colors. With such momentum, it wanted to destroy Yu Shan thoroughly.

Unfortunately, Yu Shan had fused with the flame of the Origin and she had reached Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. She was its nemesis. No matter how hard it had tried to fume the toxic venom and smokes, Yu Shan could simply burn all things down with her heaven flame. Many clusters of blue fire covered the icy sea, making almost all of it vaporized.

According to the Ring Spirit, the cold seawater was the derivative control fluid of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. When the seawater hadn't been dried up, as long as the jellyfish could still hide in the sea, it was invincible.

However, the Departed Spirit Jellyfish was about to collapse now. It was so worried. It should have been invincible everywhere. However, it had no choice when confronted by its archenemy.

Shi Yan and Yu Shan had had an agreement. Shi Yan wouldn't interfere in her battle with the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Also, he didn't have such competence.

Yu Shan had crossed the border to get here. On the one hand, she had the same grudge against the God Clan. However, on the other hand, she had aimed at harvesting the magical things from the Departed Spirit Jellyfish.

After Blood Devil and the others had got rid of the restraint, they

were all looking at the Departed Spirit Jellyfish with resentment, their complexions dark. They seemed to want to kill this alien creature.

Shi Yan timely stopped them. "Don't attack it. She will handle it alone. Don't worry. She can do it."

"Who is she?" Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion looked at Yu Shan from a distance, her face very surprised. "Why does our Potion and Tool Pavilion not have any record of an expert cultivating Fire power Upanishad at such a high realm? Is she..."

Shi Yan chuckled. "You're right. She's not a warrior of Agate Star Area. She comes from the neighboring Fiery Rain Star Area. I've invited her here to deal with the Departed Spirit Jellyfish."

"That thing is called Departed Spirit Jellyfish?" Bath smacked his tongue and screamed, "Kid, how did you know the name of that thing? What is it after all? We were moved to under that sea. We'd tried everything we could, but we couldn't leave a scratch on that thing. How do you know how to deal with it?"

Everybody looked at Shi Yan inexplicably.

Zha Duo and Feng Yan were startled. Their eyes were looking at him weirdly as if it was the first time they saw him.

Inviting an expert from another star area to solve the Departed Spirit Jellyfish... this kid... who was he? Why did he have so many secrets?

They were so curious about Shi Yan now.

"Before I've arrived in Agate Star Area, I'd been wandering to many strange lands. I know many strange but magical things in this universe." Shi Yan just gave them a perfunctory explanation. "The nemesis of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish are the experts who have fused with heaven flames of the Origin at Incipient God Realm. After I knew you guys were confined down there, I couldn't do anything but go to another star area to find an expert with such

characteristics."

"You... we can't understand you thoroughly," sighed the Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe.

"Ah, don't compliment me that much." Shi Yan burst out laughing. "You guys shouldn't interfere. Nothing unexpected will happen if that precursor handles the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Although you have a profound realm, it's not easy for you guys to deal with that Departed Spirit Jellyfish. We should save energy then."

Listening to him, everybody was embarrassed. They nodded quietly and then adjusted their energy to recover the energy they had consumed.

Inside that chilling sea, they had used a lot of energy. They were about to all collapse. If Shi Yan hadn't brought Yu Shan here, the light curtain they had created would have vanished. The smokes would have entered their space. Blood Devil's team could have endured for a while, but the King God Realm and Original God Realm warriors would have been poisoned to death.

Even though they had gotten rid of the restraint, their situation wasn't good. Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te started to urge their energy to resume their condition. Energy began to twirl around them.

"Why have you joined hands with Fiery Rain Star Area?" Xia Xin Yan approached him while he hadn't recognized her. Her beautiful eyes raked around. "Well, are those two women your new friends?"

Shi Yan put on the face of being wrongly treated. "Don't make false assumptions. I've just known them. Why do you always think all of the female warriors would have something with me? Am I such a bastard?"

"Well, someone has proven it with a big number." Xia Xin Yan pouted, mocking disdainfully.

Shi Yan felt awkward. He searched through his thoughts carefully to realize his experiences weren't so convincing. No wonder why Xia Xin Yan considered a lot as if he was a famous robber.

"Hello!" Xuan Fei snorted, her face impatient. She waved at Shi Yan and said nonchalantly, "Come here. We haven't finished our stuff yet."

"Why did you offend that little girl?" Xia Xin Yan looked odd. "I saw she had ambushed you with a punch. You... you harassed her, didn't you?"

Women's intuition was scary, indeed. She got it.

Shi Yan jerked back, trying to sound more solemn. "Nonsense! She's that precursor's disciple. She comes from Fiery Rain Star Area. I think she wants to know something because she isn't familiar with our area."

While talking, he flashed and left Xia Xin Yan's to go to Xuan Fei. Then, he lowered his voice. "Hey, you've hit me. We're done. What else do you want?"

"You benefited, but I didn't. I hit you, but it's me who got hurt. Tell me, what do you think?" Xuan Fei's eyes twinkled as she glanced at Xia Xin Yan from a distance. "She's your lover, right? I can tell at first glance. If you don't want her to know what you've done, you'd better give me a satisfactory offer."

Shi Yan frowned. "What do you want?"

"I don't know yet," Xuan Fei thought she had found Shi Yan's weakness. She stooped and grinned cunningly. "You're afraid that that beautiful sister will be jealous, right? Haha, you're afraid of your wife. How dare you tease me that way!"

Shi Yan kept silent.

While he was talking to Xuan Fei, his line of sight was still fixed at Yu Shan's area. Yu Shan was urging all of her energy. Her blue

flame was filling the space passage. Slowly, the Departed Spirit Jellyfish didn't have a foothold and was immersed in the vast fire sea.

Yu Shan started to refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish.

Only the supernatural warriors who had fused with heaven flames at Incipient God Realm like her could have the power to refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish.

Shi Yan was very curious. He wanted to know what special things this ancient creature, which had the extreme toxins all over its body, had that drew Yu Shan's attention. The Ring Spirit didn't tell him clearly. As he was worried and hurried to rescue Blood Devil's team, he hadn't asked it thoroughly. Today, as the situation was under control, he had free time to make it clear.

"What does the Departed Spirit Jellyfish have that's worth my teacher traveling thousands of miles and crossing the border to get here?" asked Xuan Fei earnestly.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan lowered his voice. "I'm also really curious."

"When we were in the fountainhead of power Upanishad, didn't you say that it was a big chance for my master? You didn't know the details?" Xuan Fei was surprised. "Did you deceive us? Bastard, we've crossed the border to get here. Do you think it's easy to do that? My master was cultivating in seclusion, but I forced her out. If you can't give me a good explanation, I won't let you go!"

"If it weren't good, do you think your teacher would get here?" Shi Yan smiled but he actually wasn't happy. "Although I don't know the actual situation, your teacher does. Didn't she tell you the details on the way here?"

"I... I forgot to ask her." Xuan Fei was embarrassed. "On the way here, my teacher only asked questions related to you. She didn't talk about the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Sigh, okay okay. Never

mind. Just wait and see. If you dare to deceive us, I'm sure I won't let you live in peace."

"Look, we will have the answer soon."

The Departed Spirit Jellyfish ballooned and then shrank. Gradually, the flesh body of a mountain had become ten times smaller. However, it still occupied an area of one thousand square meters. The meat lumps all over its body still fumed toxic smokes, creating a "magical membrane" that covered its entire body.

The blue flame of the Origin surged turbulently. It crept on the membrane-like fire snakes, releasing the earth-shaking heat wave to refine the jellyfish.

Under the scorching heat of the flaming Origin, the membrane made by the toxic smokes dissolved slowly. However, this process wasn't fast. It needed time.

While people were watching in silence, Zha Duo was muttering to people of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Suddenly, his brows twitched as he screamed in fear. "He... he's coming!"

"Who?" Bath glanced at him impatiently.

Zha Duo changed his face. "The Incipient God Realm expert with Space power Upanishad! I can sense the change of space. He's coming here rapidly!"

Hearing him, everybody was shaken. Blood Devil's team had their murderous aura shoot up into the sky. They stopped their recovery progress. Their countenances turned malicious.

"Good!" Blood Devil shouted. "We're well-prepared this time. I do want to see how he messed with us!"

"That motherf*cker! I have never been so humiliated! I do want to see who is that cunning bastard!" Bath faced the sky and roared. While roaring, he shot up into the air and changed to his true form. A several-thousand-meter dragon as big as a battleship appeared in the void. The brutal aura from his fine scaled armor

was so intimidating.

"Hey...[G16] Shi Yan! I'm in charge of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish only! I don't have extra energy to deal with other people!" Yu Shan also heard what they said. Her charming face changed as she pitched her voice.

"Understood!" Shi Yan hurried to gather his energy. He regarded her and then became more cautious. He prepared to counter the furious attack of the coming expert.

Many experts of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion began to mobilize their powers. Fierce energy waves expanded from their bodies. They had a chance to vent out their compressed anger. They were ready to assault the ringleader who had moved them into that damn icy sea.

Chapter 1058: Her Graceful Bearing

The two old men of the Dark Shadow Clan who had just arrived were Bello and Kelda. Both of them glared at Yu Shan refining the Departed Spirit Jellyfish with malicious countenances. They attacked her immediately without any hesitation.

Kelda's ghastly aura turned into icy, chilled-to-bone vortexes, which expanded into tornadoes shortly after. With tremendous energy, they seemed to be able to break this entire space passage as they were heading towards Yu Shan.

Bello frowned. A fantasy Incipient Extent arose above his head. It looked like layers of space were piling up on top of each other. Tens of thousands of shining space blades filled his extent. Each of them was even sharper than a knife as if they could tear any kind of barrier. All were darting towards Yu Shan.

The Dark Shadow Clan had borrowed the Departed Spirit Jellyfish from the Ascot family of the God Clan. They wanted to use the jellyfish to attack Agate Star Area if necessary.

If the Departed Spirit Jellyfish was refined here when the God Clan wanted to invade the other star area, it wouldn't have any deadly attacks. Dark Shadow Clan couldn't bear this responsibility. They came here to make sure the Departed Spirit Jellyfish wouldn't meet any unexpected event.

"That's Kelda, one of the leaders of the Dark Shadow Clan. He's Cocker's older brother. He's at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. He cultivates Yin power Upanishad." Fu Wei changed her face, shouting instinctively.

"Who is that Incipient God Realm expert with Space power Upanishad?" asked Shi Yan hurriedly.

"He must be Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan." Fu Wei wasn't so sure. "Anyway, Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan rarely appears in

Shadow Ghostly Prison. Potion and Tool Pavilion doesn't have much information on him. This is the first time I saw him."

"A little tough then," sighed Shi Yan.

At this moment, Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four Incipient God Realm experts, had flown out and faced the two experts of the Dark Shadow Clan.

However, Bello and Kelda didn't look fearful in this unfavorable situation. They didn't want to retreat. Apparently, they weren't afraid of Blood Devil's team.

Shi Yan understood immediately. The others knew that Blood Devil's team had consumed a lot of energy, so they weren't in their best conditions at this moment. That was why the other two weren't worried at all.

Among this group of four, Feng Yan was at First Sky of Incipient God Realm. While they were under the icy sea, she was in the worst situation. At this moment, she had only two-thirds of her power remaining. If she had to face the enemies in this condition, she couldn't promote her abilities to the utmost.

Blood Devil was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. Bath and Gu Te were the great warriors of the Monster Clan, which used a different scale to measure their level. However, their levels were also similar to Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. Their initial abundant energy would have been enough to deal with Bello and Kelda with a chance to gain the upper hand.

However... Shi Yan wasn't so sure at this moment.

He frowned and released the Soul Consciousness to sense. With his understanding of the mighty Space power Upanishad, he guessed that Bello was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. Otherwise, Bello wouldn't have only cut the space and confined Blood Devil and the others in the chilling seawater.

"That Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan is at Second Sky of

Incipient God Realm!" Zha Duo confirmed Shi Yan's guess. "We can't win this battle!"

Xia Xin Yan, Fu Wei, Zha Duo, and Leona gathered by Shi Yan. A group of young experts just stood and watched from a distance. They hadn't taken action yet.

An ear-piercing cry sounded. Gu Te, Chief of Brutal Dragon Tribe, also transformed into his dragon body. Just like Bath of the Evil Dragon Tribe, he was rigid as if he was made of rock and iron. He had dragon armor all over his body. The aura of his energy was immense like the sea, rippling through his body, which had subdued people's minds.

Blood Devil hovered by Bath and Gu Te; he looked small, but the enormous energy fluctuations from him had impressed people.

Drops of garnet blood as beautiful as diamonds seeped through Blood Devil's skin. Each of them stored Blood Devil's Soul Consciousness, filled with energy waves that could destroy the whole sky. Blood Devil extended his arm and his finger touched the void. Ten Immortal Demon Blood condensed. In his blood sea Incipient Extent, they slowly turned into ten clones. Each of them had a murderous aura shoot up into the sky. They also understood the energy fluctuation, flying out of his Incipient Extent and dashing towards Kelda.

Inside Feng Yan's Incipient Extent, the wind blades were gliding and hissing ear-piercingly. She had gathered all of her power and aimed it at Kelda.

Bello, Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan, controlled the space blades flying out of his Sea of Consciousness. However, Bath and Gu Te had stopped him before he could have time to attack Yu Shan. Bath and Gu Te shouted, their monster bodies wiggled while thick dragon scales on their bodies sounded explosions. The breath of the two dragons flew out intimidatingly. The dragon breath of the Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe was the force that

gathered the most furious and fiercest power in this world. Currents of dragon breath looked like light columns condensed by energy. The powerful energy fluctuation in there could threaten anybody.

As Space blades of Bello, Chief of Dark Shadow Clan, were confronted by the dragon breath, they couldn't move further to attack Yu Shan.

Six Incipient God Realm experts were taking action in the space passage. Their energy shockwaves were enough to destroy the whole world. The space passage sent billions of sparks into the void. When the energy light beams hit the battleships, they were shattered as if they were made of paper.

The battleships of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion were the high-quality battleships in Agate Star Area. They were really tough. However, at this moment, they were too fragile under such formidable attacks."

"Move! Scatter!"

Xia Xin Yan screamed. Her bold brows knitted together while her beautiful eyes sparkling in the strange light. She didn't look away from the battle between the six Incipient God Realm experts.

All battleships moved quickly in the direction of Agate Star Area. Most of the experts on the battleships were frightened. They were scared because of the battle between the six Incipient God Realm experts. Instinctively, they had a feeling of being defeated already.

"Gather energy and attack Kelda!" Xia Xin Yan gave her order calmly. "Even though the Incipient God Realm is strong, facing many people of our force, we can wear him out to death! As long as we aren't subdued, our energy won't be less than those precursors!"

During the recent years, Xia Xin Yan had always been fighting in the Dark Shadow Clan. With her commandership at the

Windstorm War Department, she had many good attainments in this kind of battle.

Listening to Xia Xin Yan, the warriors of her Windstorm War Department pulled themselves together. They returned to their positions. Waiting until their battleships were tens of thousands of meters away from the six Incipient God Realm experts, they tacitly urged their power Upanishad at the same time, using the Soul Consciousness to lock Kelda.

Immediately, different types of thunderbolts, ice sabers, rising tides, scorching flames, and countless energy ribbons were released massively. They moved like several thousands of shooting stars and furiously dashed towards Kelda.

As they had used their Soul Consciousness to lock Kelda, their fierce attacks seemed to have eyes. They hit Kelda, but none of them had touched Feng Yan, Blood Devil, Gu Te, Bath, or Yu Shan. This kind of attack was skillful, indeed.

At Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, if Kelda had a one-on-one battle, he could kill the lower-realm enemy in just a blink of an eye.

However, at this moment, Blood Devil and Feng Yan were joining hands to attack Kelda. Especially Blood Devil. He had used his Immortal Demon Blood and the Life power Upanishad to create the blood sea above his head. The ten bloody shadows had pushed Kelda into a helter-skelter situation.

Although Feng Yan had consumed a lot of energy, she was a First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert. At this moment, Blood Devil had successfully oppressed Kelda. She didn't need to care about her safety. She just released her powers to attack Kelda as much as she wanted.

When more than one thousand bunches of light from different energies shot towards him like rainbow crossing the sun, they hit Kelda precisely. He frowned as he was impatient and got agitated.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Most of the attacking energy that had hit Kelda's God Body made him sway as if the meteors had impacted him. His God Body even smoked.

Kelda grimaced. He looked at Shi Yan from a distance, cursing something under his breath. Then, he concentrated on Blood Devil.

"Don't stay idle!" Xia Xin Yan was as calm as usual. She called the warriors of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Potion and Tool Pavilion. "Gather your energy and let them see whether the power of many people can hurt them badly or not!"

Everybody became excited. Thousands of warriors of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Windstorm War Department and Potion and Tool Pavilion were all at King God Realm, Original God Realm, and Ethereal God Realm. In Agate Star Area, they were the best of the best force.

After thousands of them had been awakened to join hands, they were able to create the thick attack that looked like perpetual fire raindrops by the edge of Fiery Rain Star Area. They weaved with each other, all targeting Kelda.

As Kelda was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, even if he didn't have Blood Devil and Feng Yan as his opponents, it was still very strenuous to confront the powerful combined force of more than one thousand warriors. Currently, Kelda's situation was very bad.

Streams of powerful energy that attacked Kelda were all guided by the Soul Consciousness, so they precisely avoided Blood Devil and Feng Yan to hit only Kelda.

The proverb said that two fists couldn't beat four hands. The disordered punches could kill the kungfu master. When Xia Xin Yan carried out her plan and coordinated several thousand

warriors to attack at the same time, Kelda was struck hard and he got dizzy eventually. The dazzling, continuous attacks were reflected in his eyes.

Those powers couldn't hurt him instantly, but they could drain his body's defense. Once the energy that he had reserved to defend his God Body was worn out, those attacks could hit him severely. They could even kill him.

Xia Xin Yan had been fighting year round. Once she was placid enough to resist the energy, her performance could make people gawk.

"The Incipient God Realm experts are strong, but they aren't really invincible. As long as we have enough manpower, tens of thousands of King God Realm warriors are still able to kill them!" Xia Xin Yan looked calm and natural as she pushed the black hair above her forehead behind her ears. "If we can use our power wisely, we can defeat them without our four precursors! An Incipient God Realm expert has the power of dozens of Ethereal God Realm experts. Since we have such enormous combined power, it's enough to kill him and leave him no energy to counterattack!"

Her aura had stirred up people. Seeing Kelda being helter-skelter under their thick attacks, they were more certain about her assumption.

The terrifying pressure Chief Bello and leader Kelda of the Dark Shadow Clan had caused them was erased after several words of Xia Xin Yan.

Shi Yan smiled, looking at Xia Xin Yan next to him. He felt so proud. After one hundred years, she has reached an amazing height. Whether it was her wisdom, realm, or leadership, she was always outstanding. In a fierce battle, she wasn't afraid. She could deliberately plan and implement her plan. No wonder she could command the Windstorm War Department of Fighting League.

As the warriors of Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Potion and Tool Pavilion listened to her order and carried out her plan, they had approved her leadership in battle.

With Xia Xin Yan's waves of attacks, Blood Devil and Feng Yan could almost step away from this battle. They just needed to control the situation to not let Kelda break their defense and approach Xia Xin Yan. At this moment, they didn't need to release more energy to attack Kelda. From a distance, Blood Devil glared at Xia Xin Yan, discreetly giving her his compliments. He thought that this woman wasn't ordinary at all.

Chapter 1059: Battling

Shi Yan floated in the void as he watched the battle of the six Incipient God Realm experts. He didn't want to join them.

This battle was going to be recorded in the history of Agate Star Area. It wasn't something that warriors at his level could change. At this moment, he didn't have that competence.

He remembered what that man told him: Try your best to conceal your identity before you reached Incipient God Realm.

The Dark Shadow Clan and the God Clan had a close relationship. Cocker could guess his identity. So did Chief Bello and Kelda when they saw him using his powers. Seeing the God Clan chase after Benny through different star areas, he knew that the God Clan had never quit hunting the Bloodthirsty's bloodline.

Shi Yan was the descendant of the Master of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline.

Once his identity was exposed, the God Clan would try to trap and destroy him at any cost. And it wasn't going to be exclusive to the Ascot family!

Shi Yan knew that he didn't have the competence to resist them now. Staying hidden was vital at this moment. He had to conceal himself to avoid receiving the attack he could never imagine.

Anyway, this battle didn't need a bit of his energy...

It has been one hundred years and Xia Xin Yan's good grasp of the general situation in fighting had surprised Shi Yan. Under her command, warriors of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion had attacked neatly. The four forces took turns to perform their eye-catching powers.

Under the mad destructive attack of thousands of warriors, Kelda was helter-skelter. He couldn't threaten Blood Devil and Feng Yan anymore.

Blood Devil and Feng Yan were free now. They just needed to ensure that Kelda couldn't attack Xia Xin Yan and the others. Then, they didn't need to worry about the situation anymore.

Later on, Kelda's energy had been worn out massively. He started to sweat. It indicated that even if he was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, he couldn't endure such continuous attacks.

Shi Yan could be more relaxed.

As advised by Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Benny were also idle. They just stood and watched the peak battle of the six Incipient God Realm experts from a distance.

Those who were lucky enough to have the chance to watch this battle could harvest something unimaginable, especially Shi Yan...

Yu Shan was still refining the Departed Spirit Jellyfish with her precise heat control. Each of the blue flames was like the container of her soul. They danced swiftly like groups of animated spirits. They gathered and created magic as her mind flickered.

Her flame was burning torrentially and hiding the magical Origin of earth and heaven, which matched the truth of flames in this world.

Blood Devil urged his Life power Upanishad while Demon Blood was boiling in his body. Ten bloody shadows, which looked like Blood Devil, all had part of his powers. They were flying and blocking eight directions around Kelda, preventing him from escaping.

Life power Upanishad was also something he needed to understand thoroughly. Blood Devil's magical deeds had opened a door for Shi Yan, which rose his enthusiasm.

Chief Bello of the Dark Shadow Clan was an Incipient God Realm with Space power, which was extremely rare. While his thoughts changed, the space around him shattered and cracked like broken glass, revealing fine space slits. Those space slits could draw away

the attacking energy that had threatened his life.

Bello's cognition of Space power had reached an unimaginable level. He could confine space or tear it as easily as he pleased. Sometimes, he swayed and moved through spaces. His application of space power had reached the utmost exquisite level.

Shi Yan understood Fire, Life, and Space power Upanishad, but none of them had reached the level of Yu Shan, Blood Devil, and Bello. Observing the battle of the top warriors, especially the ones who had the same power Upanishad, it was the most magical and yet practical experience for the onlookers like Shi Yan.

Of course, he wouldn't let this chance slip away.

If he could harvest some knowledge from the battle of the six Incipient God Realm experts where they had used their profound powers, it would benefit him much more than taking in the Essence Qi of an Incipient God Realm expert.

Shi Yan didn't join the battle. He just stood aside and watched the three familiar powers Upanishad that the three Incipient God Realm experts were using and changing marvelously. They could create countless changes, which reflect the most supernatural feature of the power Upanishad. Shi Yan was touched, sinking in the information uncontrollably.

Finally, he knew how far Incipient God Realm was from his current realm. It was also the first time Shi Yan saw to what extreme degree the Fire, Life, and Space power Upanishad could change.

He quietly learned. His eyes didn't even blink. He had focused wholeheartedly, using his Soul Consciousness to sense. At this moment, his soul altar started to spin. Something was changing subtly in his tier of Power Upanishads as if his energy was simulating the magical abilities that those powers Upanishads were performing...

It was an ingenious sublimation of the soul and realm.

Gu Te and Bath of the Monster Clan were using their monster bodies to join hands and fight Bello.

At Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, Bello had cultivated Space power Upanishad. However, in the battle with Gu Te and Bath, he couldn't gain the upper hand.

Although Monster Clan didn't stress on cultivating the soul, their bodies' toughness was deemed the peak of this world. Their monster bodies were the toughest material that even Space blades couldn't cut through shortly. At most, they could only leave some cuts on the dragon body. At the same time, the dragon breath they released had troubled Bello a lot. His face became more grimaced.

As Kelda was taken care of intensively, he became tired quickly. His aura was reduced massively.

In the beginning, Blood Devil stood still. Later on, he didn't use only his bloody shadows to attack the enemy anymore. His demon body sent out brutal energy fluctuations like that of an exploding star. His body sounded like several explosions had happened while his Blood Qi shot up into the sky.

He had turned into a flow of abundant life energy and fused it with his Incipient Extent. Like a sea of life, his Incipient Extent swarmed over and covered Kelda.

"You guys. Switch your intensive care to the other."

Blood Devil's voice arose all of a sudden when the sea of life derived from his Incipient Extent had covered Kelda entirely. Those layers of life energy contained the magical power of Nature that even Feng Yan couldn't interfere with.

Xia Xin Yan smiled and nodded. She extended her hand and pointed, "We should appreciate the Chief of the Dark Shadow Clan more."

Warriors of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League and

Potion and Tool Pavilion followed her order. They changed their target and brought their pressure to Chief Bello of the Dark Shadow Clan.

Shi Yan would never underestimate the power of a crowd again.

Now he believed that the power of one thousand warriors wisely striking at the same time could kill even Incipient God Realm experts!

Incipient God Realm experts weren't absolutely invincible. Although they could kill the lower-realm warriors in just a blink of an eye, when the number of the low-realm warriors could reach a terrifying figure, they could unite to act at the same time. Then, they would give a terrible headache to Incipient God Realm experts.

Bello was so worried as if he had a flame burning his heart. Gu Te and Bath's wild attacks had distracted him terribly. At this moment, more than one thousand warriors were striking him and pushing him to the corner.

The aura of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish was weakened gradually. Seeing the jellyfish be about to refine by the scorching flame of the Origin, he had become more agitated as he didn't know what to explain to the Ascot family. He continued to create the space passage as he wanted to escape this area.

However, he needed to wholly concentrate his mind in order to tear the space in the space passage to bring the Departed Spirit Jellyfish away.

At this moment, Gu Te and Bath didn't give him time to breathe. And Xia Xin Yan had commanded more than one thousand warriors to bombard him. It was impossible for him to do that.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Fighting League, Monster Clan and Demon Clan had been suffocating the Incipient God Realm experts right from the beginning. However, seeing the two

Incipient God Realm expert draining their energy rapidly under their bombarding, all looked happy. They had more significant respect for the woman who had set up this plan. They were cheered up because of her wisdom and excellent performance.

They could see that they were about to win this fight and at the same time, they were the primary factor that led to this victory.

This made them secretly excited. They began to pour more energy. Their powers Upanishads, Ethereal Extent, powers, and the secret treasures that could enhance their attacks fell like a heavy shower. Their attacks were continuous and extremely precise. They crushed Bello's space blades and sent sparks everywhere.

Everybody was happy as they thought that it was about to over.

However, when the two Dark Shadow experts couldn't stand it anymore, something unexpected happened. Butterfly battleships emerged from the space passage where streamers weaved. As soon as several hundred battleships appeared, countless distinctive butterfly war chariots of the Dark Shadow Clan roared and roamed over like a massive flutter of butterflies.

Xia Xin Yan changed her face as she decided quickly. "Rush in and kill them!"

The war chariots of Windstorm War Department formed a sharp formation. Her figure flashed as she went to the front line of their formation. Their attacking formation was like a sharp, rigid saber thrusting into the coming warriors of the Dark Shadow Clan.

The Windstorm War Department of Fighting League was famous for their swift attacks. Their flying bird war chariots were as agile as electric beams and as sharp as the extreme swords. Warriors of the Fighting League always followed rules and discipline while fighting. As the battles had quenched them, they had learned from experience. Warriors with keen powers Upanishads like Metal, Ice, and Electric were in charge of the tip of their attacking formation.

Warriors with Water, Wind, and Earth powers Upanishad stayed behind the formation to create layers of barriers to protect the people in the front line. Both the attackers and defenders had their clear and distinctive roles, which they had shown through their close-knitted cooperation.

Shadow Ghostly Prison was the hot arena of fiercest battles in Agate Star Area. And the Fighting League was the most outstanding force of this area. They knew all the strategies and tactics. They were indeed the best elite force in Agate Star Area.

There were several hundred warriors remaining in the Windstorm War Department. However, when they formed a formation, they were indeed a whole unit. People couldn't find any gap to attack this formation.

Warriors of the Dark Shadow Clan roamed like a swarm of bees whose hive was broken. They expanded like when people unfolded a fabric sheet. However, Xia Xin Yan's troop had torn a corner of them, piercing directly into the center where the experts of Dark Shadow Clan were gathering.

Shi Yan watched the sharp formation of the Windstorm War Department and he had only one thought in his mind at this moment: they were able to break even the hardest defense!

That elegant yet gorgeous woman was the soul of that formation. She was like the tip of the sword when she used her talents.

"Kill!"

Fu Wei hissed. Her face chilled when she urged the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion to join the battle.

Warriors of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan started to take action. They moved like three furious flood currents swarming over the members of the Dark Shadow Clan. The fierce battle between thousands of warriors from different clans began.

Shi Yan still looked cold. He still hovered while his eyes raked

through the mob of the Dark Shadow Clan, Fighting League, Potion and Tool Pavilion, Monster Clan, and Demon Clan who were killing each other. He could see that the individual fighting competence of the Monster, Demon warriors was much stronger than the warriors of Windstorm War Department. If they fought one-on-one, a Monster, Demon warrior could defeat a Windstorm warrior.

However, in guild combat like this, Shi Yan figured out that the Monster and Demon Clans weren't so good. The cooperation between them was poor and they struggled. No need to mention Windstorm commanded by Xia Xin Yan, they couldn't even be compared to Potion and Tool Pavilion's warriors led by Fu Wei.

This was war. It was not just a battle between some warriors. In this kind of fighting, the army with a commander that knew how to promote the power of the union was much stronger than a vanguard in vain.

Shi Yan frowned. This was the first time he recognized how weak individuals were in this kind of battle with thousands of warriors unless a person's realm had reached a level so strong that he or she could risk their life with the enemy. He also recognized Xia Xin Yan's ability in controlling and promoting the power of her army. This ability was extraordinary and precious, indeed.

Chapter 1060: Leona's Spearhead!

Inside the space passage that connected Agate Star Area and Ancient God Star Area, the fiercest war had begun. Both sides hadn't invested much power in this battle. It could be considered a small-scale battle. However, the effect of it could raise a lot of attention.

The shockwaves of the furious battle of the six Incipient God Realm experts were too powerful to this passage as it had almost broken the passage. Sparks of energy shot aimlessly, which terrified people and forced them to dodge.

The other warriors were alert enough to avoid the area where the Incipient God Realm experts were fighting. If they were careless and got hit, their souls could perish.

Dark Shadow Clan was a feudal vassal of the God Clan. However, as they could stay subtly for many years in Shadow Ghostly Prison and fight the strongest force, the Fighting League, they were proven to not be ordinary.

Just like the Fighting League, the Dark Shadow Clan was also a force that had excelled at combat. Their experts had formed the snake-head-formation, which could change swiftly and flexibly. Although they had acted mysteriously, they could always notice the whole situation and a powerful fighting competence.

Among the Demon Clan, Monster Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Fighting League, the four powerful forces of Agate Star Area, the Monster Clan and Demon Clan had an intimidating individual fighting ability. However, they were clumsy in using big army formations to fight in a war. While fighting the Dark Shadow clan, they didn't have a formation so they couldn't promote the power of the army.

As Fu Wei was controlling Potion and Tool Pavilion's force, they had also formed a fighting formation, which was a hexagon with

six attacking points.

However, the power of an individual of Potion and Tool Pavilion was the weakest compared to the others in this group of four forces. Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion had held an important role in Agate Star Area for a long time. They had earned respect from forces everywhere. Thus, they didn't have many chances to experience bloody battles. That was why they couldn't utilize the full power of the hexagonal formation.

Only the Windstorm War Department of the Fighting League hadn't fallen into the lower hand while fighting members of Dark Shadow Clan. And they had even inclined to gain the upper hand. Fighting League's forces had been fighting for years in Shadow Ghostly Prison. They had bloody experience from the battles. Each warrior of this force was very familiar with guild combat. Under Xia Xin Yan's command, they had all performed their best.

Shi Yan's team shrank into a chunk as they watched the battle between the Dark Shadow Clan and the native forces of Agate Star Area. It seemed like they didn't want to join this battle.

Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, Benny, and Xuan Ming gathered around Shi Yan. As he didn't say anything, they stood in silence.

When Xuan Fei saw the battle become fiercer, she proactively went to Shi Yan. She didn't look panic-stricken at all.

"Only the force that the sister is controlling is good. The other three are just so-so," assessed Xuan Fei arrogantly.

"You must have experienced the same battles, eh? According to you, the competence of your Fiery Rain Star Area is very intimidating, right?" Shi Yan turned his head to look at her, his eyes calm. "What do you think about the Dark Shadow Clan?"

Xuan Fei shook her head. "Their competence can't be compared to the official legion of the God Clan. You've never seen the God Clan's fierce competence before..."

Pausing for a while, Xuan Fei continued earnestly. "If the same one-thousand-soldier army of the God Clan came here, it could effortlessly destroy the forces of your Agate Star Area even when you join with Dark Shadow Clan."

Shi Yan shivered. "Even when the Fighting League, Potion and Tool Pavilion, Monster Clan, and Demon Clan join hands with the Dark Shadow Clan, they won't be able to resist the army of one thousand soldiers from the God Clan?"

"If they could triple their soldiers here, perhaps they could endure a battle." Xuan Fei nodded and sighed, "The power of God Clan's legion is the nightmare of all star areas. They are the top confirmed strongest warriors. As you haven't seen them directly, you could never imagine their intimidation. Fiery Rain Star Area has fought against them several times. We had to bear great losses in the case we outnumbered them. If the realm of the troopers from the two sides was equal, we would have been swept away as easily as breaking dried branches of trees."

People all changed their visages.

"The God Clan could take down half of the universe not only because they have so many experts, but also because they have excelled in guild combat. Their good grasp of guild combat isn't something you could imagine. Only when you see with your own eyes will you know how terrifying this clan is." Xuan Fei bit her lower lip, her eyes showing a gleam of sadness. "My family was destroyed by a troop of the God Clan. From that day, I knew how terrible the corps of this clan is. Don't think that the Dark Shadow Clan is strong. If it's strong enough, it wouldn't just be a vassal of God Clan."

"In a simple comparison, if it's a troop of Original God Realm warriors, the God Clan's troop of one thousand can beat your troop of ten thousand... It's the gap between you guys."

Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Leona, and the others were flustered.

"The God Clan's troops are indeed powerful... I used to encounter them..."

Benny suddenly talked and looked at Shi Yan and Leona with a distressed face. "However, our bloodline has excellent knowledge in guild combat. We're not that much worse than the God Clan."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

Xuan Fei didn't agree with him and she sneered, "Little buddy, you're realm isn't high but your voice is big enough. In this vast sea of stars, I have never heard of any troop in any star area that could be compared to the God Clan's. You don't actually know how vast the world is."

Benny snorted and said arrogantly, "It's because you're stupid."

The two of them looked like they were about to quarrel. Shi Yan waved his hand, signaling Benny not to talk too much with Xuan Fei while he contemplated.

Shi Yan knew that the Bloodthirsty's bloodline at the peak of their time had almost uprooted the God Clan. Twelve great families of God Clan had joined hands and sacrificed countless warriors to stop the attack of the Bloodthirsty's troop.

As the God Clan was too powerful, the Bloodthirsty's bloodline that year was evidently formidable and intimidating. Benny came from the Destruction family of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline, which used to overlord the star area where they dwelled. Their family should have some records of excellent war strategies and tactics. Thus, he wasn't afraid of the competence of the God Clan's troops.

When he could make it clear, his shivering heart would become steady. Shi Yan was now sure that if this world could have a troop that could resist God Clan, it was the troop of Bloodthirsty!

"We also have a set of materials to train on how to command the army. Although I've never made a comparison, I thought... it wouldn't be weaker than the God Clan's." Leona didn't like to talk

much. However, when she spoke, her ferocious face always had a gleam of coldness. "The Bloody Legion I had built was based on the method that my family has imparted through generations. In our Raging Flame Star Area, my Bloody Legion had never lost a battle."

Leona's spearhead emerged.

Her words were full of confidence. If she could control a corporation, she could compete with God Clan.

"Well, the people of Agate Star Area are too arrogant. The latter is more arrogant than the former. Sigh, I guess you've never seen how strong God Clan is. That's why you dare to talk haughtily. One day... when you meet them, you will know how funny your statement is today." Xuan Fei shook her head as she was disdainful.

Shi Yan didn't mind her and just looked at Leona. Shi Yan suddenly remembered that Leona was the regimental commander of the Bloody Legion. And the reputation of this legion in Raging Flame Star Area could give her such confidence.

He knew Leona wasn't an impulsive person. Pondering for a while, he asked, "What do you think about Xia Xin Yan's troop? And how about the formation she's using now?"

"Honestly," Leona thought for a while and then said frankly, "If I can have a troop with similar competence after one year or training, I can tear her force easily! If they let me command the troops of Monster Clan and Demon Clan, I'm sure I can maximize their competence several times further!"

Hearing her, people kept silent. All looked at her with astonishment.

Shi Yan was also startled. "Is it true?"

"Yes," Leona was calm. "I don't know the God Clan's fighting competence, but if you let me train a troop of Original God Realm warriors strenuously, I'm sure I can compete with the God Clan."

"Arrogant and conceited!" Xuan Fei concluded, her face

disdainful.

Xuan Ming didn't say anything. However, he was looking at Leona with his odd visage.

"Why don't you try it?" Ka Tuo was shocked, but he managed to speak. "Senior, Monster Clan and Demon Clan have a good relationship with you. Can you talk to them?"

"Okay, I'm going to talk them about this." Shi Yan's thought flickered in his mind. He nodded and he waved at Leona. He took her to the area of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan where they were fighting. After deliberately killing some Dark Shadow clansmen, he found McGee, Ghost Hunter, and Gu Mo. "I want to talk to you guys."

Ghost Hunter didn't say anything as he nodded. This kind of absolute trust showed that he had no doubt for Shi Yan.

McGee and Gu Mo were surprised. They were still fighting with the Dark Shadow Clan, so they had to stop to ask in unison, "What?"

Pointing at Leona, Shi Yan asked, "What do you think about letting her command your troops for a while?"

"Her?" McGee and Gu Mo had a bewildered countenance. Gu Mo frowned, "If Xia Xin Yan wants to command us, I'm happy to let her do so. But her... are you sure?"

"Yes, she can." Shi Yan confirmed.

"... Let her try." McGee and Gu Mo hesitated for a while. However, they suspiciously agreed. They looked strange when they eyed Leona.

The reason why they agreed with him was because Shi Yan had helped them twice. He had used his supernatural Star power Upanishad to help them move through the chaotic sea of shooting stars. Then, he had contacted the expert from the other star area to save them from the icy sea controlled by the Departed Spirit

Jellyfish.

"Just hit it as hard as you can." Shi Yan glanced at Leona. He didn't stay here, leaving from the battle side.

Shi Yan had taken in the Essence Qi of dozens of dead warriors. His acupuncture points were swollen and his body was aching. He was both fearful and happy as he thought that the bloody battlefield was the right place for him in this world.

He came back to hover by Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Xuan Fei. They were all looking at Leona, waiting hopefully.

In between the formation of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan, cold-faced Leona was talking to McGee, Ghost Hunter, and Go Mo. She was about to spread her order. McGee, Gu Mo, and Ghost Hunter nodded quietly as they had agreed with her.

The members of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan scattering around suddenly changed their formation!

The clansmen of the two clans started to arrange and line up. Now they looked like two open wings of the bloody demon, which now began to show its fangs. A brutal, savage aura burst out from that formation instantly.

Shi Yan, Xuan Ming, and Ka Tuo were baffled, their eyes brightening.

Xuan Fei gawked and covered her mouth. "Oh my God!"

Chapter 1061: I Say You Can Do it so You Can Do it!

The Monster Clan and Demon Clan had fought like loose sand without any worth-mentioned strategy. And they didn't even have a concept of the so-called guild combat. They were fighting against the Dark Shadow Clan with the power of their individual bodies only.

When Leona took control of the troops from the two clans, the Demon and Monster clansmen who participated in the battle didn't feel much change. However, Shi Yan, Fei Lan, Benny, Xuan Ming, Xuan Fei, the onlookers, could see the absolute difference.

Troops of Monster Clan and Demon Clan operated like the two wings of a demon. A brutal, resentful aura burst out, guiding the clansmen of the Demon Clan and Monster Clan. While their formation was changing, their auras combined into one.

At this moment, the Monster and Demon clansmen had formed a solid formation that couldn't be divided or broken. This kind of intimidation had subdued people immediately.

The individual fighting competence of the Monster and Demon Clansmen had surpassed the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Fighting League. They hadn't shown that before because they weren't good at guild combat.

Leona was the regimental commander of the Bloody Legion, a descendant of the Dark Sky family. She had inherited the talent of planning and developing strategies from the Bloodthirsty's bloodline. The aura she had generated was enough to tear the Dark Shadow Clan into pieces.

They could see clearly that the Dark Shadow warriors had to dodge strenuously after the Monster and Demon warriors knew how to back each other up.

Dark Shadow warriors were killed massively under the mighty power of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. The Dark Shadow clansmen who were fighting the Monster and Demon troops felt a significant pressure that they had never felt before. At this moment, they had to mobilize the warriors who were fighting Potion and Tool Pavilion to help them deal with the Monster and Demon warriors.

Those members of the Dark Shadow Clan didn't know what was going on. They were so confused.

Apparently, the members of the two clans couldn't cooperate well before. However, it was unknown why they suddenly had tactics as if their eyes had opened. This was an earth-shaking change, indeed. Now, they gathered into teams of three or five. Those teams cooperated well to fight with tactics to create a big formation. Their terrifying fighting competence was now finally revealed.

Instantaneously, the clansmen of the Dark Shadow Clan started to detach and collapse, which were the signs of defeat.

Xuan Fei covered her mouth, her face frightened. She was perplexed, seeing the earth-shaking change of the Monster and Demon formation after Leona had joined them. She was so bewildered that she couldn't explain it, "It... how could it be?!? They just added one more member and everything changed dramatically like that?"

Xuan Ming also discolored. He looked at Leona bewilderedly and then glanced at Shi Yan hovering next to him. His face was strange, indeed.

At this moment, Xuan Ming had a strange feeling. This young man was predestined to be the brightest star in this vast universe. No one could shade his light!

The onlookers who were still calm were all people who had known Leona before. Fei Lan was as calm as usual as if she knew

that Leona had such ability. Ka Tuo grinned evilly while he looked at Leona in the middle of the Demon and Monster warrior formations. He thought that the slaughtering star of Raging Flame Star Area was back!

"Her understanding and attainment of guild combat are much more... exquisite than that woman's." Benny let out a low scream. "She could be compared to my family's precursors that year!"

Everybody could see how familiar Leona was in using formations to battle. She was much more skillful than Xia Xin Yan. However, this kind of difference couldn't be made up of experiences gained from battling. So, it was likely because of some secret inheritance.

After Leona had entered the formation, the soldiers of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan seemed to have new lives. Now they had a formation with a soul. She seemed to have some magical method that could combine the auras of the individual soldiers into one united, massive aura that was also wild and savage. This aura could even affect the enemy's minds, making them dispirited and distressed as if they had already been defeated.

The battle between the six Incipient God Realm experts, Fighting League, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Dark Shadow Clan, as well as Yu Shan refining the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, had happened in the space passage.

Inside the space passage, death could happen at any time. No force could save all of their warriors. However, with a close look, they saw that the ferocious aura of the Demon Clan and Monster Clan improved after Leona had joined them. More and more warriors of Dark Shadow Clan were killed. Their death rate was much faster than that of the four forces of Agate Star Area.

With this tendency, the Dark Shadow Clan was going to be defeated soon. Its warriors were killed rapidly.

"The domineering corps is the sharpest weapon in the battle between star areas. Experts who know how to train the troopers

are the most precious resource of every big star area. All the forces compete to recruit them." Xuan Fei was baffled for a while before she spoke to Shi Yan, "Although she had just taken the commandship of the God Clan and Monster Clan, she's reached such heights. If... If she has time to train them for years, honestly, I can't imagine how strong they can be!"

Pondering for a while, Xuan Fei said, "Perhaps, she can have the force to battle against the legions of the God Clan.

Leona had performed her powerful deeds, which had convinced Xuan Fei. Eventually, she had to admit that the God Clan's corps weren't absolutely invincible.

"Can you ask her to go to our Fiery Rain Star Area to help us train our legions? Don't worry. All forces in our Fiery Rain Star Area would do anything to protect her!" Xuan Fei asked Shi Yan earnestly.

Frowning, Shi Yan said huskily. "We should talk about it later."

Through today's battle, Shi Yan realized how an outstanding leader could facilitate his force during battles between different forces.

He knew that he wasn't this kind of talent. Since Leona was a genius in this field and the God Clan had carried out their invasion of Agate Star Area, Shi Yan had made up his mind. After they were done here, he had to do something to maximize Leona's ability.

Shi Yan believed that after this time, Monster Clan and Demon Clan would give their approval of Shi Yan and Leona. Then, Leona would bring an earth-shaking change to the corps of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. They would become invincible eventually!

Leona alone had changed the general picture of this battle. The triumph now leaned towards the Agate Star Area's forces. The defeat of the Dark Shadow Clan was just a matter of time now.

Chief Bello of Dark Shadow Clan and his subordinate Kelda were

sensitive enough to find this change. They were worried discreetly.

Their fellows were being massacred. Each of their fellows was from the elite force of their clan. Dark Shadow Clan was just one of many feudal vassals of the God Clan. If they had a significant loss in this area, it would affect their clan in the future badly. Of course, they didn't want to sacrifice their clansmen here.

Bello wanted to retreat. Bath and Gu Te were giving him a lot of trouble. He looked at Yu Shan as his murderous intentions arose.

Yu Shan was the ringleader who had caused the defeat of the Dark Shadow Clan. Without her, Blood Devil's group couldn't get out of his trap. They would have died and the Departed Spirit Jellyfish would have been safe.

While Bello's murderous intention was arising in his head, he purposely approached Yu Shan during the fight with Bath and Gu Te.

Yu Shan's effort had been invested in refining the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. At this moment, the jellyfish had shrunk to a much smaller size while the meat lumps in its body couldn't fume toxic smokes anymore. It just wanted to curl into a ball and find a chance to get rid of her refining.

Bello's Incipient Extent flew out all of a sudden.

His Incipient Extent was like a massive mirror that reflected the real world. Abruptly, the mirror cracked and the real world also had countless fine space slits simultaneously.

"Space rupture!" Zha Duo screamed in fear. "Bello wants to exterminate the space in this space passage. The moment the space passage collapses, he will use his Incipient God Realm Space power Upanishad to move all the members of the Dark Shadow Clan away and escape from this place. However, we will be thrown into the chaotic space current!"

Listening to him, Shi Yan changed his face. Xuan Fei, Fei Lan,

and the others were also frightened.

Bello was pushed into a dead corner!

Once the space passage collapsed, it would also bury the entrance that they had spent an enormous amount of manpower and materials to clear. And no one knew when they could come and clear the entrance once again.

He was compelled to a hopeless situation. Even if he had to pay a big price and receive punishment from the God Clan, he had to change this deadly situation.

"Do you know how to stop him?" shouted Shi Yan.

Zha Duo frowned. "He's at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm with Space power. He has cleared this space power. He has the favorable situation. How can we stop him?"

"So we don't have a solution?" Shi Yan paled.

He knew how urgent and dangerous this situation was. If this space passage ruptured, Bello could bring his fellows and run away while they would have to bury their bodies here altogether!

As Bello's Incipient Extent reflected the real world, when his Incipient Extent burst off, the real would change accordingly. First, the space would settle. Then, it would reveal countless space cracks where outer space streamers fluttered with a desolate aura.

All the experts could recognize the deadly situation. However, at this moment, space slits were now covering Bello, so no one could approach him.

Even Bath and Gu Te had to back off seeing Bello burst out crazily.

Bello became the center of the rupture. He continually gathered his energy, which made his Incipient Extent crack further. Also, the real world had to bear the same consequence.

"Let Ka Tuo do that! His Chaos power Upanishad can twist even

space, so that man can't smash this space. However, remember to do that at the moment that space is about to collapse. Otherwise, he will be killed instantly!" At this moment, the Ring Spirit could also feel the danger. It sent Shi Yan a feeble soul message.

Shi Yan was shaken. He called Ka Tuo. "You go there! Get to the area of those thick space slits. When this space is about to collapse, you must release all of your chaotic and twisting energy! Remember, you must do this with precise timing. You can stop him!"

Ka Tuo was bewildered, pointing at himself with astonishment. "I can do that?"

"I say you can do it so you can do it! Move!" shouted Shi Yan.

Ka Tuo was startled.

"Roll away!" Fei Lan shouted ear-piercingly.

Ka Tuo shook, flying towards the area where Bello was gathering the space slits. He came right under Bello's Incipient Extent, continually gliding between the space slits. He looked at Bello's Incipient Extent, which was changing continuously above his head. His face was tense and restless. He seemed to not be too confident.

Chapter 1062: Really... I Didn't do it Intentionally...

"Can he do that?"

Zha Duo frowned. Apparently, he didn't highly evaluate Ka Tuo highly.

Aside from him, everybody else looked oddly at him besides Shi Yan and Fei Lan. They thought that leaving this to Ka Tuo was a big mistake!

"What solution do you have then?" Shi Yan snorted.

When Zha Duo found that Bello wanted to rupture the space here, he instinctively left Potion and Tool Pavilion's formation to come here.

During this tough journey, whenever they had fallen into danger, Shi Yan could always convert a threat to safety. Moreover, Shi Yan also cultivated Space power Upanishad. That was why he came to discuss this with Shi Yan. He had never thought that Shi Yan would let Ka Tuo handle it. He thought he had made a wrong decision.

However, he didn't have any other option. That expert had cultivated Space power Upanishad at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. When he decided to rupture space, how terrible would it be!

"I... I don't have any solution..." Zha Duo stammered.

"Then shut the f*ck up!" Shi Yan wasn't polite. Evidently, he didn't put Zha Duo's objection in his eyes, his attitude fierce.

Zha Duo didn't dare to snap back.

Shi Yan had used his real competence to prove that if he got indignant, he could kill Zha Duo for sure. Especially today, Shi Yan had gained the approval of Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and

Fighting League. With the four Incipient God Realm experts standing behind him, he knew that he couldn't treat Shi Yan as he used to do, even if Zha Duo got haughtier.

Thus, he could only keep silent.

Xuan Fei suddenly changed her face. "No, it's not true! That man is going to break the space. He just wants to kill my master!"

Xuan Fei didn't notice the others when they were talking to each other. Instead, she observed her teacher Yu Shan. At this moment, all the space slits were moving towards Yu Shan.

Xuan Fei was startled. She screamed ear-piercingly, "My master is using all her efforts to refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. She can't resist it! Save my master! Quick!"

Shi Yan's group was startled. Now they all understood Bello's plan.

Bello had spent countless manpower to clear this space passage to connect Agate Star Area and Old God Star Area. Of course, he wouldn't want to destroy this laborious work. Thus, he had just fooled them by changing his Incipient Extent. He just wanted to get rid of Bath and Gu Te to attack Yu Shan.

Although they knew his intentions now, Ka Tuo didn't know it. If he still took action as he was told, should he receive a fatal consequence?

Fei Lan changed her face. She wanted to rescue Ka Tuo immediately.

"Don't!" Shi Yan hurried to stop her. "Don't go there! You can't help him. You could be killed too!"

All of them now observed Ka Tuo.

This Pirate leader in Raging Flame Star Area had his realm increase rapidly after he had gone with Shi Yan to this star area. At this moment, he was at Peak of Original God Realm. Soon, he

would reach the next realm.

However, even if he was stronger, he couldn't withstand Bello at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm.

All of them thought that Ka Tuo would die. Shi Yan also had this thought.

However, at the moment they felt that their hands were tied, Ka Tuo touched his glabella. His twisted Chaos power Upanishad was urged. Corpses of warriors from different clans, dregs in space passage, and even the small pieces of broken stars were attracted to him, hovering around his body. At the same time, remnants of energy also flew towards him.

After a few seconds, Ka Tuo was now like a whale taking in water. He had collected a big mess of junk from outer space.

He was still mobilizing the energy of his power Upanishad, attracting more lifeless matters. They gathered and created a disordered magnetic field that twirled around him. That magnetic field could actually mess up the void in this area!

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The space slits, which used to look like light beams in the horizon now crossed each other in the same area.

Space twisted chaotically all of a sudden!

The space slits were now in turmoil. They flashed and radiated the dazzling halos like when a star was about to explode. The energy rippling from that area was so terrifying.

Everybody could see clearly that Chief Bello of the Dark Shadow Clan was aghast. His plan seemed to have been interfered. He wanted to restore the process but it was too late!

The space slits overlapped each other. They exploded blindingly. At this moment, no one could open the eyes to see what was going on.

The fight between the Incipient God Realm experts had to stop. The bloody battle between the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Dark Shadow Clan also paused. Instantaneously, several thousand warriors had to run away to dodge the area of the bursting intensive light.

No one knows what was going to happen.

Even Chief Bello of the Dark Shadow Clan didn't know what could happen to them.

As the intensive light pierced their eyes, Shi Yan couldn't see anything. However, his Soul Consciousness could sense the formidable energy fluctuations. Beams of space energy from the chaotic space currents were strong enough to kill even Incipient God Realm experts!

Inside the extreme light, he could feel the layers of debris around Ka Tuo shatter. However, Ka Tuo's life energy was still fluctuating.

He knew that Ka Tuo was still alive.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The extremely explosive energy boomed grumbly and unceasingly. The blinding light was still covering every place. Everybody tried to dodge this danger and moved far from that deadly area.

Shi Yan could feel the magical change of space. He knew something terrible was happening. He also shouted and asked people to move far away from this area.

After an unknown time, the beautiful but dazzling light slowly disappeared. People's visibility was restored. All then fixed their eyes on that area.

No member of the Dark Shadow Clan remained! All had disappeared!

Yu Shan looked disheveled. She had a trickle of blood on the

corner of her mouth. She was hiding together with Bath and Gu Te. The three of them were astounded, looking at the area where space had exploded.

At this moment, space energy ripples started to settle and dissolve. Countless small pieces of broken stars, bones, remnants of energy, and dust from the vast universe accumulated in that area that blocked the space passage. The space passage between Agate Star Area and Ancient God Star Area was sealed one more time. At this moment, it was much tougher than the barrier between Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area. Moreover, it was formed unexpectedly and naturally.

The Departed Spirit Jellyfish disappeared. However, there was a bunch of gray gossamer bobbing in the void with the feeble aura of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish.

When Shi Yan saw those gossamer fibers from a distance, he felt the mark in his host soul's glabella get hotter as if it was boiling up. In the next moment, a powerful suction force arose. Shi Yan then saw the gossamers like wisps of smoke fly towards him and enter his glabella.

"Ah!" Yu Shan couldn't help but scream hoarsely. She immediately grimaced.

At this moment, there was neither a member of the Dark Shadow Clan nor the Departed Spirit Jellyfish lingering in this area. Hearing Yu Shan shout when there wasn't any danger now, all warriors turned to look at her.

"Bastard!" Yu Shan shouted. "Didn't you say that the soul remnants of the jellyfish would belong to me? You despicable kid!"

Xuan Fei also looked at him hostilely and scolded, "Loathsome!"

Actually, Shi Yan couldn't control the mark on his forehead. He couldn't prevent the gray gossamers from entering his body. While Yu Shan and Xuan Fei were scolding him, Shi Yan had finished

taking in all the gossamers. His host soul felt full and happy as if it just had a wonderful feast after it was starving for a long time.

Ka Tuo paled, hovering by the space barrier that was completely sealed. He observed it with an astonished face and muttered, "What happened?"

No one could explain to him.

"Where are the Dark Shadow clansmen?" Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion screamed.

"On the other side of the space barrier," Blood Devil answered calmly. "At the moment the explosion happened, that Chief of Dark Shadow Clan who cultivates Space power Upanishad had moved a small area of space here in just a blink. He has brought all the members of his clan to that side of the space barrier. Now, this space passage is blocked by that barrier. The Dark Shadow Clan and we are just a barrier apart. We are at two different ends of this space passage."

"Ah, but why did they have to run away that fast?" Ka Tuo asked.

"If they didn't run away, all the members of the Dark Shadow Clan would have been buried here." Blood Devil glanced at Ka Tuo with an odd countenance. "If they stayed in this space passage, they would have cut the connection with the God Clan in Ancient God Star Area. Then, with only their force, how could the Dark Shadow Clan avoid the other mighty forces of Agate Star Area and their hunt?"

Listening to him, they all understood the situation.

It was true. If God Clan didn't support them and the conspiracy of Dark Shadow Clan had been exposed, how could they have stayed in Agate Star Area for any longer? Only death awaited them.

Bello wasn't dumb. The moment the others hadn't figured it out, he knew what to do. He had made a quick decision to use his supernatural powers to bring the Dark Shadow clansmen to the

other side of the barrier. Thus, unless the warriors of Agate Star Area proactively broke this barrier, they couldn't do anything harmful to the Dark Shadow Clan.

Of course, after this formidable commotion, the great conspiracy that God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan had plotted for thousands of years was now a stillborn child.

If they still wanted to invade Agate Star Area, they had to break this barrier, which was created naturally and yet strangely. It was going to require a lot of effort, manpower, and materials from the God Clan.

"What did you do after all?" Gu Te looked at Ka Tuo.

Everybody else looked at Ka Tuo.

Ka Tuo felt innocent. He shook his head continually. "I... I don't know. I just acted as I was told by my senior."

Everybody shifted their look to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan also wore an innocent look and forced a smile, "Don't look at me. I don't know what had happened."

"Despicable bastard!" Yu Shan rolled her beautiful eyes and looked at him indignantly, "You took the payment that belonged to me! You betrayed us! Didn't you plan that right at the beginning?"

Shi Yan felt so reluctant. He stooped and unfolded his hand begrudgingly. "Really... I didn't plan anything. It was not on purpose. I'm so sorry. It's not what I wanted."

"We should go!" Yu Shan took a deep breath and threw Shi Yan a cold glare. She took Xuan Fei and left with rage. They disappeared from the space passage. They would hold this grudge against Shi Yan until they died.

As the four Incipient God Realm experts including Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan were here together with thousands of warriors of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and

Potion and Tool Pavilion, Yu Shan knew she couldn't trouble Shi Yan. Thus, she had to leave with a grudge.

"Senior, you're so cunning." Ka Tuo appraised. He also thought that Shi Yan had just pretended to be innocent.

Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan also wore awkward looks as if they thought that Shi Yan had plotted against Yu Shan and Xuan Fei and taken the spoils he had promised them.

"I... I didn't do it intentionally. Why do you look at me like that?" Shi Yan thought he couldn't clean himself even if he jumped into the Yellow River.

Chapter 1063: Burn Your Hand, Feel the Heat

"She said you took her spoils. What was that?" Blood Devil was surprised. "Those gossamers of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish you had absorbed?"

Listening to Blood Devil, Shi Yan frowned. He needed to check his soul altar.

He didn't know how magical the soul gossamers of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish were. The Ring Spirit didn't explain it to him clearly. Yu Shan didn't say whether the benefit she wanted was the soul gossamers from the Departed Spirit Jellyfish or not.

Checking his soul altar, he found black threads gathering in his host soul.

His host soul now had an incredible feeling. He could feel a part of his soul had been sent to the gossamers and blended with them.

Shi Yan slightly changed his visage and tried to contact the Ring Spirit to make his situation clear.

The Ring Spirit didn't answer him.

It seemed to appear only when he was in a fatal danger or something very crucial that made the Ring Spirit feel tense. Usually, it would stay dormant and not release any beam of soul energy.

Cursing under his breath, Shi Yan put his mind in his host soul and observed.

Shortly after, the fine, black gossamers had gathered and condensed into a black bead that hovered in his host soul. This bead was as big as his fingertip, but it had a subtle soul energy fluctuation. Shi Yan didn't know its functions, anyway.

His thoughts flickered and the bead in his soul emerged in his

palm. Shi Yan had a feeling that this bead was somehow interlinked with his soul. The bead that was as black as ink fell on his palm. At first glance, it looked dull and ordinary. It wasn't crystal clear or beautiful.

He pinched the bead and wiggled his wrist in front of Blood Devil. "The gossamers of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish have condensed into this thing. Do you know it?"

Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te were the three Incipient God Realm experts. They all stepped forward to observe the bead. After a while, they all shook their heads.

Feng Yan, Fu Wei, Xia Xin Yan, and McGee were the ones who had a good relationship with Shi Yan. They all came to see. They observed the bead but none of them could guess the profile or know what that bead could do.

"Maybe it's a soul class material to refine divine weapons." Fu Wei contemplated for a while and then said, "This bead has subtle energy fluctuations. Some rare soul class Original Incipient Grade materials have this feature. However, I'm just guessing. I'm not sure if it's true."

Listening to Fu Wei, they all nodded as they thought that it was logical.

Shi Yan grinned. He didn't say anything. His thoughts flickered and the bead disappeared. It reappeared in the host soul. Shi Yan could hide this bead in his soul and it seemed to have some magical connection with his soul.

"It's over now... Although something unexpected happened, the result was satisfactory." Blood Devil pondered for a while and then pitched his voice, "We've confirmed that the Dark Shadow Clan has some plan with the God Clan to invade Agate Star Area. Today, this space passage has been sealed for the second time. Within a short period, our Agate Star Area will be safe. It's time to deal with the betrayers."

Fu Wei and Zha Duo darkened their faces.

Everybody else looked at the two of them.

"Our Potion and Tool Pavilion will treat the Great Elder with what he deserves. We will give you an answer," hissed Zha Duo.

"I know that Potion and Tool Pavilion's Elder Conference is around the corner, right?" Feng Yan smiled. "I'm going with you guys. I'm willing to be a witness. We will prove the Dark Shadow Clan's conspiracy. If we go now, I think we can be there on time. Of course, we have to speed up."

"We'll come back immediately!" Fu Wei said resolutely.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion's Elder Conference would determine the future of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Even the Pavilion Master's selection would depend on this conference. It was a critical event of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

As Zhad Duo and Fu Wei were elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion and had been confined for a long time in this space passage, they were always worried as if they had a flame burn their hearts. As the situation was settled today, they didn't need to press it down anymore. They wanted to leave immediately.

Great Elder Zuo Lou of Potion and Tool Pavilion was one of the ringleaders of Agate Star Area's invasion this time. This man had had an agreement with the God Clan to support the Dark Shadow Clan to invade Agate Star Area. If this man stood still, people would never ease their minds.

Thus, seeing Zha Duo and Fu Wei hurry to leave, nobody held them back. They wished that those two could handle Zuo Lou as soon as possible.

As Feng Yan and Bettina had a close relationship, she could represent the Fighting League to clarify the relationship between the Dark Shadow Clan and God Clan. She could help Zha Duo and Fu Wei deal with the Great Elder. She spoke to Xia Xin Yan and left

with Zha Duo and Fu Wei.

This time, they didn't choose the route where the shooting star was wreaking havoc to return. Without the threat of the Dark Shadow Clan, they used the regular path to come back.

"Little girl, I, by the name of the Chief of the Evil Dragon Tribe, invite you to be the trainer for our troops. Just name whatever condition you want!" Suddenly, Bath asked solemnly and looked straight at Leona.

The others were bewildered. However, they reacted timely and their eyes brightened.

"Come to our Brutal Dragon Tribe! What Bath can offer you, I can too!" Gu Te approached immediately and offered honestly.

"Our Fighting League also invites you to join us." Xia Xin Yan smiled, gliding forward. She said gently, "Jie-jie, you are so powerful. I must follow you to learn a lot of good tactics. Please don't hesitate."

Blood Devil had a strange look. He just grinned and didn't join this commotion. Instead, he looked at Shi Yan.

After this battle, everybody had seen Leona's value. She could increase the Monster Clan and Demon Clan's fighting competence several times in just a blink of an eye. If she could train their corps for a while, how strong would they become?

The leaders who knew how to direct guild combat were the rarest resources in this world. As Bath and Gu Te knew the value of this kind of warrior, they didn't hesitate to offer big benefits.

Everybody then looked at Leona. The woman with a ferocious, ugly face had become the focus. She was the most-welcomed warrior who everybody wanted to have her in their force.

She frowned and didn't say a word. Instead, she looked at Shi Yan.

Everybody was bewildered. Gradually, they found something as they looked at what she was looking.

Bath, Gu Te, and Xia Xin Yan smiled and approached Shi Yan.

"Kid, when I heard you were in trouble in Shadow Ghostly Prison, I hurried to get my ass here. See, I care about you a lot! You and McGee are good friends too. Come to our Evil Dragon Tribe, okay?" Bath invited.

"Ghost Hunter has joined our Brutal Dragon Tribe. Come to us, we will do our best to help Ghost Hunter get the leading position. He can be the Chief of our Brutal Dragon Tribe in the future. What do you think?" smiled Gu Te.

"I have so many things I want to learn from that sister," Xia Xin Yan smiled and threw him a charming, sexy look.

Shi Yan burst out laughing, raising his hands. "Stop it!"

Everybody looked at him.

"God Clan won't drop its plan." Shi Yan took a deep breath. "I don't think this barrier can hold the God Clan forever. I think... The death of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish and the defeat of the Dark Shadow Clan will stir up the raging flame of God Clan. Agate Star Area will be safe for a while. However, we must be cautious. We must prepare for the next wave of attack. We'll have time to cultivate more. We should try our best to enhance our fighting competence."

He looked at Leona. "You guys all know how valuable a powerful commander is. I suggest the Brutal Dragon Tribe, Evil Dragon Tribe, and the Demon Clan send a troop of yours to make a combined corps. Leona will train this corps. I think that this corps will become the sharp weapon of Agate Star Area to deal with God Clan."

Bath and Gu Te were surprised. They pondered.

Blood Devil guffawed. "I support this idea."

All of them could see that Leona followed Shi Yan. At the same time, Shi Yan and Blood Devil had a close relationship. If Brutal Dragon Tribe and Evil Dragon Tribe sent their elite forces to Leona's management, they knew that their lethality would increase massively. However... Since Leona was the commander, if she leaned towards the Demon Clan, would the Monster Clan receive disadvantages?

Bath and Gu Te were the Chiefs of their tribes. They needed to consider a lot of things. They didn't agree immediately and still pondered.

"Brutal Dragon Tribe, Evil Dragon Tribe, you guys should send one captain each. Leona will help you train them. Only when we fight the God Clan will she command the three troops of the elite corps. If nothing happens, your captains will train your old forces. You can be independent. Any doubts?" added Shi Yan with a smile.

Bath and Gu Te laughed and screamed, "Good! It's excellent!"

Because it meant Leona would train their troops for free. Since the captain would be from their tribes, they didn't need to worry. Thus, they had no objection.

"What about me?" Xia Xin Yan smiled and winked at Shi Yan.

"You?" Shi Yan was surprised. "You are a qualified commander yourself. If you need more knowledge of guild combat or tactics, you just need to ask her."

Xia Xin Yan immediately looked at Leona.

Leona gave her a curt nod.

Xia Xin Yan smiled naturally and immediately approached Leona to ask something, her face longing.

"Come back," said Blood Devil.

Everybody returned to their battleships. Shi Yan signaled Leona. Leona spoke to Xia Xin Yan for a while and then excused herself.

She left Xia Xin Yan and walked towards Shi Yan.

Inside the secret chamber of a battleship.

Shi Yan sat neatly while Leona, Fei Lan, Ka Tuo, and Benny sat around him with longing faces.

"Ka Tuo, you did a good job," Shi Yan said while secretly urging the energy in his acupuncture points. He beamed a bright smile.

"I don't know what had happened." Ka Tuo scratched his head, "I don't know why the explosion happened and why the space was sealed. I have no clue."

"Well, even though we don't know for now, we will figure it out later... I think your understanding of Chaos power Upanishad has progressed after that, right?" asked Fei Lan.

Ka Tuo nodded and replied earnestly, "Yeah, I got a glimpse of something magical, indeed."

"Good. Then, after taking in the energy, you should invest in it furthermore. I think... you can break into Ethereal God Realm." Shi Yan smiled brightly. "I collected a lot of energy this time. You guys will have a big harvest too. It's true that battles will nurture people like us the most."

They exchanged looks and laughed contentedly. They opened their souls and waited for the gift from Shi Yan.

Chapter 1064: I'm Not Resigned to That!

The other end of the space passage behind the barrier.

Chief Bello and leader Kelda of the Dark Shadow Clan had grim faces. They looked bafflingly at the closed barrier. They wanted to cry but they couldn't squeeze a tear.

The space passage that the Dark Shadow Clan had spent more than one thousand years and countless efforts to clear was closed for the second time. And it was much tougher and more natural than the previous one. This made Bello and Kelda want to kill themselves.

"... Chief. The Departed Spirit Jellyfish is gone; the space passage is sealed; my brother perished! How can we explain this to them?" Kelda's face was bitter and cold. He ground his teeth as if he wanted to tear someone apart.

Bello's clothes were now like rags. He had two trickles of blood on the corners of his mouth. He said bitterly, "I don't know how to explain this to them, either."

"Sigh," Kelda sighed sadly. He said in a low-pitched voice, "I'm not resigned to it!"

"I'm not resigned to it, either!" Bello nodded. "We should return first. We will report exactly what had happened. God Clan will have a new plan. We've been dependent on the God Clan for so many years. If we don't have merit, we have done a lot of laborious works for them. Today, our loss is significant. Perhaps we won't receive too much punishment."

"I hope so," Kelda said begrudgingly.

Several hundred soldiers of the Dark Shadow Clan had died in that battle. They lost around ten battleships too. If Bello hadn't taken them to the other side of the barrier, they would have all died in Agate Star Area.

The battleships started to move and leave the barrier. They gathered and departed from the space passage.

The passage that connected Agate Star Area and Ancient God Star Area had the other end lead to the most desolate area in the edge of the star area.

The peripheral regions of Ancient God Star Area had many cold and barren stars without life energy fluctuations or earth and heaven energy.

The Dark Shadow Clan's battleships often anchored on some massive asteroids here. After Bello and Kelda had left the space passage, they gathered on a big asteroid to explain the situation to their clansmen. Afterward, Bello left alone and rode a war chariot towards a life star near there.

Half a month later, Bello landed on that life star. The God clansmen welcomed him.

Later on, Bello headed to the peak of a majesty mountain with many grand shrines. He saw many statues around the shrines. Each of the statues was one of the experts of the God Clan. Although they were just statues, their auras still existed immensely and impressively. Bello could feel a pressure in this area.

He stopped and watched the statues with respect and fear, waiting for something.

A good-looking God man was walking towards him. He had some Ethereal God Realm experts surrounding him. His eyes were bloodshot and his aura was cold and sinister like ice in hell.

"Sir Sloan," Bello slightly bowed.

The good-looking middle-aged God man was named Sloan Ascot. He was the younger brother of the current Head of the Ascot family, Fick Ascot. He had Second Sky of Incipient God Realm cultivation base with the Cold power Upanishad. He had absorbed billions of wisps of icy Yin aura in Ice Cold Purgatory in Ancient

God Star Area. He was one of the characters who had the glory to be recorded in the Book of God of the God Clan.

The Book of God of the God Clan was a strange Original Incipient Grade treasure. It recorded the past and current experts of the God Clan. However, it only recorded true heroes who had performed extraordinary merits for the clan.

The Book of God was the Canon of glory of the God Clan. Each expert of the clan aimed at writing his or her name into the book as the life goal.

Sloan was an expert who had the glory of writing his name in the Book of God.

"When we're alone, don't call me Sir. Just call me da-ge." Sloan waved his hand, his face exhausted. "Your Dark Shadow Clan had gained acceptance from many families that year. Because of me, you decided to let the Dark Shadow Clan be dependent on the Ascot family. You and I are brothers. No matter what happens, our bond won't change."

Bello's eyes got red as he stooped with emotions. "Da-ge!"

"I heard you failed in Agate Star Area... What happened? You and I had planned for a thousand years. Which chain is wrong?" Sloan asked tenderly.

Bello sighed. "I don't know why I lost that battle. I don't know how our plan was revealed. We had to fight against the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League and Potion and Tool Pavilion in that space passage..."

Bello carefully described the situation he knew and didn't omit any small detail.

Sloan calmly listened to him. He didn't intervene once. When Bello talked about Yu Shan appearing out of nowhere and beginning to refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, he rose his hand to interrupt. He frowned, "How did she look like?"

Bello touched his forehead, using his soul to draw Yu Shan precisely from her face to her gait.

"She's not from Agate Star Area. She comes from Fiery Rain Star Area. She's called Yu Shan. She's at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm and she has the flame of the Origin." Sloan's eyes suddenly became so strange. Contemplating for a while, he said dispiritedly, "My young son Spot is dead..."

Bello changed his face and couldn't help but shout, "Who did that? Da-ge, who did that?"

Bello and Sloan had a good friendship. He often visited Sloan's family and he liked Spot a lot. He treated him as his nephew. Hearing that Spot was killed, Bello was enraged.

"He'd fallen in the fountainhead of power Upanishad. His soul vanished directly. He's really dead now." Sloan's voice was calm but the cold aura like ice from hell that radiated from his body was so chilling. "Before he died, his soul had recorded two persons. One was Xuan Fei, Yu Shan's disciple. The other was an unknown young male. But if Yu Shan went to Agate Star Area all of a sudden, I guess that young man was also there. Come take a look to see if you recognize him."

Sloan spewed out a cold air current, which then condensed into Xuan Fei's and Shi Yan's images as if someone had carved their sculptures from ice.

"I know them! When we battled in the space passage, they stood together!" Bello screamed at first glance.

"Good!" Sloan took a deep breath. Xuan Fei's and Shi Yan's figures shattered instantly. "Yu Shan came to Agate Star Area because of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Perhaps she had taken the soul gossamer of the jellyfish. I will remember this. The operation in Agate Star Area won't end here. I will think about how to break that sealed space barrier one more time."

"Da-ge. . ." Bello hesitated for a while before reminding him, "that barrier closed naturally. It's much tougher than the previous one. You know that I've cultivated Space power Upanishad and I've reached Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, but I have to spend dozens of years to make a narrow slit..."

Sloan frowned, flinging his hand. "I have my calculations. Don't worry. You go back and prepare. Clearing the space barrier doesn't always require Space power. If we have energy that's sharp enough, we can clean it. You wait for my good news."

Bello looked at him and nodded quietly.

He knew the reason why Sloan was so resolute. It had to be because of Spot's murderer in Agate Star Area.

He knew how much Sloan had favored his young son Spot. As Spot was murdered in the fountainhead of power Upanishad, he would never let go of the murderer. No matter where he was, he wouldn't dodge Sloan's raging flame.

After they had checked the battleships' conditions, Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League departed to Shadow Ghostly Prison.

Shi Yan had asked some experts of the Demon Clan to get to the area of the chaotic shooting stars to pick up Zuo Shi. This time, they didn't return through the previous route. They chose a much safer way.

Inside a secret chamber of a massive battleship of the Monster Clan's fleet.

Fei Lan and Benny woke up. They looked at Leona and Ka Tuo first and then at Shi Yan.

Time flew hurriedly. Shi Yan's aura calmed down when he opened his eyes and smiled.

"How are you?" Fei Lan asked carefully.

"I didn't break through," Shi Yan's face was calm and relaxed. "My energy accumulation is enough. However, my realm still requires a little more. With the energy I got, I used them to condense Immortal Demon Blood and the Essence Qi Ancient Tree in my body brimmed. I can't take in more unless I advance one more step."

"Senior, since you're cultivating mixed powers Upanishads, you must make all of your powers Upanishad advance equally at each time after you've reached Ethereal God Realm." Just like Ka Tuo, Benny now called Shi Yan "senior." He said seriously, "Because of that reason, not many people want to cultivate more than one powers Upanishads at the same time. If they did, they would cultivate the similar powers Upanishads that would blend with each other."

Shi Yan frowned and said, "You mean, if I want to break through my realm, I have to advance all of my powers Upanishad at the same time? I can't break through using only one power Upanishad?"

"When you were at Original God Realm, you just needed to break through one power Upanishad to pull the others altogether," Benny explained. "But from Ethereal God Realm, you can't do that. Every time you break through the new realm, you have to advance all the powers Upanishad you've cultivated. Of course, people who cultivate more powers Upanishads could be stronger than the others at the same realm. However, it takes a lot of time to reach the new realm."

"I understand," Shi Yan nodded.

After Shi Yan'd reached Ethereal God Realm, his understanding of Space power Upanishad was deeper. However, he didn't gain much in Star, Death and Life powers Upanishad. Thus, even though his energy had fully accumulated, he couldn't get to Second

Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

As Benny came from a high-level star area and his family had a strong and profound foundation, he knew genuine information.

"Leona and Ka Tuo cultivate only one powers Upanishad. Their energy is pure, so they can progress faster than you can." Benny looked at the other two sitting next to him.

"Yeah, they can break through soon. I can tell." Shi Yan nodded and asked, "How about you two?"

"I'm still far away from Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. My realm and energy haven't reached the upper limit yet," Fei Lan shook her head.

"I've accumulated enough energy. I just need a flash of recognition in my realm." Benny smiled happily.

"Yeah, reaching Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm requires an enormous amount of energy. The energy I've given you is definitely not enough for you to get a chance. We shouldn't hurry. Just take it slowly."

"It's fast enough. I'm not hurried."

"Yeah, it is better that way. We should advance our realm. I will think about how to get more energy."

"Understood."

Several months later, the battleships of Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League returned to the center of Shadow Ghostly Prison. Under the dim-lit sea of stars, Bath, Gu Te, and Blood Devil stood arrogantly atop their battleships.

"Precursors, you aren't going to be guests of the Fighting League, are you?" Xia Xin Yan sighed with regret.

"I don't know Feng Han. I'm not going to go there." Blood Devil shook his head. "We have many things to solve. We will visit later

when it's more convenient. You help us to send him our regards."

"Okay then," Xia Xin Yan said reluctantly. She looked at Shi Yan walking out of the cabin. Her beautiful eyes lingered on him.

"Cough! Cough!" Shi Yan was embarrassed. He smiled shyly, "I'm going to Fighting League for a while to solve my personal business. My friends will return with you guys to Devil Blood Star. Oh yeah, I'm going to create a Space Teleport Formation. Perhaps I can connect to Devil Blood Star. The Child Formation is there. I just need to fabricate the Mother Formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation, which I used to have.

"You can stay, but Leona must follow us home." Bath and Gu Te screamed in unison.

"No problem," Shi Yan agreed immediately.

Chapter 1065: Divine Light

Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Zuo Shi left together with Blood Devil's battleships. They went to Devil Blood Star to cultivate ascetically.

As the Dark Shadow Clan was expelled, Shadow Ghostly Prison didn't have any chaotic commotions. Thus, it wasn't necessary to ask Fei Lan's group to stay here. At this moment, what they lacked wasn't energy but the understanding of their realms.

Shi Yan considered letting them go to Devil Blood Star to cultivate as understanding their realm's mysteries was much urgent.

Only he stayed in the battleship of Windstorm War Department.

The flying bird battleships flew agilely, detaching from the battleships of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. They headed to the center of Shadow Ghostly Prison at a fast speed.

On a corner of the battleship, Xia Xin Yan wore a tight azure dress. She looked as beautiful as a blossoming cherry flower. The pink crystal anklets on her bare foot clang happily like a stream murmuring. Her beautiful eyes had a faint, mesmerizing halo as she smiled and spoke gently, "That sister has a brilliant tactical mind. Why does she listen to you?"

She lay lazily by the edge of the deck. Her delicate waist was slender like a water snake, which promoted the curves of her rear end. Her posture was so sexy, which made people picture a lot of things.

The warriors of the Windstorm War Department were all sent away from this area. One or two guards were standing far from her, but they didn't dare to face her or peep.

Shi Yan chuckled. He turned around to check the area. Seeing no one notice, his big hand smacked her ample buttocks. He felt so

wonderful, his eyes getting hotter. "She and I are from the same origin. She listens to me because I can give her benefits that no one can."

Xia Xin Yan glared at him angrily. She moved her body slightly away from his evil hand. She whispered, "How many days will you spend with me?"

"Yeah," Shi Yan nodded gently, watching the dark area ahead of them. "It has been more than one hundred years, but the time we've been together isn't a whole full year. Sigh, everything changes. I never imagined that we could meet again in a strange galaxy like this. When I left the Quiet Cloud Land that year, I have never thought of this future."

"That year?" Xia Xin Yan smiled and parted her lips, "That year, I didn't put you little robber in my eye. At that time, you were at just Disaster Realm. I came with you to the Endless Sea because of the Yang family's face."

"Unfortunately, Uncle Jiao had gone too early..." Shi Yan sighed sadly, his eyes reddening.

Xia Xin Yan's soft body shivered. She sighed weakly, "Without Jiao Han Yi, we couldn't have come to the Endless Sea alive. He had treated you so well we couldn't complain a tiny thing. What regret we lost such a hero."

Demon King Bo Xun had used a white bone clone of his to possess Jiao Han Yi. His soul vanished while his body was taken. He had sacrificed to give them a chance to live.

Both of them were grateful and respected Jiao Han Yi a lot. Today, they were filled with compassion thinking of him.

"Oh, right," Shi Yan suddenly remembered something. His thoughts changed and the ring on his finger glowed. A cauldron emerged, flying towards Xia Xin Yan. "This is the Original Universe Returning Cauldron of the Pure Land. That year, you

were the key personnel of the Pure Land. Do you want to take a look at it?"

Shi Yan had kept the cauldron for a long time. He had taken this cauldron in the Utmost Eight Purgatory City while fighting the leader of the Pure Land. This cauldron seemed to have magic. He kept it because he wanted to give it back to Xia Xin Yan one day.

That year, the Pure Land had concealed Xia Xin Yan. She didn't know that the Pure Land had joined hands with other forces to hunt Shi Yan's group. Many members of the Xia family were killed too.

However, it has been many years. Under the wearing power of time, many things had become the past.

After Xia Xin Yan had recovered the memories of many previous lives, she didn't feel much belonged to her relatives. And the Xia family had made a wrong decision. She didn't want to keep it in mind.

Looking at the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, she chuckled and thought about the old stories. She was calm, taking the treasures of the Pure Land. She squinted and sensed for a while. "There's no aura. I guess they were all dead."

Shi Yan had never tried to study this cauldron because he wanted to hand it to Xia Xin Yan. Thus, he didn't know what it could do. Hearing her, he was curious. He asked, "What can that cauldron do?"

"Contact the experts of the Pure Land who had got into outer space." Xia Xin Yan didn't want to conceal anything from him. "During several thousand years, the Pure Land also had some King God Realm experts. All of them had left Grace Mainland. But no one knew where they'd gone. This cauldron had a secret method to contact those experts. It had a secret treasure which was like the Sound Stone. I've just checked it. I found no aura. Perhaps they were all dead."

She grabbed the Original Universe Returning Cauldron and spoke faintly, "This is an ordinary treasure. It can't help me with anything. Anyway, I will keep it as a memento."

She put it into her Fantasy Sky Ring.

Shi Yan suddenly understood.

Grace Mainland had three big epochs including the Immemorial Epoch, the Antiquity Era, and the Ancient Time. This ancient continent used to have abundant energy. After three prosperous eras, it had given birth to many immemorial creatures and intimidating races. Eventually, it declined. The moment the Pure Land burst out, the energy of this continent was about to run out.

Although the Pure Land had its peak of glory, the highest realm that their warriors could reach was just King God Realm.

In Grace Mainland, the King God Realm was the peak of the cultivation. However, when they entered the vast, shoreless sea of stars, no one looked up to the King God Realm warriors in the high-level star area.

Warriors from the low-level star areas didn't have good foundations. When they showed up in high-level star area, they were predestined with fatal endings.

As Xia Xin Yan couldn't sense any aura of the Pure Land's precursors, it was enough to prove that they were all dead. However, in Shi Yan's point of view, it wasn't something big.

While he was struggling in Raging Flame Star Area, he had experienced this adversity. The misfortune that Xia Xin Yan had undergone when she had entered Shadow Ghostly Prison was much more than his.

Only people who had experienced it could understand how low-realm warriors survived in a strange star area.

"The situation in Shadow Ghostly Prison is steadier now. The Dark Shadow Clan and the God Clan can't invade us for the time

being. Do you still want to stay in the Fighting League?" Shi Yan became serious. "Come with me. We're going to Devil Blood Star. You want to study strategies and tactics in war, don't you? I can let Leona discuss with you. That place is also far from the battlefield. Even if the God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan appears all of a sudden, we still have time to prepare."

Xia Xin Yan quieted down. Her bold brows slammed together as if she was pondering.

Shi Yan watched her in silence, his face yearning. He didn't want to miss this chance. He wanted to keep her by his side.

The Shadow Ghostly Prison and the Devil Blood Star were far from each other. It would take several years to travel through this long distance. He didn't want to stay away from her and he could only meet her once after several years.

"I owe Hegemon Feng Han," after a while, Xia Xin Yan sighed weakly. "He treats me like his blood younger sister. At my most difficult times, he had cleared all the opposing ideas to bring me to a higher position. He has used all of his materials and resources to nurture me. He helped me have my realm and status that I have today. If I leave now, I will feel like I owe him for the rest of my life... Give me more time."

Hegemon Feng Han of the Fighting League had always considered her his most beloved family member. He had never doubted her. Feng Han was even selfish enough to take all the excellent resources of the Fighting League for her. That was how she had broken through to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm in one hundred years.

Xia Xin Yan wasn't worried that her realm would be stuck. She just needed a torrential energy supply and she would break into the new realm.

For her, Feng Han had spent countless materials, pellets and divine crystals from Potion and Tool Pavilion and other forces to

create this miracle.

"So we have to part again?" Shi Yan smiled bitterly.

"You can stay with me in Shadow Ghostly Prison." Xia Xin Yan muttered to him, her eyes filled with hope.

"I can't stay idle." Shi Yan shook his head. "I don't like to stay in one place for a long time. I like going to where the battles are. Shadow Ghostly Prison used to meet my requirement. However, the Dark Shadow Clan left Shadow Ghostly Prison today and the God Clan can't come here quickly. This area can't offer me what I want."

"Then I can make Shadow Ghostly Prison chaotic for you!" Xia Xin Yan pondered for a while before talking coldly.

"What?"

"As the Dark Shadow Clan had left, the mineral stars and precious lands they had occupied are now unowned. Of course, our Fighting League can't resist such good food. Without the Dark Shadow Clan, the small forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison can't resist the Fighting League. We will sweep them out!" Xia Xin Yan said ambitiously.

Shi Yan was surprised.

Beautiful flying bird battleships of the Windstorm War Department floated above a mineral star. The war chariots hissed and scattered from the battleships. They rummaged through this mineral star immediately.

This mineral star had an abundant amount of Blue Crystal Sand, which was a precious and rare material that was hiding deep underground. The Dark Shadow Clan used to control this big mine.

Of course, the Dark Shadow Clan wouldn't spend their efforts on

mining the Blue Crystal Sand. They just brought the mine slaves here.

From time to time, the Dark Shadow Clan would visit this area to take the Blue Crystal Sand they had exploited. If someone dared to take their products, they would send their battleships to finish them.

Today, all the Dark Shadow clansmen had retreated from Shadow Ghostly Prison. This mineral star became unowned. Xia Xin Yan passed by this place to announce to the mine slaves that this mine would belong to the Fighting League from now on.

The war chariots hissed and roared, flying into the entrances leading to the core of the star. Shi Yan stood by Xia Xin Yan atop the battleship and looked at thousands of holes in the surface of the star, which looked so dark and gloomy. Suddenly, he said, "Warriors take natural resources to strengthen themselves. All kinds of secret treasures, pellets, and even energy are from the galaxy. Our existences are also a burden to earth and heaven."

"Oh, since when have you become so emotional?" Xia Xin Yan smiled and said casually, "What God gives us should belong to us. We collect the materials. It's like people who need to kill animals if they want to eat meat."

Shi Yan frowned. He sighed inwardly, but he didn't want to say anything else.

He knew that he also didn't have the right to talk more.

His power Upanishad was the wickedest among the wickedest power Upanishads. If the warriors took natural resources to cultivate and breakthrough, Shi Yan had used the others' deaths to make himself stronger. As he could reach his current realm within a short time, what had he used to do that? He understood it better than anyone else.

Swish!

A war chariot moved like a swift eagle, rushing out of the mine. A warrior of the Windstorm War Department looked pale as he shouted, "Madame! Someone is taking the mineral star!"

He looked at Xia Xin Yan, his face indignant. "They stated that this mineral star belongs to them. Do we need to kill them?"

"Oh, besides the Dark Shadow Clan in Shadow Ghostly Prison, there's still a force that dares resist our Fighting League?" Xia Xin Yan was surprised. She laughed and asked, "Which force is it?"

"It's called 'Divine Light' or something. It's not a native force in Shadow Ghostly Prison. I'm not familiar with the outer world. I don't know this force," reported the man.

"Divine Light?" Xia Xin Yan slightly changed her visage, her eyes twinkling strangely.

Shi Yan was surprised. He thought he had heard of this force somewhere. He frowned and started thinking.

Chapter 1066: A Divine Crystal Mineral Lode

Shi Yan was startled for a while. His eyes brightened up.

Divine Light! It was the force that has admitted Zi Yao, right?

When they were in Broken Star Field in the Far West Region, an old man picked Zi Yao and told them that he was from Divine Light. He had invited Zi Yao to join them on behalf of his master.

It has been dozens of years, but it felt like a blink of an eye. Today, Shi Yan heard the name of this force one more time. He was moved. He asked, "The Divine Light isn't... a force in Shadow Ghostly Prison, right?"

"No, it's not." Xia Xin Yan frowned, her face dark and solemn. "Divine Light is an extremely mighty force!"

Shi Yan arched his brows.

"In Agate Star Area, forces gather their allies despite races. The power of Divine Light is ranked first. It's not weaker than our Fighting League. I think... It's a level stronger," Xia Xin Yan said objectively.

In Agate Star Area, there were so many forces. Some forces gathered by race. For example, the Monster Clan, the Demon Clan, the Wood Clan, and the Ghost Mark Clan were the important races. Usually, the forces that gathered their warriors from the same clan were extremely strong.

At the same time, some other forces would enroll members from different races. However, they were still as mighty as the other clans.

The Fighting League of Shadow Ghostly Prison was one of the forces like that. As long as you were strong, no matter what race you are from, you could always join the force. Warriors who

contributed a lot to Fighting League earned rewards or promotions to higher positions. The benefits they received were unimaginable.

Divine Light was a similar force to the Fighting League. It was formed by warriors from many races. And its power was extraordinarily mighty.

"The Master of the Divine Light has a good relationship with the Second Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion and the Chief of the Fire Clan. She's a woman who knows how to connect influential forces." Xia Xin Yan looked serious. "The area of the Divine Light's authority isn't in Shadow Ghostly Prison. The nearest region is by the edge and it's adjacent to the Ghost Mark Clan. They often have disputes. They have never operated in Shadow Ghostly Prison. I don't know what happens this time..."

While she was explaining to Shi Yan, the Fighting League warrior was so worried. He couldn't help but shout. "Madame, the Divine Light warriors are all down there. Should we take action now?"

Shi Yan turned around to look at her.

"This is Shadow Ghostly Prison. It's our territory!" Xia Xin Yan's face was cold and grim. She ordered resolutely. "Tell them that I'm going there personally. Ask them to leave. Or else, we will kill them!"

"Yes, ma'am!" The man laughed evilly and then returned to the mine. His aura disappeared shortly after.

"Shadow Ghostly Prison has many small forces. In the past, we fought against the Dark Shadow Clan and the small forces also fight all the time. We don't have a moment living peacefully. I thought that we could have some quiet moment after the Dark Shadow Clan was gone. I never thought that Divine Light would come. Tsk, they won't leave us alone here." Xia Xin Yan was begrudging. She looked tired.

She had been in Shadow Ghostly Prison for one hundred years

and she had been so busy during this time. If she weren't cultivating with the pellets to increase her realm, she would be busy with her troops fighting for the welfare of the Fighting League.

It was so hard to meet Shi Yan again. She wanted to take a decent rest. And now the damn Divine Light emerged, which made her so agitated.

Xia Xin Yan was famous in Shadow Ghostly Prison, indeed. After the warriors of her Fighting League got underground for around one hour, the warriors of the Divine Light came out one by one. They looked at her with dark faces. However, they didn't say anything before leaving in their war chariots.

Divine Light had only one battleship, which carried less than one hundred warriors. The strongest of that group had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

The battleship of Divine Light looked like a straight, silver arrow. Beams of beautiful light twirled around it like a soft ribbon, which made the ship marvelously outstanding.

Shi Yan looked at the battleship leaving. He released his Soul Consciousness and used his familiarity of life magnetic field to check the Divine Light's battleship.

After a while, he smiled and shook his head.

Well, it couldn't be that much of a coincidence...

Xia Xin Yan looked at him skeptically, "Why do you have to sense the warriors of the Divine Light? The highest realm warrior has just First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. We can tell that at first glance. Why do you have to use your soul to sense their life magnetic fields?"

"I'm just curious." Shi Yan was naturally calm.

Xia Xin Yan didn't ask him furthermore. She ordered some subordinates to enter the mine. After a while, they returned and

shook their heads reluctantly. "The Divine Light took all the Blue Crystal Sand."

"Okay. Leave a group of ten here. After I return to the headquarter, I will send more mine slaves." Advising them, Xia Xin Yan rode the battleship and left.

After dozens of days, the flying bird battleships of the Windstorm War Department patrolled neither slow nor fast around many mineral stars, which used to belong to Dark Shadow Clan.

However, what had surprised them was that half of the mineral stars of the Dark Shadow Clan now had warriors of the Divine Light guarding it. It seemed like those warriors had hurried to go to Shadow Ghostly Prison. There weren't many of them. Most of the time, there was around ten of them on a mineral star and their realms were really high.

When Xia Xin Yan ordered them to leave, the Divine Light's warriors were smart enough not to resist her. They just left quietly.

Along their way, the Fighting League had shooed away the Divine Light's warriors ten times. Gradually, Xia Xin Yan lost her patience. She also felt something was wrong.

She recognized that those Divine Light warriors were here just to claim the territory of the Dark Shadow Clan. It was like an announcement of their involvement in this area.

Apparently, the Divine Light warriors knew that Dark Shadow Clan had left Shadow Ghostly Prison. That was why they weren't afraid of anything to take those mines.

The Master of Divine Light and the Second Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion had a good relationship. Thus, Fu Wei, Zha Duo, and Feng Yan must have arrived at Potion and Tool Pavilion. That was how the Elders of the pavilion had received this information.

Today, the Windstorm War Department landed on a level-6 life

star. Before the Dark Shadow Clan left, this was their resident base. The planet still had a lot of buildings built by the Dark Shadow Clan. However, they couldn't see anyone from the Dark Shadow Clan today.

Anyway, no one knew where the Dark Shadow Clan's headquarters were situated. The Dark Shadow clansmen moved through space slits like wandering ghosts. Sometimes, they would anchor in this life star.

This life star was a familiar stop to the Dark Shadow Clan because it had a divine crystal lode. Dark Shadow Clan had considered it the most important base.

The Fighting League had been thirsty for this life star for years. To claim this place, they had fought the Dark Shadow Clan many times. Most of the time, they managed to take it, but the Dark Shadow Clan would ambush them not long afterward. They often had to bear big losses.

Looking at the luxuriant big trees and foliage in the immensely vast forest, Xia Xin Yan smiled brightly and spoke happily, "Our Hegemon has laid his eyes on this planet for a long time. I heard that the divine crystal lode in this planet could store hundreds of millions of divine crystals."

Shi Yan was astounded. "Hundreds of millions of divine crystals?!?"

"Yeah, enough for warriors of the Fighting League to cultivate for one hundred years." Her face was filled with satisfaction. "For this life star, Fighting League and Dark Shadow Clan had had many battles that had killed so many warriors. As the Dark Shadow Clan had gone, we finally got this life star."

Many warriors of the Fighting League stood on the flying bird battleships and observed. They were all excited.

Hundreds of millions of divine crystals were a fortune that made

everybody crave for it. Divine crystals were the basis of the warriors' daily cultivation. Warriors from races that needed earth and heaven energy to cultivate couldn't live without divine crystals. At the same time, divine crystals were the currency in many regions.

A mineral lode with hundreds of millions of divine crystals was a huge fortune that every force would want. No wonder why the Dark Shadow Clan and the Fighting League had fought for years for it.

This life star had many majestic mountains that jutted into the clouds. Some imposing mountain ranges were situated in an area of several hundred miles. They were homes of spiritual animals and herbs. This level-6 life star had abundant energy with normal gravity, so it was a good place to cultivate.

Warriors of the Fighting League took in refreshing air with earth and heaven energy. They were smiling happily.

Shi Yan's line of sight shot further. He suddenly frowned, speaking in a low-pitched voice, "Someone's here."

Xia Xin Yan looked in the direction he was watching.

Ten miles away on a grand ten-thousand-meter mountain sat a young man wearing gray clothes. He looked a little yellow and he sat cross-legged. That young man had indifferent eyes. His aura was calm and placid like the great mountain underneath. He gave people a pressure of something majestic and deep.

This young man didn't have a good-looking appearance. His face was yellowed. He looked like he was in his thirties. No one knew why he was sitting idly atop that mountain.

"The mountain range he's sitting on is the fountainhead of the divine crystal lode!" Xia Xin Yan hissed and furrowed her brows. "I wonder if it's a coincidence or if he is doing it on purpose. Something's wrong here..."

"He cultivates Earth power Upanishad at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. His life magnetic field is abundant. This man... is really dangerous!" Squinting, Shi Yan used his soul to sense. He got the precise news shortly after. His face changed quietly.

That young man had Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but his Blood Qi and life energy fluctuation could be compared to Cocker of the Dark Shadow Clan who Shi Yan used to confront!

This supported the fact that the young man could fight a warrior at First Sky of Incipient God Realm! He had the competence to leap one level and fight!

This finding stiffened Shi Yan's face. He took a deep breath. "Maybe he came here because of the divine crystal lode."

Xia Xin Yan nodded and contemplated for a while before waving her hand to order her subordinate. "Go there and check it."

The Windstorm War Department's battleships floated and flew swiftly to the peak of the grand mountain. They hovered around the mountaintop. The warriors of the Fighting League watched the young man in silence. That young man was still as calm and quiet as a majestic mountain. He looked at the warriors before his eyes fixed on Xia Xin Yan. "Xia Xin Yan of Fighting League?"

"Yes, it's me. Who are you? This life star belongs to the Fighting League from now on. Please leave. Don't throw yourself into troubles." Xia Xin Yan shouted at the young man.

The young man frowned. He sat still like he was a mountain, speaking in a low-pitched voice. "This place used to belong to the Dark Shadow Clan. After the Dark Shadow Clan left, it became unowned."

"The Dark Shadow Clan is gone. It belongs to our Fighting League now," said Xia Xin Yan seriously.

The young man had a placid complexion like water. "No. It belongs to our Divine Light from now on."

The young man stood up all of a sudden, his voice so cold. "This is not only for this planet. All the mineral stars that we've claimed before you expelled us now belong to the Divine Light."

"Who are you?" Xia Xin Yan was surprised.

"Sana."

The young man didn't look at her but looked somewhere further back. He suddenly cried ear-piercingly. His whistle was like the cry of the ghost. It was low and cold, twirling while moving away.

Immediately, battleships floated up from the dark forest from a far away distance. They slowly approached and closely surrounded the ten battleships of the Windstorm War Department.

Chapter 1067: Holding Hostage

Almost one hundred battleships emerged. They looked like they were made of gold. The entire body of the battleships was sparking sharply as if they were real lances.

This fleet was called Blood Lance, the ruthless lance of Divine Light. Captain Sana was the soul of this blood lance, the expert of the new, infamous generation of Agate Star Area.

The battleships of the Blood Lance Fleet scattered, forming a net that surrounded all the battleships of the Windstorm War Department. The warriors of Divine Light came from many different races. They all had the brutal aura of warriors who had been fighting year round. Right now, they all gazed at the warriors of the Windstorm War Department.

"Sana!" Xia Xin Yan changed her face. She kept silent for a while and then said, "... I've heard of you. You're the adopted son of the Divine Light's Master. You're the Master of the Blood Lance Fleet, a famous young expert of Agate Star Area and a deadly weapon of Divine Light."

The young man had an indifferent face. He spoke faintly, "The Dark Shadow Clan's territory is unowned now. If the Fighting League can rob them, we can too. In Shadow Ghostly Prison, we used power to talk. We will do that the same way."

"Dark Shadow Clan and our Fighting League had fought for years. We've spent a lot of effort to deal with that alien clan. We finally expelled them. Do you think you're despicable enough to interfere with the business at this moment?" Xia Xin Yan gritted her teeth.

"It's not only the Fighting League who had expelled the Dark Shadow Clan. Don't say it as if you've done all the merits." Sana frowned and didn't try to be polite. "When the Fighting League first arrived in Shadow Ghostly Prison, you came with empty

hands. Everything you got was from your robberies. What our Divine Light was doing is no different from your circumstance. Don't try to reason with us. It's not interesting. It's cliché."

The Blood Lance Fleet had around one thousand warriors while the Windstorm War Department had only three hundred. They were outnumbered. As they were besieged here, they would obviously lose once the battle started.

The leader of the opponent was Sana, the young, famous expert of Agate Star Area. His reputation had far surpassed Du Lin's. And the Blood Lance Fleet of the Divine Light was also a wide-known powerful force. It was much more dangerous than the Windstorm War Department. The power that their enemy had at this moment had overwhelmed them. Xia Xin Yan didn't know if they could do more than just hiding and waiting for the right chance.

Xia Xin Yan wasn't foolish. Seeing what they had presented, she knew she couldn't get anything good this time.

"Well, you're a genius then. We will talk about it later. Go!" She pondered for a few seconds and then hissed.

Warriors of the Windstorm War Department were worried. They knew that they couldn't stand this battle. They had prepared to leave as they were ordered.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The battleships of Blood Lance shot out blinding lights, weaving with each other like shooting stars and blocking the others.

Warriors of the Divine Light had a cold complexion while energy surged on their bodies. They were ready to release their attacks.

Xia Xin Yan changed her visage. "Sana, what do you want?"

She could see that they didn't want to let them go. This chaotic situation was over her estimation. She was restlessly anxious.

"Well, we want you to stay here and take a rest." Sana still had an

indifferent countenance. "I heard that the Hegemon of Fighting League has always favored you. We want to talk to him through you. Perhaps we don't need any battle to solve the business in the mineral stars that the Dark Shadow Clan had left."

Hearing him, all the warriors of the Windstorm War Department reddened as their raging flames burst out.

They understood that Sana wanted to capture Xia Xin Yan to threaten Hegemon Feng Yan and force him to acknowledge their possession of the mineral stars left by Dark Shadow Clan. Everybody grimaced.

Xia Xin Yan's soft body shivered. She understood and sobbed while screaming, "Sana, you've planned this before, right?"

"Yeah, I've been waiting for you here for a long time." Sana's voice was stiff. He didn't conceal but admitted it simply.

Seeing him not have any fear to make the situation clear, Xia Xin Yan quieted down. She slowly pulled herself together and looked around as if she was considering something.

"I'm kind enough to remind you. Besides me, we have a precursor at First Sky of Incipient God Realm here." Sana frowned and spoke as if he could read her mind. "Don't try to enrage me. Don't exert yourself to fight. Although the Windstorm War Department is strong, I believe my Blood Lance is enough to destroy you all."

Hearing they had an Incipient God Realm expert here, Xia Xin Yan finally discolored. She was dispirited.

Warriors of the Fighting League felt their hearts sinking. They exchanged looks, but all remained silent.

"He's here because of Feng Yan. We didn't expect that precursor Feng Yan wouldn't come. Anyway, we don't need to move then," Sana explained in a cold voice.

"Could we return to our battleships to rest?" Xia Xin Yan asked with dimmed eyes and tired voice.

"Yes, you can," Sana's tone was still indifferent. "As long as you don't provoke us, we won't restrain you too much. You're smart. You know what to do."

The warriors of the Windstorm War Department returned to their battleships and disappeared into the cabins.

Sana coldly observed them. After all of the warriors of Fighting League had gone into the cabins of their battleships, he made a gesture. Warriors of his Blood Lance then drove the battleships away and maintained a distance of several thousand meters from the Windstorm War Department. They could defend and they didn't want to cause any unexpected dispute.

Sana sat down on the peak of the mountain again. However, this time, he took out a Sound Stone. It seemed like he was talking to somebody from Divine Light.

"That Sana is powerful."

Inside the flying bird battleships, Xia Xin Yan furrowed her bold brows and spoke, "This man is a deadly weapon of Divine Light. He's the adopted son of Divine Light's Master. I heard he has been cultivating for years in the Fiery Desert, South of Agate Star Area. The Fiery Desert is burning hot. Many members of the Fire Clan go there to cultivate. Sana has stayed in Fiery Desert for a long time and he has made friends with many important warriors of Fire Clan. That was why Divine Light and Fire Clan had a close relationship. Sana is an extremely heartless warrior. He has destroyed a lot of forces to protect the benefits of his Divine Light."

Some Ethereal God Realm warriors of Windstorm War Department winced. They didn't have any solution.

"They abducted our Lady to threaten the Hegemon. A good plan then. Hegemon would... perhaps listen to them," said a warrior while looking at Xia Xin Yan.

Everybody knew that Feng Han had treated Xia Xin Yan with unconditional and unreasonable love. To increase Xia Xin Yan's realm, Feng Han hadn't regretted anything.

In the beginning, they thought Feng Han had a crazy love for her. Later on, they found out it wasn't the true story. Feng Han's close protection and caring to Xia Xin Yan was just the indulgence a brother gives to his little sister. Thus, they knew that Divine Light had made a good move in using Xia Xin Yan to threaten Feng Han. Feng Han would absolutely do what they wanted.

"Do they actually have an Incipient God Realm expert hiding there?" Xia Xin Yan sighed and couldn't help but ask Shi Yan.

The warriors of Fighting League also looked at him.

On the way to the space passage of the Dark Shadow Clan, Shi Yan had used his powers to prove that he always had a subtle solution in any adversity to rescue people.

Just like Monster Clan and Demon Clan, the warriors of the Windstorm War Department who had followed Xia Xin Yan had trusted him wholeheartedly. They all looked and waited for Shi Yan to give them hope with yearning eyes.

"Yeah, there's an Incipient God Realm expert..." Shi Yan nodded and beamed a forced smile, "He stays in the mountain range underneath Sana. His life energy is really strong. Well, he's the most persuasive thing here."

Listening to him, everybody had a heavy face.

"Shi Yan, you cultivate Space power Upanishad. Can you...?" Xia Xin Yan recalled something; she hurried to ask.

"Let me try," Shi Yan chuckled and closed his eyes. He urged his energy and tried to find a space node.

Suddenly, an icy cold aura shot out from the mountain underneath Sana. That aura shot up into the sky and chased after Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness and froze it within one second.

A gleam of ice appeared right at Shi Yan's glabella. He shuddered and retrieved his Soul Consciousness. He hissed, "Someone interrupted me. That Incipient God Realm expert underground is using his power to prevent us from sending information away. We can't use the Sound Stone to contact other people. He stopped my Soul Consciousness right after I sent it out. I couldn't find the space node to build a space door."

Everybody sighed begrudgingly.

That First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert had just stopped Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness. He didn't mean harm. Otherwise, Shi Yan couldn't retrieve his Soul Consciousness that easily.

"Just keep silent and watch for any change." Xia Xin Yan pondered for a while. As she found no solution, she said that to calm her people down.

Warriors of the Fighting League sighed. They regarded her with a lot of bitter emotions.

They knew that the Divine Light had trapped them. They had planned to use powerful warriors to capture Xia Xin Yan and use her to blackmail Feng Han. They would make Feng Han give all the mineral lodes that the Dark Shadow Clan left behind.

Although they knew the other's purposes, they didn't have a solution to resist. This feeling irritated them.

Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan returned to the deck of the battleships to observe their surroundings discreetly. They wanted to see if they could use the characteristics of this area to escape.

Sana of Divine Light always sat above that mineral lode. He didn't move and just use the Sound Stone to talk to someone. He seemed to be discussing something with Fighting League.

Today, a battleship of the Divine Light appeared in the sky of this planet. This battleship was made of some strange but marvelous purple crystal. It was crystal clear and filled with light. It looked

like a massive chunk of purple crystal descending from the sky.

Many warriors of Divine Light saw that battleship. They looked shocked at first. Then, they became so excited and began to clamor.

Sana had sat there for a long time. Seeing the purple battleship landing, his stiff face pulled a rare smile. He stood up immediately to welcome that purple crystal battleship.

"Ah, some VIPs from Divine Light came. They do highly evaluate us..." One of the Fighting League warriors sneered, "Do they really have to do that? How much force do they need to mobilize here to ensure this situation?"

"Hmm, I think that person has a noble status. Even Sana has to go there to welcome. Oh holy sh*t, that poker-faced person can smile. Oh well. Who is that, eh?"

"Oh, it's a woman..."

They discussed quietly. None of them found Shi Yan standing next to them with a strange face. The light glowed in his eyes like two sparkling flames.

Chapter 1068: The Two Women

Inside Shadow Ghostly Prison, there was a level-6 blue life star, which was called Fighting Star. It was the headquarter star of the Fighting League.

In the center of the majestic God of War Temple, Feng Han stood with his cold and stern face, frowning at around ten warriors under his commands. In this group, the lowest realm warrior was a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. There were two First Sky of Incipient God Realm experts. They were all pillars of Fighting League.

Before Feng Han had entered Shadow Ghostly Prison, those warriors used to be overlords of different areas in Shadow Ghostly Prison. When Feng Han started to expose his invincible competence, they came to be his allies who became dependent. Eventually, they had formed the Fighting League, the strongest force in Shadow Ghostly Prison.

More than ten experts on the senior management board of the Fighting League winced sadly. Their eyes glowed coldly with indignation.

"We and the Divine Light are like water in a river and water in a well. Divine Light has never operated in Shadow Ghostly Prison before. They hurry to come here and claim the territories of the Dark Shadow Clan. They're wanton! They don't put us in their eyes!" shouted Qi Ze, a warrior who had a cross scar on his head.

Qi Ze had First Sky of Incipient God Realm. He commanded the Flaming Awl War Department of Fighting League. His main power was Fire power Upanishad, so his characteristics were also hot and stubborn like fire.

Before he joined Feng Han's, Qi Ze was an infamous expert in Shadow Ghostly Prison. His troops were all the brutal and malicious ones, who had swaggered to perform evil affairs

everywhere.

That year, Feng Han had to use countless manpower and efforts to stop Qi Ze. He had used the bloody tricks to subdue Qi Ze. Later on, Qi Ze and his troops had become a War Department of the Fighting League. To Feng Han, he was always loyal and dedicated. However, except for Feng Han, he didn't listen to anybody else of the Fighting League.

"The Divine Light has spread its long tentacles everywhere. We should cut them off," said Miao Rong, an expert who looked tender and feminine at First Sky of Incipient God Realm. She wore a long blue dress.

Qi Ze and Miao Rong were Incipient God Realm experts of the Fighting League. They used to be infamous before. After they had joined the Fighting League, they were still sharp.

"If they didn't capture Xia Xin Yan, I would have sent you guys over there already." Feng Han said with a cold face. She snorted, "Do you have any solution to rescue Xia Xin Yan?"

Qi Ze and Miao Rong looked at each other and then shook their heads.

Sana was famous for his might and heartless deeds. Unless Qi Ze and Miao Rong were there, they had no solution.

The Divine Light would set up their spies along the way from Fighting Star to the life star with that lode of divine crystals. When they were spotted, Xia Xin Yan and her Windstorm War Department would fall into a deadly situation. Qi Ze and Miao Rong knew how much Feng Han had indulged Xia Xin Yan, so they would never offer him any impossible plan.

"Miao Rong, you go there with my letter." Feng Han drilled them with his eyes before handing Miao Rong a piece of paper all of a sudden.

Miao Rong didn't know his intentions but he still received the

note. At first glance, he couldn't help but shout, "Hegemon! You, you want to demobilize our men there?"

After the news of Dark Shadow Clan's defeat had arrived, Feng Han, Qi Ze, and Miao Rong had taken action immediately. They had sent their battleships to many mineral lodes controlled by Dark Shadow Clan. They had claimed them one step ahead of the others, unfolding the flag of Fighting League.

Although the Divine Light also took the chance to claim some mineral stars, the number of the mines couldn't be compared to what Divine Light had claimed.

"Although the Divine Light has asked for half of the territories, they, they have asked for the areas with the richest products!" Qi Ze thundered.

"I know." Feng Han wore a cold and harsh face. "Of course, later on, we will have a lot of battles with the Divine Light. Now just take a step back. When we're sure Xia Xin Yan is okay, we will take them back, one by one."

Miao Rong sighed inwardly. He nodded begrudgingly and said nothing.

He knew Feng Han had made up his mind. He also knew how important Xia Xin Yan was in Feng Han's heart. Of course, he wasn't stupid to oppose his idea.

With Feng Han's letter, Miao Rong gathered his Water Moon War Department and departed from the headquarters of the Fighting League. He headed to the life star where Shi Yan and Xia Xin Yan were confined.

The life star that had the divine crystal lode.

A purple crystal battleship descended from the sky. The dazzling purple crystal light reflected on the face of the warriors who were lining up to welcome the ship.

Sana and the warriors of the Divine Light in this place all gathered to welcome someone. Sana still wore a cold and stiff face. However, he had pulled a smile, which showed his happy mood.

A beautiful woman wearing a long light purple dress moved mesmerizingly. She slowly and gently emerged, giving people a feeling of seeing the moon surrounded by stars. Her face looked like a blooming cherry blossom, which looked refresh and graceful, accompanied by her voluptuous body. While she was walking, the hem of her dress fluttered and revealed a part of her snow-white legs.

Many warriors of the Divine Light watched her with hot looks. It was the enthusiasm of men to their Goddess.

The woman walked with a graceful gait as she smiled and spoke to Sana. Her makings were natural but gorgeous, which made it hard for people to move their eyes from her.

Warriors of the Windstorm War Department stood on their flying bird battleships, frowning while looking at that magnificent woman. Someone couldn't help but sigh, "This woman is a bane because of her glamor."

"Yeah, she's truly the nemesis of men. She's not less beautiful than our Madame. I wonder who she is."

"If Sana has to come to greet her, obviously, her position in the Divine Light isn't low."

"I think she belongs to the top echelon of Divine Light. No doubt about it."

Warriors of Fighting League clamored. They discreetly compared that woman and Xia Xin Yan. Then, they found that one of them was so mesmerizingly sexy while the other was like a fairy. They all had special prominent makings. And the warriors couldn't tell who was better.

No one recognized that when the woman in purple appeared, Shi

Yan had quietly disappeared into the crowd. He tried to hide behind some people as if he was avoiding something.

Xia Xin Yan didn't notice his small commotion as her attention was captured by that woman in purple. She said, "This woman is so beautiful. If I was a man, I would offer my heart to her. The so-called sexy rare beauty looks like this, right?"

Although she didn't speak loudly, people knew who she was talking to.

Shi Yan gave a dry laugh, but he didn't answer.

His line of sight pierced through the crowd, falling on the indescribably beautiful figure. He was astounded, indeed.

She has reached Third Sky of Original God Realm and she wasn't far from Ethereal God Realm. After thirty years, she had progressed fast. It seemed like the Divine Light's Master favored her a lot...

"Little mei-mei, why are you here?" Sana spoke with a tender countenance. "I asked you whether you wanted to join this trip to Shadow Ghostly Prison or not and you told me it was boring, didn't you? Why did you come here all of a sudden?"

Zi Yao smiled charmingly, "I suddenly felt so bored cultivating all the time. I came here to amuse myself. I heard that this area has been interesting lately. Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and even Potion and Tool Pavilion are here. I'm here to join the fun."

Her beautiful eyes raked through the crowd over Sana to see the flying bird battleships of the Fighting League as if she was searching for someone.

Sana was sensitive enough to see her commotion. He frowned and looked at around ten battleships of the Fighting League. He asked with surprise, "Little mei-mei, you know someone on those battleships? I can see that you are often watching them even after you arrived here."

"I heard that Xia Xin Yan, the commander of the Windstorm War Department of the Fighting League is the most elegant and beautiful warrior of Shadow Ghostly Prison. And she's so smart. Oh, I'm curious about such a perfect woman. I want to see her widen my mind though," Zi Yao smiled gently.

Sana shivered. He suddenly understood and spoke, "Talking about beauty, you're more worth mentioning," his eyes showed a gleam of hot admiration.

Beautiful women liked to compare with each other. Sana understood it. Thus, he assumed that Zi Yao was actually curious about Xia Xin Yan, so he didn't ask her more about it.

"Senior, you're overpraising me." Zi Yao got up and contemplated for a while, "I'm going to meet her."

"I'm going with you," Sana also got up, his face stern. "Mei-mei, although your realm is increasing fast, you're just at Third Sky of Original God Realm. Warriors of the Windstorm War Department aren't nice. If they have bad thoughts and decide to keep you as a hostage, we will be pushed into a passive situation."

As Zi Yao knew she couldn't change his mind, she just smiled and thanked him.

Sana immediately chose some warriors at Ethereal God Realm to escort Zi Yao to Fighting League's battleships.

"Ah, they're heading towards us! What do they want?"

"Seems like that woman asked them to come here. Strange, eh? Why is she interested in us?"

"Who knows? Perhaps she's bored, so she wants to find something fun."

The warriors of the Fighting League saw Zi Yao surrounded by the experts of Divine Light slowly approaching. They all screamed in astonishment.

Xia Xin Yan was also surprised. Her bold brows furrowed as she didn't know her intention.

She understood that Sana had used the Sound Stone to talk to the senior management level of the Divine Light. At this moment, they were likely negotiating with the Fighting League. Keeping them hostage was just an advantage. Unless they had the final answer, they wouldn't have contacted them this quickly.

She was surprised, so she wanted to ask Shi Yan for his opinion. She turned and became bewildered.

In this critical moment, Shi Yan wasn't here. She didn't know where he had gone.

Xia Xin Yan slammed her brows together.

Accompanied by Sana's team, beautiful Zi Yao slowly descended on the flying bird battleship. She directly walked to Xia Xin Yan. Her clear, bright eyes focused on Xia Xin Yan right from the beginning.

Xia Xin Yan was baffled.

"Xia mei-mei, you're so gorgeous. As I've seen you today, I know your reputation isn't just something in vain." Zi Yao's face was filled with bright smiles.

Xia Xin Yan frowned and said nothing.

Zi Yao was still smiling. Her line of sight stayed on Xia Xin Yan for a while before scanning through many warriors of the Fighting League standing around. After a while, she stooped and burst out laughing as her eyes fell on the passage leading to the cabin of this battleship. She even cursed something under her breath.

"Who do you want to see?" Xia Xin Yan stared at her for a while before she suddenly understood something. She shouted immediately.

"Nobody. I just want to talk to you for a while in private." Zi Yao

said softly, her smile bright and warm. Her pretty eyes looked straight at Xia Xin Yan.

"All right!" Xia Xin Yan was frank and friendly. "Shall we go to the control center?"

"No problem." Zi Yao smiled and spoke to Sana, "It's okay. The control center of the battleship is right in front of you. Nothing unexpected will happen. Don't worry."

Sana frowned, giving her a curt nod.

Immediately, the two peerlessly graceful and talented women with different elegant makings walked shoulder by shoulder and headed to the control center of the battleship. The stone door closed behind them, deafening all sounds. No one knew what they were going to discuss.

Chapter 1069: Poison-dipped Cold Bead

The control center of the battleship.

The arched ceiling of this cabin had been inlaid with a lot of seven-colored gemstones. Each gemstone represented a life star in Shadow Ghostly Prison. The distances between the gems represented each star's related location in the galaxy. This was an exquisite and precise star map that the Fighting League had spent a lot of money to buy from Potion and Tool Pavilion.

The magnificent star map hung above the two gorgeous women in this room. The two of them sat down opposite each other. Their eyes sparkled with strange lights.

"Before the Divine Light has arrived in Shadow Ghostly Prison, we've received the news from Second Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion that confirmed that the Dark Shadow Clan had left." Zi Yao smiled warmly and spoke casually, "Well, it's like when the tree is down. Everyone jumps on it with their axes. Anyway, we use power to talk in Shadow Ghostly Prison. Xia xiao-mei, I think you understand the Divine Light's operation here. We take the chance and jump in. Well, it's similar to your Fighting League's operations though."

Xia Xin Yan frowned. She didn't oppose because she knew that Zi Yao was right.

In their peak of glory, the Fighting League had fought here and there in Shadow Ghostly Prison. They used force to threaten the weak. They had many tricks that couldn't be said frank and upright. Well, they were despicable, indeed.

She didn't have the right to mock Divine Light's operation here.

"My senior Sana's in charge of this operation. I'm just a visitor." Zi Yao laughed and then spoke to Xia Xin Yan gently. "But I can help you get out of here."

Xia Xin Yan was surprised. She looked bewildered for a while, her mouth pulling into a strange smile. "You're a member of the Divine Light, but you're kind enough to help me? Tell me, what do you want? You should know I'm not easy to fool. Don't hide your real intentions."

"Haha," Zi Yao giggled and spoke with a lazy complexion, "Divine Light wants to exchange you for half of the Dark Shadow Clan's territories. Those territories are the richest lands of the Dark Shadow Clan. Oh, right. Before I came here, I got news that Hegemon Feng Han has agreed with this. He has sent Miao Rong and his Water Moon War Department. Oh, your Hegemon is generous, indeed. You have a good master."

Xia Xin Yan's countenance was natural.

"You don't think it's weird?" Zi Yao was surprised.

"No," Xia Xin Yan smiled gently and spoke naturally, "When will Miao Rong arrive?"

"I estimate that it will take one month. He brings the handwritten letter from Feng Han. It's the comprehensive treaty. That letter will give us a lot of land without the need to fight for them. Those lands... should belong to the Fighting League though."

Zi Yao focused on her and spoke tenderly, "If you agree with me one thing, I can let you leave discreetly. I'm sure when Sana recognizes it, you guys are all safe. What do you think?"

"You tell me." Xia Xin Yan frowned and suddenly became serious.

It's a one-clause agreement that could help save many lands. Xia Xin Yan thought it would be too big for her to be able to make the deal.

"It's simple." Zi Yao smiled happily, her bright eyes squinting. "You just need to leave him."

"Who?" Xia Xin Yan was baffled.

"You know who." Zi Yao replied gently. Her eyes sparkled strangely. She took a deep breath as she was actually anxious.

Xia Xin Yan's face stiffened. She kept silent as she was pondering. After a while, her eyes became colder. She screamed, "I reject it."

She got the answer.

When Zi Yao arrived, her beautiful eyes had suddenly scanned through the crowd, searching for someone. After she got on the deck of this battleship, she had checked every random area. Apparently, she was looking for someone. At the critical moment, Shi Yan disappeared. Linking these two events, she understood it.

The smile on Zi Yao's face narrowed. She said earnestly, "It can save your Fighting League a big fortune this time. Is he worth you holding on?"

"Well, needless to say, half of the territories of the Dark Shadow Clan. Even if you guys ask the Hegemon for all, he will agree. However, even if you do that, I won't leave him because of this or because of your words."

Xia Xin Yan looked totally relaxed. She smiled lovingly, "Well, if you use this method to force me, I think he hasn't established any relationship with you, right? Ah ha! It makes me curious then. You're so beautiful and he's a lustful bastard. Well, he hasn't done anything to you, right? Could you tell me what has happened? It's not what he would do."

Since Zi Yao had come here, she had always taken the upper hand. However, what Xia Xin Yan told her had put her into a lower position. She gritted her teeth as she mumbled, "It's because he has known you earlier. Or else, he would have knelt under my dress!"

"So, it has not happened yet, right?" Xia Xin Yan smiled meaningfully. Her beautiful eyes twinkled. She stood up with the bright countenance of a winner.

Zi Yao felt like she had failed. She pondered for a while and then stood up. She spoke casually, "Never mind. If we can't talk to each other into this, I will take him with my abilities. It's my warning to you just in case you say that I'm forcing you."

"No no no," Xia Xin Yan smiled until her eyes squinted. "Come and steal him. I like competing with people a lot. Especially when my rival is at your level. Oh just thinking about it makes my blood boil. Okay, I will shut my mouth. I will say nothing about what happened today between us. Just consider this as a little chit-chat. What do you think?"

"You read my mind," Zi Yao looked at her and sighed. She knew that this rival was extremely tough. Compared to the characters she had met, she was much tougher.

Thinking about competing for a man against this sort of opponent, she had a headache. However, thinking about that man, she couldn't help it.

That bastard! Why do you have to hide? Am I that frightening? Or are you afraid of seeing the fight between your lover and me? Asshole!

She was cursing him under her breath. When Zi Yao's and Xia Xin Yan's eyes locked, the two pairs of beautiful eyes seemed to send sparks into the air. They immediately left the control center, their faces even brighter and happier. They looked like two sisters who had just had a good talk. They made the warriors of Fighting League and Divine Light wear awkward complexions.

"Mei-mei..." Sana frowned. He looked as if he wanted to say something.

He was worried that Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan's talk would stand in the way of Divine Light's big plan. He didn't know what to do now.

"Miss Xia and I couldn't talk it through." Zi Yao opened her hand and she said with a smile, "So, you should do what you need to do.

I won't interfere."

Sana and the Divine Light warriors exhaled in relief.

"Miss Xia, Miao Rong will arrive in one month. After we get the letter from him, we will let you go," said Sana coldly. He immediately escorted Zi Yao together with the other experts and left.

Xia Xin Yan didn't look dispirited. Quite the contrary, she looked as if she had won a big game. She was even a little content.

Her subordinates also didn't understand. They sighed that the world of women was truly something men couldn't reason. They could never know what the two beautiful women had just discussed.

In the secret chamber of the battleship, Shi Yan was sitting cross-legged on a jade platform. However, it was just his empty body. His soul seemed to leave his body to a fairyland. At this moment, he didn't have a bit of life energy surging.

When Zi Yao came, he had tried his best to avoid because he didn't want to meet Zi Yao at this moment. He didn't want to see Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan have any dispute. Anyway, he didn't know that this dispute still happened.

Shi Yan knew Feng Han of Fighting League would agree with Divine Light's conditions because Feng Han had taken care of Xia Xin Yan and protected her as his blood sister. He also knew that if Zi Yao knew how Shi Yan cared about Xia Xin Yan, she would hurt her.

At most, they would complicate the conditions in the treaty between Fighting League and Divine Light. No matter what, Xia Xin Yan's life wouldn't be threatened.

With this premise, Shi Yan didn't mind the competition between the Divine Light and Fighting League regarding the Dark Shadow

Clan's territories that much.

He was carefree enough to let his soul enter the fountainhead of power Upanishad.

There, he received signals of Fires power Upanishad and his two souls found the life energy fluctuations of Xuan Fei.

His souls moved forward and sent her his soul message from a distance, "I'm here to explain to you."

"Despicable!" Seeing him, Xuan Fei was enraged. She spoke resentfully, "To solve your problem, my master and I had to cross the border to get into Agate Star Area. My master had to stop her cultivation too. She had to consume a lot of energy to refine the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Well, you're good. You didn't do anything and you took in the essence soul of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It was the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. You didn't even signal us. You'd planned it earlier, hadn't you?"

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "It was unexpected. It... it's called Poison-dipped Cold Bead?"

After he had absorbed the soul gossamers of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, he did have an inky bead in his soul. That bead was cold and it contained magical soul energy fluctuations. However, he didn't know why it was magical. Listening to Xuan Fei, Shi Yan knew that the bead was called Poison-dipped Cold Bead.

"Unexpected?" Xuan Fei's small face was filled with disdain. "If it was unexpected, you should return the bead to my master, so we can trust you again."

It was beyond Xuan Fei's estimation that Shi Yan chuckled and nodded. "I'm here to tell you and your teacher that if you have free time, come and take that poison-dipped bead. I can't bring it to the fountainhead of power Upanishad and I don't have free time to come to your place. So, I would ask for your labor to come here once again."

Xuan Fei was surprised. "Are you serious?"

Shi Yan smiled and confirmed it.

"My master said that the Poison-dipped Cold Bead is the condensed soul of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It can gather extremely toxic poisons in the world and release toxic smokes. Besides, it was the source of energy so as the jellyfish could live in the cold Yin sea. It's much more useful to the warriors who have fused with heaven flames like us. If we have the Poison-dipped Cold Bead in our soul while cultivating, we won't be backfired or fall into bedevilment. The heaven flames wouldn't be able to burn our body and soul. You also know that warriors with heaven flames like us will be burned into ashes when we fall into bedevilment. The usage of the Poison-dipped Cold Bead can prevent it. It's really precious. Do you really want to return it to us?"

Xuan Fei was suspicious.

"Yeah, I came here this time to ask you to tell your master. When she has free time, please come to take the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. It belongs to her."

"Okay, I will tell her."

"Okay. I have to go now. Goodbye."

Shi Yan smiled and left the area of Fires power Upanishads. His souls flashed and then faded away as his figured disappeared.

Chapter 1070: Dispel the Former Hatred

Opening his eyes, a lucid and graceful face shielded his view. Shi Yan shivered and tried to squeeze a smile. "Hey... why are you down here?"

Xia Xin Yan seemed to be in a good mood. Her water-blue long dress had many layers like a blooming flower decorated with many crystals, which outlined her mesmerizing body. She hung a faint smile on the corner of her mouth. "The woman from the purple crystal battleship came to talk to me."

Shi Yan's pupil shrank. He pretended to be calm and asked curiously, "What were you guys talking about?"

"Nothing. It was women's stuff. That woman is really beautiful. I even felt my heart beating faster. I'm afraid that no man could resist her. Don't you think so?" she sighed weakly.

Shi Yan's face was placid, but he didn't give any comment.

Obviously, Xia Xin Yan didn't want to let him go that easily. She parted her lips and teased him, "What do you think?"

"Really beautiful."

"Were you moved?"

"No."

"Why not?"

"Because I have you."

"Don't you want to enjoy a life of having a lot of beauties surrounding you?"

"Cough! Cough! Never."

"Really? Never?"

"Yes, I never want that kind of life."

". . ."

Xia Xin Yan looked at him and started to guffaw, clutching her tummy. She laughed so hard that her body shook. Her face filled with a strange glory of the winner.

"Smooch!"

She suddenly walked forward. Without waiting for Shi Yan to react, she clutched his neck and gave him a smooch on his cheek, which was like a dragon gliding above the stream. She smiled and then swayed away as fast as lightning. "You look... cute today. I suddenly feel all of my sorrows wash away."

Then, she didn't wait for Shi Yan to speak. She just moved swiftly and gently like a butterfly, leaving the secret chamber.

Rubbing his cheek with the sweet aroma, Shi Yan frowned as he didn't understand anything. He didn't know why she suddenly became that crazy.

The Divine Light warriors still had the vigilance they should have for Fighting League. Their battleships were still hovering, blocking their ways. They didn't have a relaxing moment.

And that was all.

They didn't disturb the Fighting League or send any warriors to show their power. They stayed there like water from a well or a river. Both sides were waiting for Miao Rong.

An elegant purple figure often stood on the high tower of the battleship to look at the flying bird battleships from a distance. Sometimes, when the two pairs of beautiful eyes met each other, they seemed to ignite flames. Both warriors of Divine Light and Fighting League were surprised as they found it inexplicable.

Xia Xin Yan was always relaxed. She wasn't dispirited and reluctant like someone being held hostage. She looked casual as she often discussed cultivating methods with her subordinates. They often heard her silver, bell-like laughter.

Shi Yan sat quietly in the secret chamber of the battleship. He hadn't left once ever since. He seemed to be cultivating there.

Sana came to Zi Yao's battleship every day to talk about the tasks in their organization. Sana always wore a cold and harsh face to other people. However, when he spoke to Zi Yao, he looked much softer.

Zi Yao's charming face always held a mesmerizing smile. When she spoke to Sana, it was the same. They talked about many things that happened in Shadow Ghostly Prison and the secrets of the Dark Shadow Clan's banishment.

"The information we got is from Second Elder Gu He of the Potion and Tool Pavilion." Sana didn't want to lie to her. "According to Gu He, the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Fighting League had joined hands to fight Dark Shadow Clan and expelled them. Gu He didn't tell the details of that battle. However, he said that if the Dark Shadow Clan wasn't expelled and the space passage wasn't blocked, the God Clan, the overlord of the universe, could invade our Agate Star Area."

"I heard that the Young Elder Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion has a... close relationship with a young man?" asked Zi Yao naturally.

"Right, that young man is called Shi Yan. I heard that the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion who know him highly respect him. Elder Gu He said that the said young man has a close relationship with Monster Clan and Demon Clan. He did something great, but we don't know what he'd done there," said Sana.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes rippled with the strange light. She smiled and nodded to him. "He... where did he go?"

"I don't know. But I think he went with Blood Devil to Devil Blood Star." Sana wasn't so sure.

Zi Yao didn't ask further.

"Mei-mei, you seem interested in that young man. Why?" Sana was sensitive. "Do you know him?"

Fountainhead of power Upanishad.

Shi Yan's souls emerged like the ignis fatuus. Shortly after, they turned into his real form. He sauntered into the region of Fires power Upanishads.

In that area, two graceful figures that looked like two illusions were floating. They seemed to have been waiting for a long time.

They were beautiful woman: Yu Shan and the young girl Xuan Fei.

"You dare to come here!" Yu Shan said with a cold face. "You should know that if I wanted to kill you here, it's a piece of cake."

Xuan Fei bit her lower lip, grunting. "Asshole. He's cunning. He didn't tell a single true thing."

"What?!?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"After your soul has refined the Poison-dipped Cold Bead, it has your soul imprint. It's like a weapon that acknowledges its master. You can't give it away! If my teacher didn't tell me, I would have thought it was for my teacher to use. Apparently, you've tamed the bead. How could you give it to us? Harrumph, you're full of lies!" Xuan Fei was indignant.

Yu Shan didn't have a pleasant countenance, either.

Shi Yan was stunned. He looked at the beautiful woman and the young lady who were enraged and suddenly had a headache. "I actually didn't know a thing about that Poison-dipped Cold Bead. I've never thought about deceiving you guys. Otherwise, I wouldn't have met you."

Yu Shan's look drilled into Shi Yan. Pondering for a while, her

face relaxed. "You don't look like you're trying to deceive us. If not, you wouldn't dare to come here. It wouldn't be different from killing yourself."

"I'm wronged. The gossamers of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish entered my soul unknowingly. I didn't want to take it, really," explained Shi Yan.

"Tell us the situation. Why you were able to gather those soul gossamers that easily. Even I couldn't do that," frowned Yu Shan.

After she had returned to Fiery Rain Star Area, she calmed down and thought about it. With what Shi Yan had shown at that moment, she thought that this event had something strange. Although she knew about the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, she knew it was really hard to gather its soul gossamers. Ordinary warriors couldn't bear it. It wasn't that easy to absorb, either.

Even if she could take it herself, it would have taken a lot of time to wear out the cold aura before she could take it in.

Shi Yan had captured that soul too fast. It wasn't normal. She hadn't reacted, yet he had finished it.

Thinking about it, she felt so strange. She thought perhaps they had misunderstood something. When Xuan Fei reported to her that Shi Yan had gone to the fountainhead of power Upanishad and expressed that he wanted to hand them the Poison-dipped Cold Bead, she thought that some misunderstanding was about eighty percent likely.

Today, as Shi Yan came here once again, she knew something strange had happened at that moment.

"Oh, okay, let's say it like this," he hesitated, "my soul has something magical I don't want to explain clearly. At that moment, I didn't try to do anything and the mysterious feature of my soul had proactively gathered the soul gossamers. I couldn't do anything to stop it. That's how it happened."

The more vague and unclear he made it, the more Shi Yan winced and the more Yu Shan believed him. Yu Shan thought that if Shi Yan wanted to fabricate an excuse, he would have found something more convincing. The way he knitted his brows and stammered spoke to the fact that he didn't make up anything.

"The Poison-dipped Cold Bead has your soul imprint. Unless you die, it's difficult to extract it." Yu Shan snorted. "I've crossed thousands of miles to help you and now I can't get the bead. Tell me how you're going to compensate me? You know, if I haven't come there, your friends would have all died."

"I don't know what you need," Shi Yan was baffled.

"There's a woman called Leona in your team. She follows you. I want... her to go to Fiery Rain Star Area to help us train our troops so that they could face the God Clan directly. If you agree, our knot will be erased. What do you think?"

Shi Yan forced a smile.

Leona had become so hot these days. It was beyond his estimation. Today, not only the Demon Clan and Monster Clan considered her the top treasure. Even the alien force from another star area also wanted her talents.

"Is it not okay?" Yu Shan's face got colder.

"Okay, but you have to wait for a while. At the moment, she's training the Monster and Demon corps. Wait after she..."

"We don't have much time!" Yu Shan intervened curtly. "Okay, we will arrange a troop to enter Agate Star Area. You will let Leona train them carefully. You don't need to worry about all the cultivating materials, divine crystals, and other supplies. Just make sure Leona can turn them into powerful and elite corps!" shouted Yu Shan.

Shi Yan was astounded. He looked at Yu Shan for a long moment and then asked. "So you're having a significant pressure from the

God Clan as you're so hurried. Is it true?"

Yu Shan sighed and nodded begrudgingly. "We can't resist for a long time..."

"All right. I'll help you out! Send your troop here. I will arrange for them!" Shi Yan agreed all of a sudden.

The life star where the Divine Light and Fighting League were gathering.

The peak of the mountain where a massive divine crystal lode hid had an entrance that lead deep into the mountain.

Today, all of a sudden, people heard someone crying and screeching painfully. Immediately, dozens of warriors in Divine Light uniform ran out of there helter-skelter. Their entire bodies had purple bruises and their breathing so weak.

Shortly after, those warriors screamed and cried pathetically as they were scratching their skin and flesh, bleeding badly. Soon, their lives were taken away.

Warriors of the Divine Light and Fighting League discolored in fright. They didn't know what was going on.

Quickly, more and more warriors of the Divine Light ran out of that entrance together with the mine slaves. They were crying and shrilling heartbreakingly. They all fell because of poison.

Many extinct volcanoes in this life star started to fume the thick smokes. Slowly, they covered the entire sky.

Shi Yan was hiding in the secret chamber. Hearing the noise, he walked out, his hand holding the inky cold bead. Looking at the dark red, blue, purple, and green smokes in the sky, he said, "The Dark Shadow Clan is too cruel. They had sealed the toxic smokes of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish in this divine crystal lode. Those restrictions triggered and they start to release the toxic smoke and

mist. Although the Dark Shadow Clan had gone, they left a trap for the people who came after them. I guess it was aimed at the Fighting League."

Xia Xin Yan had a stern face as she frowned.

The extreme toxins the Dark Shadow Clan had left to ambush the Fighting League were triggered by the Divine Light warriors. At this moment, warriors of Divine Light who had entered that lode continued to die.

The entire sky was filled with toxic smoke. All of a sudden, everybody was trapped. This was the last deadly attack of the Dark Shadow Clan to exterminate its enemies.

Chapter 1071: Spreading

Hovering above the mountain range of the divine crystal lode were dozens of battleships, with even more war chariots moving around. The warriors of the Divine Light were waiting, watching over the entrance of the lode.

More and more mining slaves and Divine Light warriors rushed out of the place. Their faces were blue or purple. After they got out for not too far a distance, they coughed, vomited blood, and then died. None of them could resist for a long time.

"What's going on?"

Sana's stiff face was now anxious and restless while his angry voice echoed.

No one answered him.

The warriors and mining slaves of Divine Light getting out of the lode didn't have the time to talk. They were busy covering their mouths and necks, struggling in pain and shrieking shrilly. Shortly after, no one was left alive.

The extinct volcanoes everywhere around this life star were fuming out the toxic green and blue smoke. The smoke was so dense it could cover the whole sky. Soon, the entire life star was shaded by a thick layer of toxic smoke.

Everybody discolored in fright and felt heavy-hearted under such a deadly pressure.

An old man of the Divine Light flew out of the lode entrance, his face ashen. He was wearing a moon-white long robe, his aura immense. He was the only one that wasn't affected by the toxins.

"Old Ju!" Sana screamed.

Ju Bo was the Incipient God Realm expert who was hidden under the divine crystal lode. The Divine Light had sent him here to deal

with Feng Yan. However, since Feng Yan didn't come, he kept staying hidden in the mineral lode. When Shi Yan had used his Soul Consciousness to find the space node, Ju Bo had used his soul to disturb him.

At this moment, Ju Bo looked grim. He took a deep breath and then said, "While our men were exploiting divine crystals, they accidentally activated a restriction. Toxic smoke rose out at the same time. That restriction has chained many extinct volcanoes. It happened in a blink, and we couldn't do anything to stop it."

"Even you don't have any solution to stop it?" Sana was frightened.

"When I realized something had gone wrong, the smokes had spread out already." Ju Bo's face was dark. "Those poisons are hazardous. They can enter the soul altar directly. I can only resist, but not be able to help the others."

A graceful, purple figure emerged from her purple battleship. She pitched her voice, "Grandpa Ju, what happened?"

"We must leave this place as soon as possible!" Ju Bo was restlessly tense. "Little Yao, order our forces to leave. Now!"

"What about the divine crystal lode?" Zi Yao was surprised.

"We don't have the time to mind it," said Ju Bo worriedly.

Sana lifted his head, looking at the colored toxic clouds in the sky, his face grimacing. "Old Ju, I'm afraid that we can't leave easily. If you can't wash the smoke away, I think we don't have any solution then."

Hearing him, many warriors of the Divine Light were petrified, their eyes restless.

Ju Bo looked at the thick toxic clouds in the sky, knitting his brows tightly. "I'm going to try if I can clean a passage for you guys to glide through."

Then, Ju Bo soared up into the sky, hovering by a dark blue cluster of clouds as he started to urge his power Upanishad.

Shortly after, thunder reverberated. Lightning strikes flashed like a saber, weaving in the sky like giant snakes. They struck at the toxic clouds in the sky.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The massive and wild lightning snakes struck through the dark blue clouds. However, after the lightning snakes got through the layer of clouds, the dark blue smoke immediately swarmed over to fill the hole.

Ju Bo looked cold as he continued to urge his power, controlling the lightning snakes and attacking the clouds. Unfortunately, after the lightning snakes crossed the clouds, the dark blue smoke immediately occupied the hole they had just created.

Ju Bo felt like he had just fallen into an ice chamber. He knew that the situation was really messed up, so he tried to use other tricks.

However, after several failures using his power Upanishad, he couldn't wash away the toxic smoke. At the same time, the poisonous clouds were pressing down from the sky, seeping towards the surface of the planet.

At this moment, toxic smoke was hovering in the tunnels between the mines underground as well as inside the mountains. It was also slowly crawling up into the sky while the poisonous clouds were pressing down. Shortly after, the toxic vapors in the air and from underground would meet up and merge with each other.

Then, no one on this life star would be able to escape the erosion of the toxic smoke. Without the power to resist, they would die gradually.

Divine Light warriors became fluttered as they looked at the sky

with fear, trying to find a way to escape. On the other side, warriors on the flying bird battleships of Fighting League were also frightened.

They knew how terrible the toxic smoke and clouds could be. They had experienced them once, and understood how fatal they were, much more than the Divine Light warriors.

While being confined in the icy cold sea, the four Incipient God Realm experts had joined hands to create the energy curtain to protect them from the toxins. Bath, Gu Te, Feng Yan, and Blood Devil had had to use a lot of energy to resist for two months. Especially Feng Yan, she couldn't hold it up for a long time, and had almost exhausted her energy.

Looking at the similar smoke and mist, they immediately knew where they came from.

They came from the meat lumps of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. The Fighting League warriors knew the situation. They knew it was the last attack of the Divine Light aimed at the Fighting League.

As Divine Light came up with a conspiracy, they had claimed this planet first. They thought they could take the divine crystal lode, but too bad the Dark Shadow Clan had used the restriction to trap them. In just a short time, they had borne huge losses.

The Fighting League warriors looked at hundreds of warriors and mining slaves of the Divine Light die, but they couldn't feel happy.

They understood that if the warriors of Divine Light hadn't come here first, today, the ones who died there would have been them, even though they were not so sure they could survive at this moment or not.

They all looked at Xia Xin Yan.

Xia Xin Yan had a calm face. She wasn't hurried, as if she didn't have any pressures. She looked at Shi Yan, her eyes asking. She

stooped, shooting a discreet look on the inky bead in his hand.

That bead was black, with thick Yin Qi in it. However, the Yin Qi swirling inside the bead didn't come out to the environment. Only Shi Yan, who was holding it, could feel how icy it was. He could feel the bead release some magical energy fluctuation, which seemed to match with the toxic smoke covering this life star.

"Can you resolve this?" Xia Xin Yan whispered.

Shi Yan thought for a while and then released his Soul Consciousness to contact the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. Then, he nodded smilingly. "Not a big problem."

Xia Xin Yan calmed down, beaming a natural smile. "Well, the others don't seem to have a solution."

As she threw a look to the Divine Light's side. Shi Yan found an elegant purple figure who seemed to have lost her calm, seeming fluttered. Sana was even more worried. He was screaming, trying to find the warriors with Fire power Upanishad to burn the toxic smoke in the sky.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan sighed. He knew the warriors with Fire power Upanishad of the Divine Light couldn't solve the poison of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. Although the smoke didn't come from the jellyfish directly at this moment, as the Dark Shadow Clan had captured the toxins from it and trapped them here, they were still very deadly. Only the warriors who had fused with the heaven flame could burn them down.

The Divine Light had many warriors cultivating Fire power Upanishad at the Ethereal God Realm. However, they didn't have heaven flames from the Origin.

In other words, it was impossible for the Divine Light to deal with the toxic smoke.

Anyway, people who should die had already died. The ones who were still alive were now trapped in the clearance between the

toxic clouds in the sky and underground. They could be temporarily safe for a short time.

Staring at the other side for a while, Shi Yan frowned while talking to Xia Xin Yan. "Okay, we will get out of here first. After we're all safe, I'll help the Divine Light warriors escape. At this moment, you guys and the Divine Light don't have any deep grudges we can't solve. We shouldn't be too heartless."

Xia Xin Yan was bewildered, then smiled then said, "Okay."

She knew that it wasn't Shi Yan feeling for the Divine Light. He just didn't want to see Zi Yao getting killed by the poison. That's why he said so.

Of course, she wouldn't point it out. She knew Shi Yan was chivalrous.

"I will bring you out of here first." While pondering, Shi Yan lifted his head and said, "We have to stop before touching the toxic smoke. I will clean a passage for you guys."

Xia Xin Yan nodded, spreading her order. She asked her Windstorm warriors not to touch the toxic smoke. Everybody listened to her, their faces excited.

Through the difficulties they had experienced in the space passage, they had laid their trust in Shi Yan. As he had resolved the threat of the lethal Departed Spirit Jellyfish, they understood that it wasn't going to be a big trouble for Shi Yan this time. Seeing the warriors of the Divine Light wincing hopelessly, they felt happy.

Since the Divine Light warriors had broken the restriction the Dark Shadow Clan had left and borne the disaster for them, they felt pleasure on their misfortune.

"Oh, they... they want to leave?" Sana frowned, his voice cold and harsh.

Ju Bo, Zi Yao, and many warriors of the Divine Light were astounded. They immediately looked at the flying bird battleships.

"Courting death!" said an Ethereal God Realm warrior of Divine Light who cultivated Fire power Upanishad. "If we could get rid of it that easily, we would have left already. Why would we linger until now? I'm afraid they don't know the deadly features of the toxic clouds. If they fly up there, they are going to kill themselves!"

Ju Bo and Sana nodded as they agreed with that man. They also thought that Xia Xin Yan's force was going to commit suicide.

However, Zi Yao had a bizarre look on her face. She lifted her head, revealing her blushing neck. Looking at that majestic figure in the sky, she screamed in her mind. 'That b*stard finally came out!'

Her soft body shivered as she realized something. She hesitated for a while then flew off her battleships while shouting. "Watch out! It's not easy to burn those toxic clouds. Don't act rashly. Stop!"

She was worried about Shi Yan. She didn't mind anything else, just screaming to remind him.

Many warriors of the Divine Light looked at her with an odd face.

Warriors of the Windstorm War Department of Fighting League were also skeptical, as they couldn't understand her actions.

Only Shi Yan felt warm as he knew Zi Yao hadn't changed. She was still the woman he had known.

Chapter 1072: Dissolve

The toxic clouds shaded the entire sky, making the planet dark and cold. Toxic smoke hovered thickly in every corner of this place.

Many warriors of Divine Light had a grimace on their faces. They lifted their heads to look at the sky, thinking hard to find a solution to escape.

Ju Bo had tried all methods, but he couldn't bring the Divine Light warriors out of this danger. He looked more and more worried with time.

At this moment, the battleships of the Fighting League, which were the Divine Light's hostages, floated up quietly. They shot into the sky, which made Divine Light warriors furrow their brows and their faces grim. They didn't want to stop Fighting League, as they thought the others were courting death.

At this moment, the toxic clouds were hovering like the poisonous army in the sky. So, Divine Light warriors didn't have the mood to remind the Fighting League's.

At the critical moment, Zi Yao stormed out and shouted, warning the Fighting League about the toxic clouds and asking them to not act rashly.

Warriors of Divine Light and Fighting League were both bewildered. They looked at her, but they couldn't find a reason for her actions.

In front of many people, Zi Yao's long eyelashes batted. Her line of sight pierced through the warriors of the Windstorm War Department and stopped at a lean and tall figure. Everybody looked in the same direction and saw a young man in the crowd of the Fighting League.

That was Shi Yan.

He smiled at her brightly from a distance. He looked at Zi Yao, but didn't answer.

An inky cold bead in his hand suddenly rippled with magical energy. In that area, clusters of colored poisonous clouds began to surge, rolling torrentially like unceasing, rising tides as they all swarmed over him.

Everybody was petrified. They looked at him without a clue of what he was doing.

"Prepare to slide out," hissed Shi Yan.

Xia Xin Yan's soft body shivered, then she ordered her subordinates quickly. "Prepare to move out!"

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

It sounded like the wind howling when the viscous toxic clouds above their heads began to storm into his palm like colorful banners. They entered the inky bead that looked quite plain and banal.

The speed of those clouds entering the bead was unimaginably fast. Shortly, a corner of the toxic vapors covering the sky had disappeared into the bead. That bead now had a faint halo with the magical energy rippling in it. It seemed stronger, as if it had just taken in some power.

In just a blink of an eye, a large amount of toxic clouds in the sky had disappeared. The shaded sky seemed to have a small corner torn, revealing a path with light shining through.

The flying bird battleships were ready. They burst out rumblingly while the divine crystals inside were triggered to the maximum. Those battleships soared up into the sky, piercing through the light passage. Shortly after, they had escaped the life star, entering the vast outer space.

Many warriors of the Divine Light were dumbstruck. They gawked and dropped their jaws on seeing the other simply break

through the layer of toxic smoke, which their precursor Ju Bo, who was at the First Sky of Incipient God Realm, couldn't achieve. What was going on?

They exchanged looks. At this moment, they didn't know how to react.

Zi Yao's graceful body hovered in the horizon not far from the toxic clouds above her head. Her beautiful eyes twinkled as she smiled, glaring at Shi Yan charmingly. However, she didn't utter a word.

In her heart, Shi Yan was always a mystery. Nothing could stand in his way. Today, Shi Yan had confirmed it one more time.

"Move! Follow them!"

Ju Bo reacted. He pitched his voice, shouting, "Go at your max speed. Go through that passage to get out of this life star!"

At this moment, the warriors of Divine Light finally reacted. They shouted, screaming at each other to operate the battleships and move towards Shi Yan.

At this moment, the change that they could never imagine happened for the second time, which also cut off their chance in just a blink of an eye.

Most of the experts of the Fighting League were gone. However, someone stayed; it was Shi Yan.

He was holding an inky bead. After the flying bird battleships of the Fighting League had escaped, he smiled evilly, flinging the bead. That bead bounced for a while in the void, then fumed out the toxic smokes and clouds it had taken in, which filled the hole it had just created instantly.

The sky above this life star was covered by the thick layer of smokes one more time. The Divine Light's battleships halted, almost hitting the layer of smokes. They were agitated on seeing the clouds closing, as if they had just swallowed flies.

Their hostile eyes were fixed on Shi Yan while their murderous aura shot up into the sky.

Sana and Ju Bo also flew towards him, their faces cold and malicious.

Zi Yao's bold brows furrowed. She moved swiftly, hovering in front of Shi Yan to shield him from the warriors of the Divine Light. "Why are you staying?"

Shi Yan smiled while talking, "I will bring you guys out of here. Don't worry. Don't rush. After Fighting League's battleships go further away, I will make way for you guys."

Sana and Ju Bo were bewildered, suspiciously looking at Shi Yan with bizarre faces.

"You guys know each other?" Sana recognized it.

"He's Shi Yan." Zi Yao smiled, talking calmly. "Before my master accepted me, I was with him. Yeah, we know each other."

Shi Yan chuckled while looking at the crowd of Divine Light warriors. He explained simply, "Without Zi Yao, I wouldn't care whether you guys were dead or alive. I would have left earlier, and you, all of you would have had to die here. No one would escape."

"We have Old Ju here. How can we not be able to run away?" Sana didn't buy it.

"Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, and Feng Yan, the four of them had joined hands, but they couldn't get rid of this kind of toxic smoke. If he's confident that he's stronger than the four of them, perhaps he can try." Shi Yan smiled and explained.

Ju Bo's face changed. He waved his hand, signaling Sana not to talk much. "I heard that when the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Fighting League were confined inside the space passage, you had helped them out? Was it the same toxic smoke like what we have now?"

"Much intense than this time. At that time, we had encountered the Departed Spirit Jellyfish in the space passage. It was the generator of the toxic smoke. The smoke we have in this place are the poisons the Dark Shadow Clan had collected from the jellyfish. However, it's enough to kill all of you," Shi Yan was still calm.

Ju Bo looked at him. Pondering for a while, he said all of a sudden. "Calm down, all of you. Give our little buddy more time."

He knew Shi Yan had stayed here because of Zi Yao. If he just brushed the dust off his butt and left, thousands of elite warriors of the Divine Light would have to bury their bodies here. No one would escape alive for sure.

Ju Bo knew what to do.

Sana furrowed his brows, but he didn't intervene. He kept silent while his look shifted from Shi Yan to Zi Yao and he contemplated.

"Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!"

All of a sudden, something rang urgently inside Zi Yao's sleeves. She was surprised, taking out an amethyst Sound Stone. She frowned, using her soul to sense.

Her charming face changed dramatically, screaming. "The important mines that we've claimed have the same situation. The toxic clouds have trapped them all! Dark Shadow Clan didn't only leave the poisons here. All the other important lands with precious materials have the same restriction!"

"Not good!" Ju Bo and Sana screamed urgently.

There were three thousand elite warriors of the Divine Light that came to Shadow Ghostly Prison this time. They were all at the King God Realm, Original God Realm, and Ethereal God Realm. They were the pillars that the Divine Light had trained for years.

This group was the main force to compete for the Divine Light. However, at this moment, all of them were confined by the toxic smoke. If this force of three thousand warriors were exterminated,

the Divine Light would bear a significant loss that would even damage their root. Let alone fighting with Fighting League, they wouldn't even retain their benefits.

Zi Yao, Ju Bo, and Sana were restless from anxiety.

At this moment, this life star was still sealed by the toxic clouds, and Shi Yan was the only one who could resolve this danger. He looked calm and relaxed, as if he weren't hurried at all, earning time for the Fighting League to run away.

Ju Bo took a deep breath, his face solemn. "Shi Yan, little brother, if you help us leave this place and solve the fatal problems in the other areas, I assure you that we will retreat from the Shadow Ghostly Prison. We won't compete for any benefit with the Fighting League. The Divine Light will appreciate your favor and will owe you a lot."

"After you get out of here, you won't chase after the Windstorm War Department anymore?" Shi Yan looked relaxed, teasing the other.

As far as Shi Yan was concerned, he didn't care whether the Divine Light warriors died or how many of them died. He just needed Zi Yao to be safe. He wasn't interested in the dispute between the Divine Light and the Fighting League either. It was the competition between Feng Han and the Master of the Divine Light. Although it was related to Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan, Shi Yan didn't have even a bit of interest.

Ju Bo was worried. He knew Shi Yan wasn't interested in this, so he couldn't help but throw Zi Yao a glance, asking her to help.

"Shi Yan, please help us. Hurry up. We must leave here. Please help us solve those problems." Zi Yao said with a bitter face. "I assure you I won't fight with Xia Xin Yan. And, our Divine Light's a member of the Agate Star Area. If we lose so many members, when the God Clan invades us, it will be a disadvantage for the entire Agate Star Area."

She knew of Shi Yan's grudges against the God Clan. From the God Vanishing Land to here, she had witnessed the ruthlessness and conspiracy of the God Clan.

"I believe you then," Shi Yan chuckled, "Move. I'm going to make a passage for you guys."

Zi Yao was astounded. She then beamed an enchanting smile, her face seeming like a blossoming flower.

She hadn't expected that Shi Yan would agree that easily. He didn't even bargain, which proved that his trust in her hadn't changed. He didn't change even when their status and time had changed.

She didn't know that Shi Yan was touched when she screamed worriedly for him while he was soaring into the toxic clouds. With this premise, of course, Shi Yan wouldn't ignore her request for help. At the same time, he was objective in dealing with the Divine Light. He wouldn't attack the Divine Light because of Xia Xin Yan.

"Thank you," Ju Bo sighed in relief.

Shi Yan didn't look at him, just throwing the Poison-dipped Cold Bead out. The pure black bead hovered in the toxic clouds and began sucking the poisonous smokes like a powerful whale.

After several minutes, the toxic smokes covering the entire life star was drawn into the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. Not even a single thread remained.

That bead became a little colder, and the magical energy rippling in there had become fiercer.

Chapter 1073: Old friends

Standing on the purple crystal battleship, Shi Yan traveled rapidly between the important mineral stars in Shadow Ghostly Prison.

The life stars and mineral stars with rich natural resources that the Dark Shadow Clan had left behind weren't many, and the distances between them weren't too far. This purple crystal battleship was made by the Potion and Tool Pavilion, which was much better than the one Zi Yao had in the Raging Flame Star Area. It could move agilely and swiftly.

They went to each life star and mineral star where the poisonous smoke was confining the Divine Light warriors.

Whenever the purple crystal battleships appeared, Shi Yan would descend and solve their problems.

The Poison-dipped Cold Bead hovered in the sky and drew all the toxic smoke like a whale taking in water. It became colder and blacker, feeling so cold in Shi Yan's hand while releasing some kind of cold-natured soul energy.

His thought flickered, and the Poison-dipped Cold Bead disappeared, reappearing in the Ethereal Extent in his soul altar, then hovered there like a dark sun which rippled out a cold natured soul energy.

This bead was the essence of the soul of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It was imprinted by the blood mark in his host soul. At the same time, it had a wisp of Shi Yan's soul, which helped him control the bead with his thought.

When the bead fell into his Ethereal Extent, it turned into a black light dot, releasing the cold Yin soul energy. Shi Yan felt his soul get calm and relaxed. He could feel the negative moods in his soul getting suppressed, which cheered him up.

His acupuncture points had gathered a lot of Essence Qi of the dead warriors. It had the aura of despair, resentment, bloodlust, and ruthlessness, which had affected his mind and will, eroding his emotions to the point where he could lose his mind.

The Poison-dipped Cold Bead fell into his Ethereal Extent and became the tranquilizer of his Ethereal Extent, which would block off the negative emotions from his acupuncture points. Thus, he didn't receive a counter effect.

He suddenly remembered what Xuan Fei had told him: The Poison-dipped Cold Bead had the magical power to stabilize the soul and prevent a situation of bedevilment. It was most suitable for the warriors with heaven flames.

After sensing for a while, Shi Yan smiled happily. He knew that Xuan Fei didn't lie to him. The Poison-dipped Cold Bead could really stabilize his soul, making it crystal clear and without any dregs.

Of course, the functions of the Poison-dipped Cold Bead weren't to stabilize the soul and prevent bedevilment. It could release the toxic smokes it had absorbed. The bead was like a particular container, such that Shi Yan could put things in and take them out later.

Shi Yan knew how terrifying the poisonous smoke from the Poison-dipped Cold Bead were. He believed that if he released the toxic vapors inside the bead in a war, the lethality would be unbearable.

According to Yu Shan, the Poison-dipped Cold Bead did have other abilities. However, she didn't know clearly enough to tell him about them.

Shi Yan had traveled through the big mineral stars and life stars with his Poison-dipped Cold Bead on the purple crystal battleship like a shuttle. He absorbed the toxic smoke and clouds there to rescue the Divine Light warriors.

Sana, Yi Zao, and Ju Bo followed him. Seeing the mineral stars and life stars covered by toxic smokes, they all grimaced.

"The Dark Shadow Clan is so evil!" Zi Yao had an icy-cold face.

Sana and Ju Bo slightly nodded. Their faces were stern, sighing inwardly.

They understood clearly that if Shi Yan didn't help them this time, more than three thousand elite warriors of the Divine Light who came to Shadow Ghostly Prison would have been killed by the toxic smoke and clouds. Even the two of them couldn't have escaped from death.

The Dark Shadow Clan had gone away from the Shadow Ghostly Prison, but they had left such evil restrictions. If they brought the army of the God Clan to Agate Star Area, the result would be unimaginable.

"There's something you don't know." On the purple crystal battleship that was flying towards the last area where poisonous smokes and clouds confined their members, Shi Yan frowned while talking indifferently, "The bead I got here comes from an evil, venomous creature, called the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. If we don't have an expert at the Incipient God Realm who also has the heaven flame from the Origin, if it goes into any star area, it will drown that star area into a catastrophe. All people, warriors, spiritual beasts, and animals will be massacred all..."

Pausing for a while, Shi Yan took a deep breath, his face stern. "The Poison-dipped Cold Bead... it stayed in the space passage. It's the trap the Dark Shadow Clan and the God Clan had left. If they couldn't invade the Agate Star Area, they would release the Poison-dipped Cold Bead to kill all creatures in Agate Star Area!"

"It's too malicious!" Sana and Ju Bo shouted.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes had a gleam of fear. She was so frightened, smacking her tongue discreetly.

That malignant, inhumane method to exterminate the entire star area wasn't something the forces in the Agate Star Area could heartlessly do, despite the wars they sometimes had. And, they couldn't even imagine that the God Clan and Dark Shadow Clan could prepare such a wicked deed.

"You guys... resolved it?" Ju Bo was baffled.

"Right. We were lucky enough to invite an Incipient God Realm expert from another star area. She had the heaven flames, so she refined the Departed Spirit Jellyfish and left this Poison-dipped Cold Bead," said Shi Yan calmly.

Ju Bo, Sana, Zi Yao, and the warriors of the Divine Light around had their eyes brightened. When they looked at Shi Yan now, they had respect in their eyes.

He had the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. If he weren't the key person, how could he get the bead? Thinking about the primary factor named Shi Yan that the Second Elder Gu He had mentioned, the majority of warriors of the Divine Light could recognize his role in this event...

"Seems like all the forces of the clans around the Agate Star Area have to thank you," Ju Bo said in a low-pitched voice.

Many warriors of the Divine Light nodded.

Shi Yan was still natural and calm. "You have to be grateful to many people. Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Fighting League, and Potion and Tool Pavilion had joined that battle. Without their participation, the space passage wouldn't have been closed, and the great army of the God Clan would have come shortly after."

While frowning, he said, "The official force of the God Clan is several times stronger than the Dark Shadow Clan's forces. If your Blood Lance Fleet has the manpower which is five times bigger than now, you can deal with a troop of the God Clan's corps. Don't think I'm exaggerating. I'm talking about them modestly.

According to the Incipient God Realm expert from the Fiery Rain Star Area who used to fight with the God Clan, ten troops of ours could be relatively compared to one troop of the God Clan. I hope you can see the difference between our forces."

Hearing him, many warriors of the Divine Light were frightened as they gawked in fear.

"Are they that mighty?" Zi Yao looked bitter, sighing. "I had met a member of the God Clan. He was unusually strong, such that I'm still frightened until now. I believe the God Clan's corps are quite intimidating. Otherwise, there are countless clans in this immense universe, so why has the God Clan always dominated the vast area?"

Sana and Ju Bo kept silent, their faces solemn.

They needed to digest what Shi Yan had just told them. They didn't talk more and just frowned, sinking in their thoughts.

Two days later, the purple crystal battleship landed on a life star which looked like the beautiful full moon. The atmosphere of this star also was covered with toxic smoke and clouds. Shi Yan plunged down, using the Poison-dipped Cold Bead to collect all of the extreme toxins.

Right after that, the purple crystal battleship slowly landed on the magnificent surface of the planet. Blue oceans stretched over the planet with many scattered islands. Some islets were sparkling like gems in the middle of the sea, embellishing it with the dreamy decorations.

"I'm taking you to meet someone." Zi Yao smiled gently. "Before I departed to the divine crystal lode, I passed by this star. Come with me."

Shi Yan was surprised. He nodded immediately.

An amethyst war chariot roared, flying out of the massive battleship. Zi Yao waved at Shi Yan. After he hopped on, the

amethyst war chariot flew towards a small, gourd-shaped island. The war chariot moved like an express shuttle at breakneck speed.

Shortly after, the war chariot hovered above the gourd-shaped island and landed. As soon as they landed, Zi Yao pitched her voice to call gently. "Hello! Come see who's just arrived!"

This island wasn't so big. It was like a tropical island with hot and humid jungles. Situated in the middle of the island were some small mountains, which weren't really tall.

The mountains were green, with luxuriant trees and foliage. By the foot of the mountains, they could see many precious gemstones sparkling. From a distance, they knew that the source of light of this island was those gemstones, which were fulgent in many colors. However, since they didn't have energy, warriors weren't interested in collecting them.

Some mountain flanks had a few delicate caves where they could see people moving. Most of them were warriors of the Divine Light.

Some figures suddenly stormed out of a cave and lifted their faces to watch the sky. Seeing Shi Yan from a distance, all of them were filled with joy.

Shi Yan looked shocked, then smile stretched across his face. "Why are you here?"

They were Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Rou, and Ka Fu, the ones who should be in the Raging Flame Star Area. Seeing them in this star area, Shi Yan was thrilled.

When they were still in the Grace Mainland, Bao Ao and Jie Jie had treated him well. When they struggled to get rid of the place and enter the Raging Flame Star Area, they were captured by the Underworld League. They were the true comrades who had undergone hardships together.

Thus, Shi Yan hadn't regretted giving away the star map to

rescue Bao Ao and Jie Ji trapped inside the Soul Sucking Demonic Flower. After they were recovered, Ka Tuo had arranged his brother Ka Fu to bring them out of the Heaven Punishment City, and hide them in some dead star area.

He thought that it would be hard to meet them again. But now, in Shadow Ghostly Prison of Agate Star Area, they were reunited.

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and Bo Rou were at the King God Realm. Bao Ao and Jie Jie had reached the Third Sky of King God Realm, while Bo Rou was at the Second Sky of King God Realm. Seeing Shi Yan, they were so excited, talking to him. "It's because of Her Highness, Princess Zi Yao."

Shi Yan was surprised. He turned to Zi Yao, who was smiling next to him. "You did return to the Raging Flame Star Area?"

"Yeah, I went home once." Zi Yao didn't conceal, answering him with ease. "The Divine Light isn't far from the space hub of Shadow Ghostly Prison. While cultivating in Divine Light, I visited that area. I spent several years to find the space slit leading to the Raging Flame Star Area. I did return there with some precursors of my force."

Chapter 1074: The dream they once had

More than thirty years ago, Zi Yao left the Broken Star Field to enter the territory of the Divine Light. She had accepted the Master of the Divine Light her teacher. Since then, she had ascetically cultivated the Light power Upanishad.

Divine Light wasn't within the area of the Shadow Ghostly Prison, but it wasn't far from this area either. It was especially close to the space hub where space passages were congregated. This area was mystical, with rumors that the Divine Light would cross this place from time to time.

The Divine Light's Master didn't want Zi Yao to cultivate all the time. She asked Zi Yao to come to the space hub to see if she could get lucky and catch a glimpse of outer space divine light. If she could take it in, her realm would leap up.

Some precursors of the Divine Light had escorted Zi Yao to the area with the space slits. She had wandered there for a long time, but couldn't catch the outer space divine light. However, she found a narrow space slit that was connected to the Raging Flame Star Area. With the help of the Divine Light's experts, they moved through the space passage and arrived in the dead star area of the Raging Flame Star Area.

In that area, Zi Yao found a lot of traces of the outer space pirates, as well as Ka Fu's whereabouts.

She knew Shi Yan had a relationship with Ka Fu, Bao Ao, and the others. She was one of the vanguards entering the Agate Star Area with Shi Yan. She knew Ka Tuo and Shi Yan were always together. Thus, she came to talk to Ka Fu, telling him that his brother was in the Agate Star Area, and she wanted to take him there.

Ka Fu, of course, couldn't be happier. After he had arranged everything, he took Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Rou, and some strong pirates to follow Zi Yao to Agate Star Area.

Listening to Zi Yao, Shi Yan felt his eyes itch, and his heart feel warm.

He suddenly recognized that while he didn't know anything, this woman had done many meaningful things for him. He remembered things he had undergone those years and became baffled.

"Shi Yan, you didn't fail us," Bao Ao appraised with emotion. Jie Ji and Bo Rou were excited as well. Jie Ji stepped forward to pat Shi Yan's shoulder. "Excellent!"

Shi Yan was bewildered, asking, "What's excellent?"

"You've taken the fellows of our Demon Clan from the Grace Mainland. You gave them a way of hope. It's what we had departed for that year. We wanted to find a way out for our fellows. You've done it for us. You didn't fail us."

Bao Ao's eyes had flames, his voice strong and echoing.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were the leaders of Demon Clan. They had soon recognized the exhaustion of energy in the Grace Mainland, and had struggled to find a way to survive for their fellows. They had even left the Grace Mainland for this reason.

After that, they arrived in the Raging Flame Star Area, where they had their knowledge widened when they saw the wealth of the medium-level star area. At that time, they recognized how weak they were at the Peak of True God Realm. They used to be the potion and mining slaves. They struggled to live for a long time. Eventually, they found the dream they once had seeming to drift further and further away from them.

They had given up one or two times. However, shame stayed forever in their hearts as they couldn't bring hope for their fellows.

But it was until they met Shi Yan again. Shi Yan had used the star map to exchange for their rescue while they were trapped inside the demonic flower. After that, they were safe and recovered in a

hidden area somewhere in the Land of God Punishment. Slowly, hope dawned back on them.

Dozens of years later, when Zi Yao brought some Ethereal God Realm experts of the Divine Light and found them here, they were shocked. Now they knew that the Raging Flame Star wasn't a high-level star area. Only the star areas with Incipient God Realm experts could be deemed the high-level star areas. After that, Zi Yao told them one thing.

They knew Shi Yan had completed the dream they could never fulfill. Shi Yan had brought the hope of a new life to their fellows in the Grace Mainland. They were so grateful to him.

"When we had just visited the Grace Mainland, we made the vow that we must find a life star to prepare a new home for our fellows." Jie Ji looked at Shi Yan, his face holding a sincere and touched smile. "Too bad our capacity was limited, so we couldn't do that. But, you helped us. Even if we have to die now, we will die with a smile."

The Demon fellows in the Grace Mainland were their families, relatives, friends, and subordinates. They were worth their care, and they would do everything to continue their bloodline.

"They live well and safely now. Don't worry." Gazing at them, Shi Yan smiled happily. "After I am done with my business here, I will create a formation that can help transport you guys there to live with them. You will... meet someone very close to you on that planet."

Bao Ao, Jie Jie, and Bo Rou were thrilled.

...

In another area of the immense ocean, Sana and Ju Bo wore a solemn face, standing on the purple crystal battleship.

"Shi Yan has fulfilled his promise of solving our problems. What should we do now?" Ju Bo frowned while looking at Sana. "You're

in charge of this operation. I'm just a protector. You tell me."

Sana contemplated for a while and then said, "As we've promised, Divine Light will leave the Shadow Ghostly Prison."

"Are you willing to leave?" Ju Bo was surprised as he knew Sana wasn't the sort of man who would yield before he could get what he wanted. However, this time, he just simply gave it up like that. Ju Bo was quite astounded.

"I'm a man of my word." Sana frowned. "That man and my sister... have a close relationship. If we don't do what we have promised, it will be difficult for her as well."

"Little Yao and that guy don't have a simple friendship, you know," said Ju Bo meaningfully.

Sana trembled shortly, his face gloomy. "I know. But, there's something we can't force to get."

"Well, that kid is only at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm at this moment. With your power and tricks, you have many ways to kill him. I believe you can do it discreetly," said Ju Bo with a smile.

Sana's face was colder, looking at him indifferently. "Old Ju, did you take your meds today? If I wanted to compete for my sister with him, would I need to use such a low trick?"

Ju Bo laughed cheerily and nodded. "Sana, you're truly Sana. You won't let me down. Right, I was worried that you would let jealousy consume you. I'm not worried anymore. Alright, we'll do as we have promised. We will give them the territories we've claimed."

Sana was bewildered. But then, he gathered himself together and burst out laughing. "I will respect my sister's opinions, no matter what she chooses. I, Sana, am always sane."

Ju Bo nodded smilingly. "As Divine Light has you in its structure, even without the benefits from the Shadow Ghostly Prison, we will grow steadily."

...

Fighting Star...

Feng Han was standing on a high mountain with a Sound Stone in his hand, his face astounded.

"Divine Light gave it up? It... What happened?" He turned to Qi Ze while frowning. "Is it a conspiracy?"

"Ghost knows," Qi Ze seemed not mind it much. "Miao Rong sent me the message, saying that they have gathered with Xin Yan's Windstorm War Department. So, we don't need to hand the Divine Light the letter you wrote. Moreover, we also received the information that the Divine Light's forces have left the life stars and mineral stars they had claimed before."

"I'm sure something had happened." Feng Han said with a cold face. "Contact Miao Rong and Xin Yan. I want to know what happened."

"I'm on it."

...

In the dark star sea of Shadow Ghostly Prison, many battleships were hovering by a group of slender battleships above a crescent moon-shaped life star. This star was covered with a blue ocean, where they could see many small, dazzling islands that decorated this planet, making it a dreamy scene.

"So beautiful," Xia Xin Yan observed from her battleship, her beautiful eyes sparkling.

Standing by her was Miao Rong from the Water Moon War Department of Fighting League. "This life star produces a lot of spiritual herbs and grasses. The Dark Shadow Clan had controlled this place strictly. Among the important areas we want to claim, this place ranks right behind the planet with the divine crystal lode.

Xia Xin Yan smiled gently. "The Divine Light's warriors are in there. If they don't retreat, we can't take this place."

Miao Rong knitted his brows, talking. "I still don't know why the Divine Light suddenly gave it up. The Fighting Star has asked me several times. I don't know what to answer them. The Divine Light had come fiercely, and they retreated even faster. I wonder if they have some internal problems."

Xia Xin Yan put on a cold and indifferent face. She pondered for a while and then said, "We don't know why they retreated, but we can go there and ask."

Miao Rong discolored in fright. "You want to go there?"

The soldiers of the Water Moon Department and Xia Xin Yan's department numbered just over one thousand. Compared to three thousand warriors of the Divine Light, they were quite few.

The Divine Light had sent here all of the elite warriors, which weren't weaker than them. If they had to engage in a fight, Xia Xin Yan's side would fall into a disadvantageous situation.

Today, warriors of the Divine Light who entered the Shadow Ghostly Prison were all gathering in here. If they got down there and provoked the Divine Light's warriors, it would not be a good move.

Miao Rong couldn't understand a thing.

"We just use a war chariot to get there." Xia Xin Yan called, and a crystal jade phoenix war chariot emerged. She hopped on and waved at Miao Rong. "You and I will go there to show our goodwill."

Miao Rong was a little hesitant.

"You are at the Incipient God Realm. What is there to be worried then?" Xia Xin Yan said gently.

"I'm worried about you." Miao Rong forced a smile. "I can escape

simply. But, you can't do that. Your realm isn't high enough. If they confine you for the second time, we will fall into a tough position again. Don't you think so?"

"No, it won't turn like that this time." Xia Xin Yan smiled, her beautiful eyes piercing through the layers of clouds. She mumbled. "I'm sure he has established an agreement with the Divine Light. Otherwise, the Divine Light won't act that way..."

"Forget it. I will go with you to see what troubles we will meet." Miao Rong was reluctant, but he jumped onto the war chariot like a furious water current.

The lithe phoenix war chariot glided, dancing in the sky while piercing through layers of clouds. Slowly, it lowered towards the blue ocean. They saw many Divine Light's battleships anchored by the islands in the sea. Warriors of the Divine Light were looking at the sky, their faces gingerly.

"I want to see your leader." Xia Xin Yan called out gently while she was still in the sky. The sound waves of her voice echoed, expanding further.

"Xia mei-mei, over here." An enchanting voice that could even reach people's bones came from the gourd-shaped island in the middle of the ocean. The female voice sounded lazy and soft, as if she was sunbathing.

Xia Xin Yan arched her brows, but she didn't recognize it. Her beautiful eyes held an unclear meaning. Her phoenix war chariot suddenly hissed ear-piercingly as it sped up, which made Miao Rong lose his balance and almost fall off. He immediately looked at her with an odd face, not knowing what had happened.

Chapter 1075: A competition of envy

Miao Rong was quite suspicious.

This time, the Divine Light had made a large-scale invasion. While the Fighting League hadn't noticed, they had forcefully claimed many important areas which used to belong to the Dark Shadow Clan. It was like a sharp thorn thrusting towards the Fighting League's throat, which gave Feng Han a big headache.

When Feng Han was ready to deploy his force, he got the news from the Divine Light: They had kept Xia Xin Yan as a hostage!

Thus, Feng Han had to stop his plan of a fight, and begrudgingly agreed with the strict conditions the Divine Light had given. He didn't deploy his forces, but wrote a letter of agreement, which he asked Miao Rong to hand to the other in exchange for Xia Xin Yan.

Miao Rong thought that it was a humiliation, which he had prepared himself to bear.

However, when he arrived there with his Water Moon War Department, Xia Xin Yan and her Windstorm War Department had escaped their confinements. Moreover, the arrogant experts of the Divine Light were leaving their important areas. They seemed to want to retreat from the Shadow Ghostly Prison soon.

Miao Rong was confused, as he didn't know what was wrong. He had asked Xia Xin Yan, but she didn't give him a convincing answer.

The Fighting League was hurried, wanting to know all the details related to it. So, they continually asked Miao Rong.

Miao Rong knew that Xia Xin Yan had the answer. However, he didn't have the right to ask her. So, he had to keep being skeptical.

The Phoenix war chariot trembled hard. Miao Rong looked at Xia Xin Yan, who acted normal, her eyes lost somewhere. He knew that he would get the answer in a few minutes.

...

On the gourd-shaped island, the breeze was warm, flowing above the sparkling sea. Divine Light's battleships were anchored by the small island, leaving only one magnificent purple crystal battleship lying in the center of the island.

Dozens of Divine Light's warriors were surrounding the purple crystal battleship, situated in the middle of many lush mountains. All of a sudden, Sana and Ju Bo arrived there with Zi Yao, who was wearing a gorgeous purple dress.

At this moment, the three leaders of Divine Light were giving orders to their subordinates.

A hunky young man stood in a corner with the three Demon clansmen, his face cold and calm.

Warriors of Divine Light weren't wary of them. They were talking to each other, while the mesmerizing woman in purple would often throw her glance at the young man over there, her beautiful eyes twinkling.

Swish!

The war chariot slightly trembled. Miao Rong jolted up, frowning at the Divine Light's warriors in the distance.

Sana and Ju Bo were famous warriors of the Divine Light, the commanders of this Shadow Ghostly Prison operation. At first glance, Miao Rong could easily guess their identities.

He looked at the gorgeous woman in purple, his eyes brightening as he nodded inwardly.

That was the new disciple of the Divine Light's Master. She was quite favored, and had an extremely fast cultivation progress. He knew that she was called Zi Yao.

A series of information related to Zi Yao slid through his brain, startling him. He suddenly became bewildered when he found out

that Xia Xin Yan had only looked at Zi Yao and that cold young man since she had arrived on this planet. She didn't even give Sana and Ju Bo a glance.

Since Miao Rong couldn't explain that, he paid more attention.

...

Ju Bo didn't talk more. He rose one hand, making a gesture to stop the Divine Light's warriors from discussing.

He looked at the Phoenix war chariot emerging and chuckled. He waved his hand while talking. "I'm Ju Bo of the Divine Light. You're welcome here to see us off."

See them off?

Miao Ring was bewildered.

Xia Xin Yan furrowed her bold brows as her look shifted from Ju Bo to Zi Yao. Finally, she gazed at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was still natural as he grinned while talking to her. "Divine Light wants to retreat from Shadow Ghostly Prison. They will leave soon."

Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan were astounded. They finally confirmed that the Divine Light would leave for sure, which made them even more bewildered.

Ju Bo looked at Shi Yan, giving the compliment. "What we agreed about with Shi Yan, we will never change. After we're done with the preparations for him, we will leave shortly. We won't linger in Shadow Ghostly Prison anymore."

Sana snorted, his face indifferent. He seemed not willing at all.

Zi Yao wore a charming smile while talking to Xia Xin Yan gently. "It's perfect not to cause any dispute with Xia mei-mei. Mei-mei, if you have time, come to be our guest in Divine Light's territory. Please don't keep in mind any previous provocation of ours."

Xia Xin Yan just frowned, but didn't answer.

Miao Rong was dumbstruck like a wooden chicken. He looked at the lean young man, and finally knew that he was Shi Yan, the one they had talked about.

However, this man was only at the Ethereal God Realm. What kind of a trick had he conjured to make the Divine Light leave Shadow Ghostly Prison? And why did he have to help the Fighting League?

Doubts grew in Miao Rong's mind.

"I want to create a Teleportation Formation. They will help me gather some necessary materials. That's why I'm waiting here." Shi Yan thought for a while, and realized that he should clarify everything with Xia Xin Yan.

With his realm and cultivation base, it wasn't really hard to create the Child Formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation. He believed that he could do that.

However, he didn't have the materials to build a space Teleportation Formation. When he discussed with Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and Bo Rou, he told them about it. He didn't expect that Zi Yao would help him collect all of the required materials.

However, he was even more surprised when Ju Bo and Sana didn't oppose this. They expressed that they wanted to thank him because he had rescued the warriors of the Divine Light.

He couldn't deny this, and he didn't try to deny anyway. He just let Divine Light and Zi Yao take care of the preparations.

It would take a lot of materials to build the space Teleportation Formation. The battleships of the Divine Light in this area didn't have enough materials. Thus, Zi Yao and Ju Bo had ordered their subordinate to gather them. They knew that they could collect all of them in a short while.

The Divine Light and the Potion and Tool Pavilion had a close

relationship. The materials Ai Fu had piled up in Broken Star Field were from the Divine Light. And, they even had a way to buy and sell the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation to Ai Fu.

Shi Yan didn't doubt the Divine Light's capacity. Also, he believed in Zi Yao. Thus, he had been waiting on this gourd-shape island.

"Gathering forging materials?" Xia Xin Yan was surprised for a while. She reacted immediately, laughing. "Ah, turns out you're busy with this. When we came back from the space passage, you had told me that, so I had arranged it for you."

Shi Yan was surprised.

Miao Rong slightly frowned while talking. "You sent your request to the League, asking us to contact the Potion and Tool Pavilion to collect the materials for him?"

Xia Xin Yan smiled naturally, then nodded and talked to Shi Yan. "You don't need to stay here anymore. We should go to the Fighting Star. I believe that the materials required are already there. You can do it right away without waiting here."

Shi Yan scratched his head as he felt awkward.

"It takes five days max, and the materials we have ordered will be delivered." Zi Yao smiled charmingly. "Can you wait for five days more? It will take half a month to travel to the Fighting League. You don't need to waste a lot of time, right? Just wait here for five days more. What do you say?"

"You want to go to the Fighting League, anyway. When you get there, the materials will be awaiting you already. You can do what you want. Why would you waste more time here?" Xia Xin Yan pitched her voice.

The two peerlessly beautiful women were trying to show their colors. With soft voices and yearning eyes, they were asking him to agree with their suggestions.

The Divine Light's warriors were baffled, and Miao Rong was also dumbstruck.

No matter it was Xia Xin Yan or Zi Yao, they were both extreme beauties who were really rare in this world. Both their makings and glamor were perfect. They also held a high position in the Fighting League and Divine Light respectively.

Ordinary people would never have a chance to get in touch them. But today, they were competing for a man. As they were trying to gain his attention, it baffled all the warriors on the scene.

Many warriors the Divine Light had yearning, jealous, admiring, and even angry facial expressions. Some of them even roared in their minds, as they had considered Zi Yao as their perfect Goddess, the dream of their lives. Today, their Goddess and another extremely exquisite woman were waiting for a man's decision. This made them almost lose their sanity.

Sana felt like a big failure. He didn't have any confidence or arrogance in his eyes anymore. He looked at Zi Yao, who was gingerly, and then Xia Xin Yan, who was yearning, then sighed inwardly.

Miao Rong frowned deeply. The light in his eyes was like a burning torch as he gazed at Shi Yan and felt aghast.

He had never heard of the name Shi Yan. He knew nothing about this man who had emerged from nowhere. But, he knew how much Feng Han had favored Xia Xin Yan. He also knew Xia Xin Yan's strange profile. At the same time, he knew of Zi Yao's noble position in the Divine Light.

What made this young man deserve the two women's favors?

Miao Rong gradually became absorbed in his thoughts.

"I've been waiting for several days, and it will just take five days more." As people were gazing at him, Shi Yan's face was indifferent while he spoke, "Five days later, after we've collected the

materials, I will leave with you to the Fighting Star. I think I can finish the Teleport Formation on the way. It will be the best solution for me."

The Fighting Star was the headquarters of the Fighting League, which situated in the dangerous center of the Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was heavily guarded in a special location.

Shi Yan had agreed to Yu Shan from the Fiery Rain Star Area that he would assign Leona to train a troop of her force. Due to the unique location of the Fighting League in Shadow Ghostly Prison, it was his top choice.

His answer gained the approval from both the two beauties. They smiled, and nothing in this sea area could compare to their glamor.

"Alright. We will wait for five days more." Xia Xin Yan felt at ease. She nodded to Miao Rong, asking him to wait here as well.

As long as Shi Yan agreed to go to the Fighting Star with her, she wouldn't nag him about any other matter. She felt happy with his decision.

Zi Yao knew that Xia Xin Yan still ranked first in Shi Yan's heart. She wasn't foolish to make things tenser. As Shi Yan had agreed to stay five days more in this place, she thought that it was a noticeable change already. She believed that she could imprint her image into his heart little by little over time. Eventually, she would be able to compete with Xia Xin Yan directly.

"This area doesn't look bad. Shi Yan, take me around for seeing the sights, will you?" Xia Xin Yan suddenly asked with her sweet voice.

"I've taken him for a walk once. If you don't mind, we will go together. What do you say?" Shi Yan hadn't agreed when Zi Yao took the chance to intervene. She stretched her body like a lazy cat, her face natural and calm. "I'm excited to talk more with Xia mei-mei."

"Cough! Cough! You two go for a walk. I want to prepare and meditate for a while." Shi Yan gave out some dry coughs and expressed his opinion.

The two pairs of pretty eyes shot at him with some meaning.

"I'm going to seclude and cultivate!" Shi Yan said placidly, then flew out all of a sudden and disappeared into a cave on the mountain of the island.

Chapter 1076: Three flames unite

The Fountainhead of power Upanishads...

Inside a spacious area of Fire power Upanishads which looked like a vast sea, flames were dancing and running as if they had life. Sometimes, they draw beautiful curves in the air with brilliant light.

Each magical flame was releasing its best mysterious power. Warriors who concentrated their minds to study with the soul could understand all the changes of those flames and comprehend the power of Fire, then absorb it into their souls to strengthen their Fire power Upanishads.

Two souls were floating in the middle of the sea of fire. One of them looked like a dazzling fireball, with a fierce soul energy magnetic field.

Its magnetic field seemed to synchronize with countless flames in this area of Fires of Upanishads. It acted as if it had understood the mysteries of those flames. At the same time, the flames around it started to twist and change, turning into the brilliant and yet exquisite lines of some drawings. They seemed to be the particular shapes of the fire fairies.

The three soul energy fluctuations of the flames with similar auras were generated from the fireball, slowly condensing into one beam, thinning and stretching...

Two graceful figures appeared, hovering in front of the Fire power Upanishads area.

Yu Shan looked beautiful with her generous curves, her face mature and charming. She looked struck when she saw the soul fireball. "He's uniting three heaven flames of the Origin that have similar auras. It's a real fusion. He's making their auras and energy unite into one..."

Xuan Fei's small face was surprised, screaming. "How's his progress?"

"Almost finished," Yu Shan appraised emotionally, "This man's innate endowment's not ordinary at all. His situation's special and strange. With this progress, he is likely to finish fusing the three flames with the similar auras. At that time, his understanding of the Fire power Upanishad would surpass yours."

Xuan Fei felt dispirited, snorting with disgust.

"You better observe. It will be good for you." Yu Shan told her and then kept silent.

Time flew hurriedly.

After an unknown period of time, the three different auras of that flaming soul had been fused into one, without a leak.

Another soul of his suddenly transformed into Shi Yan's real image. He chuckled, looking at the co-soul with his eyes sparkling strangely.

The co-soul in the form of a brilliant fireball suddenly shrank until it was a thumb-sized flaming bead, hovering in the air.

"You're all here." While smiling, he looked at Yu Shan. "When will you enter the Agate Star Area?"

"I'm here to tell you that they are waiting at the entrance of the space passage. My body's there as well. If you're ready, I'll ask them to get in," Yu Shan explained the situation to him.

"Of course, it's no problem. You just need to guide them to the Agate Star Area. I'll let someone receive you and bring you to the Fighting Star in Shadow Ghostly Prison," said Shi Yan.

"You've just fused with three heaven flames of the Origin, right?" Pausing for a while, Yu Shan asked.

"Yes, I've done it smoothly."

The Earth Flame, Purgatory True Flame, and Vermilion Bird

True Flame had similar auras, and were all peak Yang scorching flames. The fusion of the three flames was smooth, and at this moment, the three heaven flames were now one, and the blazing power of this combination had been increased by several times.

Shi Yan tried, and he found that the fused flame was burning hot beyond his expectations.

"You have ten heaven flames from the same Origin of an ancient continent, and the three heaven flames you just fused are the three easiest flames to combine. However, the next time you want to fuse them, it would be more strenuous." Yu Shan contemplated and then reminded him. "The next time you combine heaven flames, you shouldn't do it rashly. You must do one at a time. Or else, you will meet a big trouble. Sigh, I admire you. You could gather all the heaven flames of the same Origin. I think your attainment in cultivating Fire power Upanishad would surpass us one day..."

Yu Shan's eyes looked complicated and emotional when she said that.

As she was the Grand Master who cultivated Fire power Upanishad with the heaven flames at the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, Shi Yan appreciated her advice a lot, memorizing all that she told him.

"Our soldiers will enter the Agate Star Area soon. You should hurry to send your guide to receive them." Yu Shan frowned as she hesitated. "There's something I wonder if it's related to your Agate Star Area..."

"What's that?" Shi Yan was startled.

"The one who had plotted against your Agate Star Area is the Ascot family of the God Clan, right?" asked Yu Shan.

Shi Yan nodded.

"So, it's possibly related to you guys," Yu Shan pondered for a

while and then said, "I heard that Sloan of the Ascot family is collecting materials to fabricate the Border Breaking Mine. I think it's related to your Agate Star Area and even yourself..."

"I quite don't understand."

"Sloan and Chief Bello of the Dark Shadow Clan call each other brothers. Spot, the God young man that you killed, was the beloved youngest son of Sloan, and a core member of the God Clan. When he died, they could find out the murderer using a special method. Sloan should know that you killed his son by now. The Border Breaking Mine is the most dangerous weapon of the God Clan. It can blast an entire planet, and also break the space barrier. Anyway, it's not easy to fabricate the Border Breaking Mine. It needs a soul altar of an Incipient God Realm expert to be the core. Once the Border Breaking Mine detonates, the soul altar of that expert will explode altogether."

"I heard that Sloan is asking for an imprisoned Incipient God Realm expert to be the core of his Border Breaking Mine. Once he's done with that mine, he can blow off the space barrier between your star area and the Ancient God Star Area in just a blink of an eye. At that time, you guys will have to face the great army of the Ascot family of the God Clan. Especially you... You're Sloan's main target."

Yu Shan talked clearly and evidently.

Shi Yan's face darkened. He knew Yu Shan didn't need to deceive him at this moment. He was sure she was telling the truth.

When the space barrier was sealed, he thought they could be safe for a while. Unexpectedly, the God Clan didn't want to stop their attack there. Their next conspiracy was much bloodier.

"Of course, he needs the Ascot family's approval to get an Incipient God Realm expert as the sacrifice. It takes time to fabricate the Border Breaking Mine. Thus, I think you're safe for a while." Seeing his face darken, Yu Shan couldn't help but console

him. "You still have time to prepare. I suggest you guys should unite all the big clans in your star area. You can't resist with a scattered force. The first time the Fiery Rain Star Area had to deal with the God Clan's invasion, the clans from everywhere were fighting against each other. Some even depended on the God Clan. It was only when they suffered a significant loss that they finally recognized the reality. Eventually, all clans had to unite to resist the God Clan. I want you to recognize your situation in the early stage," Yu Shan kindly advised him.

Shi Yan nodded silently.

Yu Shan didn't talk more and told Xuan Fei to leave this area. Their souls then disappeared shortly.

Shi Yan stayed in the area of Fire power Upanishads alone. He contemplated for a while and then left.

...

At the entrance of the cave sealed with a big rock, the two splendid women were floating quietly. Their beautiful eyes sparkled as they studied the entrance.

Not far from them, Miao Rong, Sana, Ju Bo, and more than ten Divine Light experts were waiting on the war chariots. Those war chariots were filled with exotic cultivating materials. Most of them were crystal-like materials, while a small part was wooden cubes that looked like sparkling jades.

Today wasn't the fifth day. It was the ninth day.

The materials the Divine Light had ordered were delivered on time. They wanted to wake Shi Yan up in this cave. However, when they arrived, they couldn't sense his soul energy fluctuation.

At that time, everybody was frightened. Miao Rong, Sana, and Ju Bo were restlessly anxious. They thought that Shi Yan's soul was exterminated.

Even Zi Yao didn't know what had happened to him. She had

almost dashed into the cave to check his situation. She had never experienced the state when he had entered the fountainhead of power Upanishads.

Only Xia Xin Yan knew about the actual situation. She had stopped them from getting into the cave, so they all waited here in silence.

They were quite skeptical. While waiting, they were filled with confusion.

At the moment Shi Yan's soul, which they thought was lost, returned to his body, everybody instinctively looked at the cave entrance.

At this moment, Miao Rong, Sana, and Ju Bo knew that Shi Yan was more mysterious than what they had thought. They now knew that Shi Yan wasn't an ordinary warrior.

It seemed the Agate Star Area had never had a warrior with the heaven flames who could enter the fountainhead of power Upanishads. Thus, they didn't know that people's soul could enter the mysterious area, which gave the others a feeling that their souls had been exterminated.

"Squeak! Squeak!"

The big rock was removed, and Shi Yan appeared in the entrance of the cave with a cold face. Looking at the group of people waiting for him, he frowned unrecognizably, beaming a smile. "Uh-oh, I got a big welcome formation!"

The others felt embarrassed, and didn't talk much.

"We were so worried about you!" Zi Yao rolled her eyes at him. She exaggeratingly patted her round breasts while screaming, "You had scared me! I couldn't sense your soul aura. I thought something had happened to you. If Xia mei-mei didn't tell us, I would have jumped into the cave to find you. Sigh! Next time, can you notify us before you do that? Do you think it's funny to make

people worried like that?"

She didn't conceal her deep affection for Shi Yan at all.

The Divine Light warriors sighed and shifted anxiously. They cursed Shi Yan for his romantic luck.

"Xin Yan, you should send some Fighting League experts to the space passage we've been before. We need to fetch up a troop of warriors." Shi Yan said with a stern face. "They come from the Fiery Rain Star Area. Yu Shan and Xuan Fei may arrive as well. I agreed with them that I would let Leona help them train their soldiers. First, let's bring them to the Fighting Star."

"This place is much nearer than that planet anyway," Zi Yao intervened.

Shi Yan was baffled for a while. He pondered for a while and then said, "Alright, send someone and bring them here. Hey, did you prepare the materials I've asked?"

"All are delivered."

"Good. I'm going to build the formation here. I must finish it as soon as possible."

Chapter 1077: Build the formation

A peak of a mountain on the gourd-shaped island...

The top of this mountain was flat and smooth like a cut crystal. It looked like someone had used a huge blade to cut it flat. Piling on the cold ground were dozens of different materials, sparkling in different colors. Some of them were icy cold or as warm as jade, while the others were crystal clear and shining.

A young man was frowning, his eyes focused as he stood silently atop the mountain.

Fine space blades flashed on and off in the void as if they were the knives of a wonderfully skilled craftsman. As Shi Yan was moving his fingers, the space blades exquisitely and carefully carved the intricate drawings on the surface of the rigid Empty Fantasy Crystal.

This piece of Empty Fantasy Crystal was around [one mu wide](#). It was crystal clear and fulgent like the best quality jade. However, this piece of jade was covered with hairline cracks, which were curving and expanding to every corner of the crystal. It looked like there were so many invisible hands magically moving those cracks around.

The sharp space blades glided, drawing on the surface of the crystal, creating more hairline cracks while generating the sounds of "skrrreeek."

Boom!

A cluster of scorching red flame emerged in his palm. It floated and bobbed continually like a magical soul, and slowly, it turned into a beautiful curve.

The flame covered the cold, lozenge jades piling around. Half of the jades then melted, and black dregs dripped down. The cold jades were polished afterward. They swooshed in the air, landing

on the slits on the Empty Fantasy Crystal.

The young man had his ten fingers moved continually, drawing beautiful and yet complicated, wonderful formations in the void.

Whenever a new formation appeared, the sharp space blades would move around, carving it on the surface of the Empty Fantasy Crystal. Right after that, the burning flame would refine the cold jades, spiritual rocks, and precious metals. It would grind the materials or melt them down into the flaming fluid, which would be poured onto the formations on the Empty Fantasy Crystal.

The surface of the one-mu wide jade had countless fine cuts which were arranged into beautiful patterns and drawings of dozens of inexplicable formations and star points. The star points were the space nodes that weaved with each other to connect the formations, giving rise to the magical effects of the grand formation.

The dancing flame was like the tentacles of God, pulling more materials to extract the dregs and impurities out of before putting them into the Empty Fantasy Crystal.

As the materials disappeared, the formations on the massive Empty Fantasy Crystal glowed one after another. They seemed to be small-scale star maps with the power of Space Essence. However, ordinary people couldn't grasp it.

War chariots anchored around this mountain where Xia Xin Yan, Zi Yao, Xiao Rong, Sana, and Ju Bo were standing, watching him in silence.

The space blades appeared thicker, and the Empty Fantasy Crystal became even more dazzling. They suddenly saw the space above the mountain shattering. Many energy currents gushed over as if the sky had been ripped apart while the marvelous space energy rippled magically.

The narrow space cracks appeared, making space energy more

turbulent. The sky above the gourd-shaped island looked like a shattered mirror with more space slits. People couldn't move their eyes after taking the first look, and their soul altars surged anxiously.

Under the splintery sky, a young man was focused on using his soul, mind, and Soul Consciousness to carve the formation with space blades on the surface of the Empty Fantasy Formation. He controlled the heaven flames to refine the materials, then used his God power to pour them into the spiritual formation...

Everybody was dumbstruck on watching his performance. Even Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao, the two who understood him the best, were speechless. They just looked at him with astonishment in their eyes.

"He's also good at forging tools. If he spends more efforts to study and master his skills, he can be an Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion," cried Ju Bo after looking at Shi Yan for a while.

Sana nodded and couldn't hide his admiration. "He's worth being the one my sister has chosen. He has his specialties, indeed. I know my sister always had keen eyes.

"He does know blacksmithing?" Miao Rong was standing on another Phoenix war chariot, his face surprised. "What's his profile?"

He didn't know Shi Yan's identity right from the beginning until now.

Xia Xin Yan pulled herself together, turning her head to look at him, then gave him a slight smile. "Hmm, how can I say that? He's the one who resolved the danger of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Windstorm War Department. Without him, the Dark Shadow Clan and the God Clan would have invaded us."

Miao Rong was shaken. He couldn't believe what he had just

heard.

Of course, he knew what happened inside that space passage. He knew Great Elder Zuo Lou of the Potion and Tool Pavilion had cooperated with the Dark Shadow Clan to bring the God Clan to this star area.

Being the commander of the Water Moon War Department of the Fighting League, Miao Rong had met a lot of warriors from other star areas coming through the space passages to get here. From them, he knew of the so-called God Clan. He was really afraid of that race.

But, the Dark Shadow Clan had retreated all of a sudden, and the space passage was now blocked. He also knew something through the channels of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. However, he had thought that it was because of the cooperation of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, Potion and Tool Pavilion, and the Windstorm War Department. He never thought that they had a young man who had held such a crucial role.

At this moment, Xia Xin Yan told him what had actually happened, which made him baffled. It was the first time he considered Shi Yan's abilities.

"What about the warriors we had sent to fetch the others?" Xia Xin Yan continued to ask.

"I think they've almost arrived." Miao Rong answered. "Are the warriors from the Fiery Rain Star Area the corps that need to be trained? Why do they have such request?"

"That's because you have never seen how powerful Leona is." Xia Xin Yan smiled. "Let alone the Fiery Rain Star Area, Monster Clan, and Demon Clan all want her to train their legions. If it's possible, I also want to let her whip my Windstorm War Department."

"She's even better than you?" Miao Rong arched his brows, feeling astounded.

"Me?" Xia Xin Yan mocked herself, telling the truth. "If we had two corps with the same competence to lead, I think I won't have even a slight bit of power to deal with her corps. Within one hour, she could destroy us all."

Miao Rong discolored in fear.

"Leona... is from Shi Yan's team. She only listens to Shi Yan." Xia Xin Yan smiled happily.

"What's the relationship... between you and him?" Miao Rong asked about his biggest suspicion.

Xia Xin Yan blushed, biting her full lower lip. Miao Rong kept silent, as he had gotten his answer.

...

Shi Yan concentrated wholeheartedly on the flat peak of the mountain, as his soul altar spun silently.

The space abilities were applied to draw the formation in the void, then carve the lines on the surface of the Empty Fantasy Crystal. Shi Yan's co-soul could urge the heaven flames and arrange the materials precisely and timely on their spots on the Empty Fantasy Crystal.

As the spiritual formations appeared, they glowed. Shi Yan knew the Child Formation of the Mother and Child Sky Linking Formation would be completed soon.

As he had cultivated Space power Upanishad, he had studied the Mother and Child Sky Linking Sky Formation for a long time. He understood about its mysteries. As his realm improved, he gained a new cognition of this formation, and could grasp its essence now.

Today, with abundant materials, he had tried and built the Child Formation. Although it was a little difficult, he slowly knew that he wasn't so far from the day of completion.

While refining the formation, his soul was calm and peaceful.

When he urged his Space power Upanishad, the abilities he had mastered were released, which benefited his improvement of his realm the most.

His soul shivered, and a sharp space blade stopped suddenly. A flame moved out of a crack on the Empty Fantasy Crystal, and at the cross section of the two slits, the last space node emerged.

Boom!

The intense and blinding light bloomed. The Empty Fantasy Crystal resounded cracking noises crunchily as though it was a blooming flower. Afterward, an octagonal platform emerged in the center of the crystal. It had countless dense and complex lines of different patterns and drawings.

The strong and dizzy light flashed. After a short while, it disappeared into the spots by the edge of the formation. Shi Yan exhaled, while divine crystals shot out of his ring, falling on the designated concave spots. After several thousand divine crystals were put into their spots, the Child Formation suddenly had strange space ripples expanding.

The onlookers suddenly felt the space around them ripple, and couldn't help but gawk at Shi Yan's.

"It works." Shi Yan said weakly. He sent his Soul Consciousness into the space nodes, searching for the aura of the Mother Formation. After he got it, he urged the divine crystals.

A halo covered the center of the Child Formation, as energy the fluctuated in the formation was clear. Everybody could feel the marvelous experience of being able to connect different places.

...

"Such thick energy waves expanding!"

A clear but tender voice arose from the clouds above the gourd-shaped island. Although that voice was still echoing, the massive battleships emerged one after another.

Those battleships were made of some kind of bright metals. They could reflect light well, which made them so blinding. Each one of those battleships was more than several thousand meters long. They looked like beasts from the primordial time falling from the nine-tiered sky. The others could sense a strong and brutal energy fluctuating from those battleships.

People on the gourd-shaped island faced the sky, looking at several hundred battleships, which carried more than ten thousand strange warriors from the other star area. They were so scared that even their souls swayed.

The warriors on those battleships evidently belonged to different forces. All of them were at the King God Realm, Original God Realm, and Ethereal God Realm. They even had two Incipient God Realm experts. This intimidating force was enough to swagger across the Shadow Ghostly Prison, and even the Fighting League couldn't bear facing them directly.

Among this more-than-ten-thousand-warrior force, there were three thousand warriors at the Original God Realm and two hundred Ethereal God Realm experts. No force in the entire Agate Star Area could have this number of domineering experts.

Although Divine Light was a famous force in the Agate Star Area and it had dozens of thousands of warriors, it had only a little more than ten thousand King God Realm warriors, around one thousand Original God Realm, and less than thirty Ethereal God Realm experts. The Fighting League was even worse. They had around fifteen Ethereal God Realm warriors among dozens of thousands of warriors.

It was the same for the Fire Clan, Crystal Clan, Demon Clan, and Monster Clan. Their numbers of Ethereal God Realm warriors couldn't compare to this force which had just fallen from the sky.

Everybody was panic-stricken while watching the sky.

Shi Yan was also shocked. He pitched his voice. "Do you actually

need to arrange such a big formation? This force of yours is enough to destroy any force in the Agate Star Area!"

It was Yu Shan who had brought the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area to this life star for Leona to train.

However, the power of this force was much beyond what Shi Yan had estimated! Even in his dream, he couldn't imagine that Yu Shan could gather so many intimidating existences like this! He had a sudden headache.

How could he arrange for this massive force?

1 mu = 666.6 meters squared

Chapter 1078: Pressure-resistant

More than ten thousand warriors and hundreds of battleships had created a heavy pressure like that of a mountain. This force of the Fiery Rain Star Area was over Shi Yan's estimation.

Sana and Ju Bo from the Divine Light were solemn. They had ordered their subordinates discreetly to maintain discipline. They shouldn't provoke or cause any dispute with the others recklessly. Miao Rong also looked shocked. He was bewildered while looking at the people who had just arrived. At this moment, he was speechless as if he didn't know how to talk.

This force of the Fiery Rain Star Area was enough to defeat any force of the Agate Star Area. Moreover, they had outnumbered the other forces, obviously.

Let alone the fact that the Divine Light had only three thousand warriors here, even if this force had attacked the Divine Light's headquarters, they could cause a fatal destruction there.

The huge number of the Ethereal God Realm of this force was so intimidating that it made them feel mentally subdued already.

The Agate Star Area was vast, but it would need four or five forces combined to resist this force of the Fiery Rain Star Area.

If they wanted to finish the Divine Light's corps in this gourd-shaped island, they could crush every single one of the three thousand warriors here easily.

Yu Shan's force was like a pressing grand mountain, which had suffocated everyone there.

However, Yu Shan didn't look happy at all. Quite the contrary, she looked even more grimaced than Miao Rong and Ju Bo. After the battleships had anchored by the small island, she ordered her warriors with an exhausted face.

Immediately, thousands of big chests emerged from hundreds of

battleships. The energy that rippled through those chests was thick and striking.

A lanky, archaic-look old man came to Yu Shan, who was at the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. He was called Xiao En. At this moment, he frowned while looking at those chests, as if he was hesitant.

Yu Shan nodded at him.

Xiao En's face was begrudging as he said, "Open them!"

Many warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area acted like the thunderstorm as they dashed out and opened the chests floating in the sky. Fierce halos were revealed, which seemed so dazzling.

Those several thousand chests were filled with divine crystals, jades, precious metals, and rare woods. The five-colored crystals were fulgent beside the aromatic pellets and medicines. Various types of cultivating materials that were essential to any warrior were glowing with a magical light that could mesmerize people.

Most of the divine crystals in the chests were high-quality, with some rare top-quality ones. The energy stored inside was almost in a liquid form, which was murmuring inside the crystals.

The spectacular jades had different auras of different energy classes. Some were cool, scorching, icy cold, or filled with thunderbolts. Apparently, they were the customized products aimed at special warriors, which were priceless indeed.

Even the meteoric iron, the streamer sand, black metals, etc. that couldn't be found in the Potion and Tool Pavilion, were seen in those chests. Watching them all, people felt that their souls had already sunk into those chests.

...

All the chests were filled with different rare and precious cultivating materials.

Miao Rong and Ju Bo looked at them until their eyes had a strange light. They smacked their tongues, counting for a while before they knew that the even the combination of all of Divine Light's and Fighting League's properties couldn't compare to the materials in those chests.

This finding made Miao Rong and Ju Bo shift restlessly. They looked at the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area, who had just arrived even more cautiously.

This was s filthy rich! Seriously!

Miao Rong and Ju Bo sighed with emotions.

"As we come here this time, we will use only our own sources. We won't consume anything from you guys." Yu Shan talked slowly while her bright eyes looked at Shi Yan only.

She didn't bother to look at Miao Rong, Ju Bo, Sana, Xia Xin Yan, and Zi Yao. In her eyes, it seemed only Shi Yan had the right to talk with her. Many warriors of Divine Light were shocked. When they looked at Shi Yan again, they all had an awkward complexion.

"You just need to ask Leona to help us train our soldiers. We will cover our consumption. We won't ask you to take care of all of things for us." Yu Shan became dead serious. "I know how difficult and brutal the training can be. If some of them die unexpectedly during the training, we won't say a word!"

Xiao En stood by her, frowning. He looked at Shi Yan disbelievingly, lowering his voice. "He... Is he worth our trust and difficulties for such consumption?"

Xiao En's voice wasn't high, but everybody could hear him clearly. They couldn't help but look at him.

This man seemed to hold a high position. He was at the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, cultivating the Thunderbolt power Upanishad. He must be famous in Fiery Rain Star Area. When Yu Shan talked to him, she was careful and respectful. "Leona is an

extraordinary genius. I believe that the force she trains can resist the standing army of the God Clan!"

"The standing army of the God Clan?" Xiao En furrowed his brows as his line of sight raked through the warriors of the Divine Light. His eyes became disdainful. "The competence of the team here can't be compared to ours. Is she worth your trust?"

Many warriors of the Divine Light including Sana, Ju Bo, and Zi Yao changed their looks as they felt insulted.

The Blood Lance of the Divine Light was famous in the Agate Star Area, indeed. Sana and Ju Bo had confidence in their fleet. However, being disdained today, they all felt angry.

Yu Shan scanned the Divine Light's warriors, talking nonchalantly, "They aren't an elite force indeed. But, they aren't the force Leona has trained. I believe that if Leona commands them, our troop with a similar competence wouldn't be their match."

Xiao En laughed strangely. He looked at the warriors behind him, and then the Blood Lance of the Divine Light. Suddenly, he talked with a severe face. "You know that I didn't agree to send so many experts to the Agate Star Area for training because I don't believe the Agate Star Area could have some good trainer at such high levels. Our family used to battle against the forces of the Agate Star Area. I know their fighting competence. So... I don't think they can be compared with the intimidating force of our Fiery Rain Star Area. Of course, I know you won't shoot an arrow aimlessly, especially when we are under such a heavy pressure..."

Xiao En paused for a while and then continued. "Give me something to put my faith on, okay? Also to show your soldiers something that makes them believe!"

Standing behind him, the warriors from the Fiery Rain Star Area had their eyes brightened, looking at Yu Shan with yearning visages.

Yu Shan frowned, hesitating for a while before talking to Shi Yan. "Is Leona here?"

Shi Yan wore a cold face while standing by the Child Formation he had just completed. He frowned, squinting at Xiao En and talking deliberately. "You can go back to your Fiery Rain Star Area now. I won't let Leona help you train your army."

Miao Rong, Sana, and Ju Bo were surprised, but they couldn't help appraise him in their minds.

Xiao En laughed evilly, while Yu Shan changed her complexion.

After more than ten thousands warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area had arrived in hundreds of battleships, they put a heavy pressure on the chests of the warriors in the gourd-shaped island, making them find it hard to breathe.

Although Ju Bo and Miao Rong were at the Incipient God Realm, they were no exception.

Xiao En and Yu Shan were both at the Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. They were stronger than the other two. At the same time, the number of the Ethereal God realm experts of their force was overwhelming. No matter which aspect they were to be compared in, the force in this island would always be in the lower position.

Thus, Miao Rong and Ju Bo felt dispirited as they weren't as strong as the others. Naturally, they kept silent under such massive pressure.

However, when facing Xiao En's doubt and contempt, all people in the island thought that Shi Yan would treat them with great care, and would say good words to them and talk them into their agreement. No one had expected that Shi Yan would give a shocking answer like that!

He refused them! Under a mountain-like pressure, he unilaterally erased what he's promised them!

All the warriors in the gourd-shaped island were scared. They didn't understand anything.

"You had promised me!" Yu Shan's eyes got colder while her soft body released a scorching heat of the burning flame.

"After you can satisfy your men, I will talk to you again." Shi Yan still wore a cold face. "If the people you've brought here disdain us or don't trust us, as they think they could kill us easily... then, I'm sorry. We won't welcome you. Please leave the Agate Star Area!"

Hearing him, the Divine Light warriors became excited, while Xiao En and the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors had a cold countenance.

"Kid, your realm isn't high, but your mannerism isn't anywhere low!" Xiao En snorted, sneering, "I don't think that warriors of your Agate Star Area can beat us in military tactics. Have you ever engaged in a battle with the God Clan? Do you know how strong they are? No, you don't! Because you've just met the Dark Shadow Clan, a watchdog of the God Clan! If you did face the God Clan, even if it were a group of warriors without a structure, you guys would be smashed!"

His finger pointed at the Divine Light's Blood Lance Fleet with a countenance full of contempt.

Taking a deep breath, Xiao En wore a stern face. "I used to face the God Clan directly. I know how terrible this clan is, more than anyone else. I know how sharp and magical their formation can be. It's important to train the legions, but, if I have to put my hope in someone who has never seen how dangerous the God Clan is, I'm sorry but it has to be a no."

He looked at Yu Shan, and the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area also looked at her. Obviously, they didn't trust her.

"Seems like even you can't have a uniform thought in your own organization." Shi Yan gave a faint smile while talking to Yu Shan

impatiently. "First, you should manage your internal issues then you can talk to me. I don't have free time to help you with your discipline."

"Dares disrespect Madame Yu Shan? You haughty kid!" A Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm young man shouted at Shi Yan, his eyes dark and cold like an icicle.

He was the patrol leader of a troop who was saved by Yu Shan. He had always respected and appreciated her for saving his life.

In Fiery Rain Star Area, Yu Shan held a superb position. Not many people dared to talk to her like that. Even when Xiao En had doubt and debated her, he needed the ten thousand warriors behind him to be his base of confidence. Yu Shan's power could be proven as she could gather more than ten thousand elite warriors and materials in just a short time.

"Shi Yan, I've saved your friends and your family. You don't want to give me face?" Yu Shan glared at the young man over there. Then, she lowered her voice, begging for his favor. "Why don't you bring Leona here and compete with the troop led by Xiao En? We can solve things that way, right?"

"My teacher has mobilized so many people to the Agate Star Area. She has to bear heavy pressure from the others already. If we can't solve this matter smoothly, it will affect my teacher's reputation badly," said Xuan Fei.

"Shi Yan..." Xia Xin Yan whispered to him and nodded. "The general picture's more important. The God Clan's too domineering. We aren't the enemy to the Fiery Rain Star Area. We will be good allies in the future."

"Okay then." Pondering for a while, he stood in front of the battleships and ten thousand warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area. Pointing at them, he said coldly, "Among you guys, if someone under the Incipient God Realm can beat me up, I will let Leona compete with your Sir Xiao En for a battle."

Chapter 1079: Better to fight once!

Hearing Shi Yan, both the warriors the Divine Light and the Fiery Rain Star Area started to clamor boisterously.

Shi Yan was at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. It wasn't hard to see that. The Incipient God Realm experts just needed a glance to know of his real realm and cultivation base.

At the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he wanted to challenge any warrior under Incipient God Realm. According to him, he could challenge the Second Sky or the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, or even characters that had one foot stepping into the Incipient God Realm. How arrogant he was!

Yu Shan and Xuan Fei were bewildered. They didn't know why Shi Yan said that, as they hadn't had a chance to see Shi Yan's real performance. Inside that space passage, Shi Yan had just stood and stared. He didn't do anything to show his power.

Thus, Yu Shan and Xuan Fei didn't know of his real competence. And, this was the first time Miao Rong, Sana, and Ju Bo met Shi Yan, so they didn't know how strong he was.

Even if they assessed Shi Yan's realm highly, they all thought that he didn't know how high the sky was when challenging all warriors under Incipient God Realm with only his First Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

However, there were two people who had their absolute trust in him...Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao!

As they used to stay with Shi Yan, they knew that he had many secrets, and had witnessed Shi Yan challenging warriors whose realms were higher than his.

They were confident in him. They even hoped to see a fight, so they called out to support him.

"Don't you dare?" yelled Zi Yao.

"Guess you guys are scared, aren't you?" Xia Xin Yan smiled gently.

Xiao En and the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area looked like they didn't know whether to cry or smile. They thought what Shi Yan had said was just a big joke.

Deep in their mind, they still disdained majority of the warriors on the gourd-shaped island, including Miao Rong and Ju Bo.

Shi Yan stood upright in front of the battleships of the Fiery Rain Star Area and continued yelling with his cold face. "If one of you dares to try me, let's do it now."

He wasn't impulsive or neglecting the situation like Xia Xin Yan had told him. He had made his own decision.

This time, there were more than ten thousand warriors that came here from the Fiery Rain Star Area. The Ethereal God Realm experts were so many as well. Their overall competence was indeed intimidating. Their power was greater than any force from the Agate Star Area. At the same time, this force had contempt for the Agate Star Area. Xiao En, their leader, used to fight against the Agate Star Area...

Together, those factors had made those warriors a serious time bomb. If he couldn't subdue this group of people and make them follow Leona's direction, they would bring an extreme danger to the Agate Star Area.

Shi Yan could see the seriousness of this matter.

He actually didn't want to deny Yu Shan's request. The important task he wanted to do here was to subdue the other. He must let them know that it was not easy to threaten the Agate Star Area. They should know that there was someone they must respect in this place. That was how they would stay in their lots and not cause any danger to Agate Star Area.

Thus, he tried his best to provoke them, trying to sound as

haughty as he could. He aimed at suppressing the others first. Then, he would let Leona smash Xiao En's confidence.

Under the two layers of attacks, plus Yu Shan's consultation, he believed that it would be the right way he could make the ten thousand experts of the Fiery Rain Star Area ease their minds and stay in Agate Star Area for their training. That was how they could have a force that would become a big trouble for the God Clan in the future.

"There are many ways to say and explain, but it'd be better to fight once!" Shi Yan was arrogant, cold, and harsh. His eyes had a brutal gleam of disdain. "If you think you're strong, come fight me. If you can beat me up, I can let Leona go back with you to the Fiery Rain Star Area. She would listen to you too!"

"Are you sure?" Yu Shan screamed in thrill.

She understood Leona's value than anybody else. Xiao En didn't know why, but she knew how precious Leona's talents were.

Yu Shan became excited.

She called before consulting with Xiao En. "Little Nie!"

That was a young man at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, who cultivated the extremely cold power. He became eye-catching as soon as he appeared. This young man wore a bright silver armor set, whose chest plate had magical drawings. His eyes were as sharp as icicles. He appeared in front of Shi Yan instantaneously.

Yu Shan knew Shi Yan had fused the flames of the Origin, so she found a warrior cultivating the cold power to subdue him.

Although Nie Han was at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, his realm was solid. He had sealed his body for ten years like a hermit in the North Ice Prison of the Fiery Rain Star Area. His body was now no different from the harsh cold ice.

"Don't hurt him," requested Yu Shan.

Nie Han smiled coldly as his thoughts activated to mobilize his Ethereal Extent. Inside the bitter, brutal icy world of his Ethereal Extent, glaciers connected with each other unceasingly while a snowstorm swirled everywhere. The cold energy slowly seeped into people's bodies.

Miao Rong, Sana, Xuan Fei, and Ju Bo focused on Shi Yan, watching carefully. None of them had seen Shi Yan in a battle before. As they didn't know of his fighting competence, they were all waiting.

Even Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan were serious, because they hadn't seen him fight in quite a long time. They wanted to see which level he had reached.

The bone-chilling energy seeped into Nie Han. At this moment, he looked like a froze man with ice rock attached to his body. His face was covered with frost, which made him look like a ten-thousand-years old ice corpse emerging from underground. As the cold energy swept through the place, even the space there sounded cracking, as if it was also confined in this icy world.

"Find someone else."

Shi Yan looked calm, but his eyes showed his impatience. His arm slightly swung once, and an aura that could bury any creature burst out from his body instantly. A magical seal floated above his palm like the messenger of Death. Slowly, it pressed towards Nie Han.

It was the Death Seal of the Death power Upanishad.

The barren, desolated Intent Domain was generated from the Death Seal. Death energy, along with countless gleams of negative moods, congregated together and rumblingly covered Nie Han.

Nie Han was dashing like a rainbow. His face suddenly turned as pale as a sheet of white paper. He gathered all of his power to withstand the Death Seal. However, the Death Intent Domain

inside the Death Seal had destroyed his spirit defense. Nie Han cried pathetically as his body was blown backward, falling into the crowd of the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The hard ice covering his body shattered. His body was intact, and his face ashen. He looked aghast as if he had just encountered something very terrible.

He couldn't resist even one attack from Shi Yan.

Yu Shan and Xiao En changed their countenances. They looked as though they were considering who would be Shi Yan's next opponent.

People on Divine Light's side looked shocked. However, they became excited in the next moment as they thought that the situation was going to be more interesting.

That strike was simple and fleeting, so they didn't see enough Shi Yan's competence. Now they wanted more. Thus, they all looked at the Fiery Rain Star Area's side, waiting for them to send a new expert.

Seeing Yu Shan and Sea hesitating, Shi Yan was impatient. He pointed at a young man, "You were quite loud just now. Yeah, it's you then."

He pointed at the young man who had shouted at him and wanted to teach him a lesson on behalf of Yu Shan. That young man was at the Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, cultivating a sharp metal power. His aura was indeed sharp and robust. Shi Yan knew he was an expert who had understood his realm thoroughly.

As he proactively chose his opponent, the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors were all surprised, then looked at him with sneers.

"This brat is such a fool. He dares to provoke Jin Lie da-ge! He courts death!"

"Master Jin Lie's going to break to Incipient God Realm, while he is just at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Does he want to die young?"

"Uh-oh... He courts death!"

The warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area started to mock and tease louder.

Yu Shan and Xiao En were bewildered. They now had an awkward complexion while looking at Jin Lie and Shi Yan. Their furrowed brows stretched eventually.

"That man's really strong!" Sana took a deep breath while talking, "His realm and power aren't lower than mine."

Ju Bo arched his brows, lowering his voice. "That kid Shi Yan has the guts. He even chose his opponent. Tsk! A gap of two minor realms, he's wild and arrogant."

"I can't see through him," Sana also didn't understand.

Xuan Fei's small face looked scared as she looked at Shi Yan in the distance, whispering to Jin Lie, "Jin Lie da-ge, he... He has saved me once. Don't hurt him, okay?"

Jin Lie thought that Shi Yan couldn't stand a fight with him, so he didn't want to join. However, on hearing Xuan Fei say so, he frowned while walking towards the other with a cold face. He then stood facing Shi Yan directly.

Xuan Fei covered her mouth, her bright eyes dull. She didn't know why Jin Lie suddenly acted strangely.

Anyway, some Fiery Rain Star Area warriors standing near Xuan Fei knew that she had just made a stupid mistake. Everyone knew that Jin Lie liked her. And now, she had asked Jin Lie to not hurt Shi Yan, which had enraged him badly.

"Jin Lie, show mercy!" Yu Shan darkened her face seeing Jin Lie walking to the ground. She hurried to ask him to moderate his

attacks.

She knew Jin Lie's tricks and how brutal he was. She knew that they had to give Shi Yan face to invite Leona, and she also knew of the deep relationship between Shi Yan and Blood Devil, Bath, and the others. She didn't want to cause any grudges with the forces in Agate Star Area.

"Madame Yu Shan, don't worry. I won't kill him." Jin Lie licked his lips like a wolf before a bloody hunt.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Jin Lie had his ten fingers interlaced while his bones sounded clear explosion. Then, ten sharp light lances were shot out.

Ten sharp metal energy lances with the rigidness and sharpness of a divine metal suddenly turned into ten gold flood dragons, hissing and roaring inaudibly in the void. They all aimed at Shi Yan.

Everybody was stern while looking at the ten gold flood dragons made of Metal energy. They were all startled.

He could use his energy to create creatures, each with a wisp of his soul. Only the warriors who had touched the door of the Incipient God Realm could throw out such attacks. Apparently, Jin Lie was a Peak Ethereal God Realm expert!

As he was confronting Shi Yan, who was at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, people thought they were using the buffalo knife to butcher a chicken.

People had their eyes glued on Shi Yan, but nine out of ten didn't think he could be an equal opponent of Jin Lie.

Seeing ten gold flood dragons dashing towards him, Shi Yan was still cold and harsh, while he grinned fiendishly. Almost immediately, a savage Evil Spirit current rolled massively like a sea swarming towards the shore. It burst out torrentially, shooting into the sky from Shi Yan's body.

While the Evil Spirit was being condensed in the void, it turned into the phantoms of the ferocious, giant Demogorgons, which then bared their fangs and claws and grabbed the gold dragons without any fear.

At the same time, one hand of his moved into the void, cutting something. It looked like he considered the sky a sheet of fabric that he could cut and trim as he pleased. Narrow but sharp space slits appeared, creating shining space blades.

Talking about sharpness, should the metal be the rival of the space blades?

The clamor on the ground ceased, and the gourd-shaped island was now so quiet they could even hear the sound of a needle dropping on the floor.

Chapter 1080: Topple the beliefs

Before the ten gold flood dragons created by the sharp metal energy could reach Shi Yan, the phantoms of Demogorgons had stopped them. The Demogorgon phantoms were filled with brutality, bloodlust, and craziness. They were black and icy, carrying a formidable evil aura.

Those giant Demogorgons were the combination of the Evil Spirit and the Death energy, with a wisp of Shi Yan's essence soul. Right after they appeared, they faced the sky and howled, releasing tremendous energy waves.

Shi Yan cut the void with one hand, releasing countless space blades which were even sharper than the sharpest sabers. They all swarmed inaudibly towards Jin Lie.

Space slits appeared in the void around Jin Lie, where brilliant beams of light shot out.

"Confine!"

Shi Yan's pupils shrank when he hissed. With that, the space around Jin Lie was locked, as if it was tied by invisible chains.

The heaven and earth energy was stagnant, the wind ceased, and the energy vanished. It seemed like even light was forced to stop moving.

At that moment, everybody could see Jin Lie halt in the void all of a sudden, as if he was struck by the Body Fixing Spell.

The ten gold dragons Jin Lie had released trembled hard. The Demogorgons grabbed the dragons, tearing them into small pieces. Gold light bloomed in the sky and then vanished.

The confined space now looked like a tranquil lake which just had a big rock dropped in it. It rippled, sending out giant waves.

The fine space slits invaded shortly after, causing Jin Lie's body

to echo cracking sounds. His face paled, while his eyes showed a gleam of fear.

"Pffft!"

Jin Lie couldn't help but spurt out a mouthful of blood. His God Body shook, and in just a blink of an eye, his body had many fine cuts which began to bleed terribly, as if he had been cut by many knives.

All the onlookers of the Divine Light and the Fiery Rain Star Area were dead silent. They all gawked, dropping their jaws and looking shocked.

Xiao En's bright but cold smile was now turning into a grimace. His lips trembled, but he couldn't utter a word. Yu Shan's hair bun shivered while locks of her black hair fluttered behind her back. Her bright eyes looked extremely stunned.

Miao Rong, Ju Bo, and Sana were dumbstruck like wooden chickens. They were bewildered for a long time before grinning evilly.

"Hah!" Xuan Fei let out a low cry, her beautiful eyes filled with radiant lights. At this moment, she didn't know what to say.

Many warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area thought they were dizzy. They couldn't help but rub their eyes as though they wanted to see things clearer. They couldn't believe that Jin Lie was pushed into such a state, and that he got hurt in just a short time.

They couldn't believe what they had just seen!

Jin Lie had trickles of blood on the corners of his mouth, but he didn't look dispirited at all. On the contrary, his fighting will was triggered, as he grinned fiendishly.

Swish!

Dazzling gold lightning beams lingered on his entire body like worms. With a close look, one would recognize that those were

actually the bulging veins in his God Body. His veins were now golden and glowing, wiggling in his skin and giving him a peculiar look.

Fiery Rain Star Area warriors were stunned. They cried in fear, pulling themselves together to observe the fight.

Xuan Fei covered her mouth, screaming instinctively. "Gold Lightning God Body!"

"He's combined the Metal power Upanishad and Lightning power Upanishad?" Sana changed his countenance to a grimace.

Ju Bo slightly shook his head. "No, it's not like that. Jin Lie's main power's the Metal power Upanishad. I guess he had a lucky encounter, in which his God Body was quenched by lightning. Lightning isn't his power, he just has the energy stored in his body, and he can use it together with the Metal power."

Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao were still calm. They didn't show their panic-stricken countenances.

Under people's gaze, Jin Lie's veins bulged as if they were real lightning blots. His God Body glowed radiantly with golden light, emitting more robust energy waves.

His entire body's muscles swelled under the urge of his Metal and Lightning energies. He was filled with the explosive energy of Lightning and Metal.

Lightning and Metal powers had enhanced Jin Lie's God Body. At this moment, he looked like a golden man who was molded out of liquid gold. His aura bloomed as he dashed with the rainbow momentum towards Shi Yan.

He moved like a sharp, golden sword!

Shi Yan's face was calm. He squinted, urging his power Upanishad and hissing for the second time. "Confine!"

Jin Lie, who was storming towards him, halted all of a sudden.

However, he forcefully wiggled out of the space confinement. Once again, he stormed towards Shi Yan, this time even faster than before.

Shi Yan's eyes were bright. He smiled and nodded as he knew Jin Lie had urged all the energy of his body. His furious power had helped him get rid of Shi Yan's space confinement.

"Good to see you here!"

He wasn't afraid, but actually cheered up. He smiled while his God Body changed.

Under everybody's gaze, his God Body suddenly shriveled. His hunky, majestic body became tragically thin. Wisps of pale mist gushed out of his acupuncture points, flooding the surroundings shortly.

Many warriors who were watching this battle had to frown, looking at his body. They suddenly felt like their souls had fallen into a fantasy mirror where they were nipped and torn by evil spirits, demons, and wailing ghosts in a blood sea with many white bones jutting out. They felt that both their souls and bodies were invaded by the evil and negative moods.

Everybody discolored in fright, hurrying to get themselves together. They all looked panic-stricken.

After they had stabilized their souls, they looked at Shi Yan once again, their faces ashen.

What kind of an evil power was this?

They had just looked at him several times, and their souls had sunk down there. They felt desperate, as if they would never get rid of that blood sea. They seemed to be able to see Death approaching.

When they could react, they realized that Shi Yan didn't aim at them. With that, they felt even more terrified. Xiao En and many other experts of the Fiery Rain Star Area couldn't help but remind

Jin Lie. "Watch out! Don't jump into the mist!"

Unfortunately, it was too late...

Jin Lie was like a sharp, golden sword that directly and violently thrust into the immense white mist. He had jumped into the sea of negative moods, immersing in the blood sea, visiting each island made of white bones. Countless evil spirits and wailing, hungry ghosts were gnawing at his body and soul.

It was the negative sea made of the negative energy of the Death power Upanishad. It was a soul attack.

Right after Jin Lie jumped in, he entered layers of illusions. He lost his mind instantaneously, slashing the ghosts and evil spirits he saw, which didn't actually exist.

People who were watching could see everything. They saw Shi Yan squinting and floating aside, looking at Jin Lie, who had lost his mind. The onlookers were now so afraid of Shi Yan.

Under people's observation, Shi Yan chuckled, balling his left hand into a fist. He punched Jin Lie neither hurriedly nor slowly.

The Immortal Demon Blood was urged.

The arm with that fist suddenly emitted a brutal, savage energy. Spikes jutted out of his elbows, while rigid, iron-like armor covered his arm. At this moment, his arm showcased endless evil features.

Boom!

Jin Lie got hit in his chest and was blown backward like an asteroid. His God Body resounded popping sounds as if someone was frying beans unceasingly.

He was struck, sent into the crowd of the Fiery Rain Star Area battleships. Warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area had to catch him and check his situation.

Jin Lie panted, gasping for his breath. His face reddened as he

shoved the others away. "I'm alright!"

He adjusted his condition, trying to attack Shi Yan one more time. But right at this moment, Yu Shan and Xiao En both stopped him. They were stern, their looks towards Shi Yan complicated.

"I'm okay. I can fight more!" Jin Lie cried.

Xiao En turned around to glare at him, sighing. "He showed mercy. Or else, you wouldn't be safe and sound."

As he didn't defend himself and Shi Yan had hit him with an ultimate energized punch, seeing that his God Body was intact, even if Jin Lie didn't know what had happened to him, Xiao En and Yu Shan had realized it.

They could see clearly that when Shi Yan struck his attack, and at the moment Jin Lie was blown backward, the explosive energy had dispersed out. It didn't burst off his God Body. Otherwise, even if Jin Lie's God Body didn't explode, he would be hurt severely.

"Jin Lie is defeated." Yu Shan was resolute, declaring the result of this battle. She didn't allow him to fight anymore.

The Divine Light's and Fiery Rain Star Area's experts were boiling as they looked at Shi Yan with fear.

Shi Yan... was only at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm!

He had used his First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base to forcefully resist Jin Lie at his Peak of Ethereal God Realm. Even more appallingly, he had gained the upper hand right from the beginning. He had even showcased that if he used his strongest abilities, he could kill Jin Lie shortly. He had toppled their cognition of powers completely.

After they had arrived in the gourd-shaped island, the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area had felt contempt toward the Divine Light warriors and the warriors of Agate Star Area in general. But at this moment, they all quieted down, thinking about their purpose in taking this trip seriously. They didn't dare to disdain or

underestimate the people here anymore.

Xuan Fei's beautiful eye showed she was stunned. She suddenly jumped and yelled. "Wow! You're so strong. Even Jin Lie da-ge couldn't beat you!"

Jin Lie was the famous Ethereal God Realm expert in Fiery Rain Star Area. His extraordinary fighting competence had gained people's approval. It was also why when he started to attack Shi Yan, the experts of the Fiery Rain Star Area had assumed that Shi Yan would lose.

Today, Jin Lie failed, beaten up badly. He was lucky that his opponent had shown mercy. Otherwise, Jin Lie would have been killed today!

"You guys can send another one." Shi Yan frowned, looking at the crowd of the Fiery Rain Star Area in front of him. "You have like ten thousand warriors here with many Ethereal God Realm experts. I can slowly fight with you then. Don't worry that I would have to consume a lot of energy and that I wouldn't be able to resist you anymore."

Warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area exchanged look, but they all kept silent.

Ju Bo, Miao Rong, and the Divine Light warriors were filled with smiles, feeling so proud.

"Are you really at the First Sky of Ethereal God Realm?" Xiao En pondered for a while before asking.

"Can't fake it," Shi Yan answered coldly.

Xiao En sighed while looking at Yu Shan. "I think no other Ethereal God Realm expert in our force can defeat him. I admit that I have looked down the fellows in the Agate Star Area. Leona should be like what you've told me. She is a genius in strategy and military tactics."

"I'm sure nothing's wrong with Leona's talents. I've seen them

with my own eyes," replied Yu Shan.

"I'm convinced." Xiao En thought for a while and then stooped his head, admitting his defeat. "I will watch over our soldiers properly, and we will listen to the other's directions. We won't have any dispute or objections."

Yu Shan was surprised, exhaling in relief. She then begged Shi Yan, "I'm sure my soldiers will listen to the commander... Can we meet Leona now?"

Shi Yan frowned, pondering for a while before nodding.

Chapter 1081: Link Up

Before Yu Shan's force arrived, Shi Yan had completed the Child Formation. When Blood Devil, Leona, and Fei Lan went to Devil Blood Star, he had reminded Fei Lan to open the Mother Formation in Devil Blood Star.

Since he had prepared the suitable conditions for both sides, he was able to connect the Devil Blood Star and this place at any time.

At the center of the island, space constantly changed on the center of the radiant crystal Child Formation. Space nodes twinkled like stars with the mysterious power of Nature.

Under the others' gaze, Shi Yan chuckled and then stepped into the Child Formation. He flashed and then disappeared.

A corner of Devil Blood Star.

The Mother Formation that many warriors were watching carefully suddenly glowed and rippled with many halos. Before people could react, a shadow emerged.

Yang Zhuo, Shi Jian, and Long Zhu who were standing around stepped forward and cheered loudly.

The Mother Formation was situated in the spacious yard inside the palace where the Yang family and the others stayed in Devil Blood Star. This area had many buildings: the new homes of the warriors from Grace Mainland. At the same time, there were warriors from Raging Flame Star Area. This place hosted many people of various races, indeed. Outside the vast city was the immense forest with abundant earth and heaven energy.

Many people were moving through the spacious court. There were guards watching the Mother Formation all the time.

Of course, since Devil Blood Star was Blood Devil's territory, it

was safe. Not many people dared to make a fuss here.

"Hey boy, why did you come back?" Shi Jian laughed happily, his eyes excited. "I've reached King God Realm!"

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness moved around as he looked at his grandfather. He praised the old man immediately, "Congrats, grandfather!"

Before he left Devil Blood Star, he had left the Thousand Fold Lotus to his relatives. Shi Jian was one of the lucky ones who was nurtured by the Thousand Fold Lotus. Together with the enormous amount of cultivating materials provided by Potion and Tool Pavilion, Shi Yan wasn't surprised to see him reach King God Realm.

There were many people who had the same progress as Shi Jian. With abundant earth and heaven energy, divine crystals, and pellets, those who came from Grace Mainland had all increased their realms significantly.

Releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense for a while, Shi Yan smiled sincerely. He nodded and said, "Everybody is making progress."

Aside from the other members of the Yang family, Cao Qiu Dao, Tang Yuan Nan, and Yun Hao also had their realms increase significantly. They had all reached exquisite levels.

They were all warriors who could still progress in Grace Mainland where energy was about to be exhausted. In this Devil Blood Star, with extra energy supply and the help of divine crystals and pellets, all of them had advanced much more than expected.

While Shi Yan, Yang Zhuo, and Shi Jian were talking, the Mother Formation flickered behind them. Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and Bo Rou slowly emerged. After they arrived, they immediately released their Soul Consciousness to sense and send out their special energy fluctuations.

Thrilling screams and shouts arose from the palace next to them. Shortly after, experts of the Demon Clan swayed through the crowd to come. They were all excited and touched.

"Master!"

"Master!"

"Master!"

The members of the Demon Clan from Grace Mainland kneeled down in front of Bao Ao and Jie Ji. They all had tears in their eyes.

After one hundred years, the Masters who used to lead them reappeared in front of their eyes.

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and Bo Rou had left Grace Mainland to find hope for their fellows, just like Shi Yan. A hundred years had passed and today, they finally met up in this place. All were filled with excitement and emotions.

"Where is Leona?" Shi Yan squinted, releasing his Soul Consciousness to find Benny. He then used the soul to ask him.

"She went to the Monster Clan's." Benny was surprised for a while before he could answer.

Shi Yan nodded. His floating Soul Consciousness suddenly felt Wu Lan. He used his soul to send her a message. "I'm Shi Yan. Please contact Leona and ask her to return to Devil Blood Star now. I have a task for her."

Wu Lan was the majordomo of the Devil Blood Star. She didn't go to Shadow Ghostly Prison since she had to take care of Devil Blood Star. This woman had a good relationship with Shi Yan though.

Indeed, hearing from Shi Yan, Wu Lan smiled and answered, "Not a problem. I'm going to notify her. But I don't know what she will say. Haha, at this moment, she's the greatest treasure of the Monster Clan. Unless she wants to leave, no one can take her away."

Shi Yan smiled as he was a little amazed. He knew it was like that.

With Leona's talents, Bath and Gu Te wouldn't let her stay idle. They would try their best to make her use all of her efforts to build the Monster Legions.

"Okay, you just notify her for me then." Shi Yan replied and then said nothing more. He began to wander around.

He saw Cao Qiu Dao, Cao Zhi Lan, the members of the Cao family, Tang Yuan Nan and the disciples of the Three God Sect. His allies all had extraordinary realms, but they still had a long way before reaching him.

Standing in front of the warriors he knew, he acted casually. However, the others were more cautious about seeing him.

The invisible river between the realm and status had distanced them furthermore. No matter how friendly and close he tried to be, the others didn't dare to joke or chat with him anymore. They had even considered the hidden meanings in his words if there were any.

This made Shi Yan upset.

Tang Yuan Nan said that Ouyang Luo Shuang of the Three God Sect had left alone earlier to pursue the true meaning of powers. It seemed like she had been advancing really fast.

In Grace Mainland, this woman was very lucky to get the Incipient Extent left by some Incipient God Realm expert. She had always leaped realms. When she went to Agate Star Area, she was like a fish swimming in the vast sea. Every time Shi Yan met her, he always had a new feeling.

She didn't stay in Devil Blood Star to cultivate. She had her own decision. Perhaps when they met again, she would reach Incipient God Realm already.

Taking a walk around Devil Blood Star, Shi Yan gathered with Ka

Tuo, Fei Lan, and Benny. Those who had one inheritance of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline had a mysterious connection with him. When they accompanied him, they could receive a lot of benefits, which made them stick to him all the time.

Today, Fei Lan had reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, Ka Tuo was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, while Benny had Second Sky of Original God Realm. The three of them had different but marvelous powers Upanishads. One day, they would become the overlords of a whole region of this universe.

"Senior, I... I have something to talk to you about," Benny was a little hesitant.

At this moment, Shi Yan was standing by the Mother Formation in Devil Blood Star. He was about to return to the Shadow Ghostly Prison to give Yu Shan an answer.

"What do you want to tell me?" Shi Yan told him, "Next time you don't need to hesitate. Feel free to talk to me. Just don't say nonsense."

Benny smiled in relief. "I'm worried it's not appropriate..."

"Can you elaborate?" Shi Yan frowned.

"Senior, do you really need good commanders who are good at planning strategies and tactics?" Benny looked excited.

Shi Yan nodded.

"I... I think... I can do that too." Benny suddenly became serious. "Recently, I've comprehended the powers of my family's divine weapon. I got the family inheritance from it. Those complex strategic dispositions of troops carry the destructive principle of our family. I think if I can control the troops, I can promote their power to an intimidating level."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

Benny came from another star area. He had the inheritance of

Destruction. At the same time, he had a divine weapon with the great power of Destruction. According to him, when his family was still powerful, their army could confront the God Clan directly because of their special dispositions of troops.

While he was studying with the divine weapon, he had received the inheritance of strategic dispositions of forces. His confidence caught Shi Yan's attention. Shi Yan asked him, "Is it true?"

Benny pointed at his head and said excitedly, "I, I have many thoughts. Many mysteries of the army dispositions that my family had used and trained the forces. We have more than ten different dispositions and tactics. But I need to practice."

"Kid, can you do that?" Ka Tuo felt strange. "Why do you know those tactic things all of a sudden? Do you know how many bloody battles Madame Leona has experienced to have her current attainment? In our star area that year, Madame Leona's Bloody Legion was the invincible existence!"

"Harrumph!" Benny lifted his head arrogantly. "That year, our family's Army of Destruction could resist the extreme soldiers of the God Clan. The inheritance I got is from the divine weapon of my family. I'm confident that I can compete with Madame Leona."

Fei Lan nodded and said to him, "Good. It's good that you have confidence."

She turned to Shi Yan. "We can give him a chance. This boy has excellent innate endowments, indeed. He's much stronger than many geniuses I've known. When he's serious about something, just like you, he will be wild and brutal. He has powers and bloodthirsty deeds. Good boy!"

Fei Lan always had keen eyes.

Shi Yan trusted her. Pondering for a while, he said, "I will let you try. Later on, you will command a troop to compete with people. Do you dare to do that?"

"Why not?" Benny grinned evilly. He shook his head. "I got knowledge stuffed in my brains. I want to see if it's sharp enough. If you give me a chance, I'm sure I will use it to the best of my abilities."

"Okay, come with me." Shi Yan jumped into the Mother Formation.

Fei Lan, Benny, and Ka Tuo followed him immediately. In the next moment, they reappeared on the small gourd-shaped island. Yu Shan and Fiery Rain Star Area experts were waiting for them.

As Yu Shan didn't see Leona, she was disappointed. She asked, "Where is she?"

"Training the soldiers in the Monster Clan's territory. I've notified her. She needs time to get back." Shi Yan explained and then introduced. "Hey, this is my little brother. He also has good attainment on training and strategic dispositions. If you don't mind, I will let him play for a while with precursor Xiao En. What do you say?"

Xiao En frowned and glanced at Benny. "If he wants to play, I'll let my little student play with him for a while."

Since Benny had only Second Sky of Original God Realm and was still so young, Xiao En didn't put him in his eyes.

Shi Yan smiled. He didn't seem angry. He said to Xia Xin Yan, "Let me borrow three hundred warriors of your Windstorm War Department."

The warriors of the Water Moon and Windstorm War Departments were all here. Their battleships were anchored by the sea near the island. They could come here at any minute.

"Okay," Xia Xin Yan smiled and agreed.

"Little Dao, you choose three hundred warriors and fight with him." Xiao En lowered his voice to order someone.

"Yes, Master."

A young man with a tender smile appeared. He was also at Second Sky of Original God Realm. He started to choose his soldiers neither hurried nor fast.

"Use King God Realm warriors," suggested Shi Yan.

Xiao En nodded in agreement.

Chapter 1082: Talented Field Commander!

Above the vast sea, two troops of King God Realm warriors were gathering and lining up in special dispositions. They were fighting fiercely.

The young man was called Yue Dao and he was a disciple of Xiao En. He also knew how to use strategic dispositions. He had experienced many fights against the God Clan. He was deemed experienced in this field.

Yue Dao wore a serene face and hid in the center of the formation of three hundred warriors at King God Realm of Fiery Rain Star Area. He swayed like a ghost shadow, continually sending his commands in a low and gloomy voice.

His voice was clear and cold as if it had some magic that could stir up the warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area. With the charm of his voice, those warriors started to have a desire to fight. Their fighting competence was actually boosted.

Yue Dao cultivated Sound power Upanishad. With this kind of power, he had the natural advantage in commanding a battle. At the same time, he could trigger the potential of his warriors. He made them not wary of death, make them wildly bloodthirsty, and could even make them not feel pain.

Three hundred soldiers of the troop he was commanding created a blood saber, which was ruthless and bloodthirsty. The Qi of the three hundred people had combined into one flow. Their different energy fluctuations started to synchronize and create a marvelous synergy.

This troop of three hundred warriors gave people the aura of a legion of one thousand soldiers and ten thousand horses dashing. It made Xia Xin Yan and the warriors of the Divine Light discolor.

Apparently, Yue Dao was like Xia Xin Yan. He was also a warrior

whose expertise was to control a troop. He had innate talents in this field.

Xiao En chuckled and said, "Yue Dao cultivates Sound power Upanishad. Although his cultivation base isn't really exquisite, his Sound ability could urge the potential of his soldiers. He could make them not feel pain and not be afraid of death. They would become wild and fearless. Of course, Yue Dao knows how to command his soldiers in the field. After hundreds of battles, he could still surprise people every time."

Yu Shan nodded and gave her compliments, "Sir Xiao En, you're lucky to have such a good student."

Xiao En laughed, his face cheered up.

Many warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area also looked at Yue Dao without blinking, light filling their eyes.

Compared to Yue Dao, Benny's performance was much worse...

It was Benny's first time controlling a troop in a battle. He had the knowledge of different tricks, secrets, and major stationing. However, he had never practiced them before.

He appeared somewhat flurried, his voice also hurried and muddled. Thus, before they had engaged in the battle, their disposition was twisted like a mess of tangled fibers. It didn't look like a professional stationing at all.

Warriors of Divine Light and Fighting League looked disappointed. The warriors under Benny's command didn't have confidence. They scattered and didn't even listen to Benny's orders, which assigned their stations.

The warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area laughed as they saw such a poor arrangement.

Xiao En frowned. He contemplated for a while and gave Yue Dao a gesture, telling him not to attack immediately.

"You don't respect us!" Xiao En darkened his face. "Sending a rookie like that kid, a person who has never commanded in a battle to confront us. You look down on us!"

Yu Shan also frowned.

Xia Xin Yan was baffled. She stepped forward and whispered, "Should we change the commander? Let me fight that Yue Dao. I believe I'm as strong as he is. I'm sure we won't have an ugly defeat..."

She could see that Benny didn't have experience. She didn't know why Shi Yan wanted Benny to command this troop but this situation wasn't something Benny could control. As Fiery Rain Star Area could make a fit about this, she proactively wanted to take the responsibility.

Shi Yan frowned and shouted, "Benny! Where's your wild power?!"

Staying in the middle of the mess, Benny was so worried as if he had a flame in his heart. All of a sudden, he was shaken. A bloodthirsty desire swarmed over him. His anxiety boiled while his eyes had the evil light of destructive power, which was deadly and dangerous.

Boom!

A flow of energy that could kill all living beings shot out from Benny's body. He seemed to become a completely different person. He became extremely wild and crazy!

A warrior of the Windstorm War Department didn't listen to him. He rose his hand to pat that man. The man's bones exploded, his body almost smashed.

Benny's eyes turned garnet, which seemed to have blood brimming. A destructive desire diffused that could affect the souls of all warriors in his troop, their soul altars controlled.

Immediately, Benny's ordered flowed like a gush of water as his

Soul Consciousness poured into those people's brains directly.

The chaotic melee of three hundred soldiers suddenly had an aura that could destroy earth and heaven. Each warrior of Windstorm War Department seemed to be boosted to the extreme. Now, they looked as if they had just fallen into bedevilment. They all became wild and brutal.

Benny's destructive aura had collected all the auras of his troopers' energy. In just a blink, he combined them into one massive flow.

He looked like the Devil that commanded his troop. The troop of three hundred warriors seemed to turn into a giant demon from the Nine Serenity Purgatory. The evil and mad energy fluctuations violently swarmed towards Yue Dao's troop.

"He uses his soul to control people's Qi and operating mechanism, gathering everything into one unit!" Xiao En discolored all of a sudden, his body shivering.

Yu Shan's eyes brightened radiantly. She was in disbelief. Apparently, she was also aghast.

People who knew strategic military dispositions screamed. They looked dull as they couldn't explain what they were observing.

Using the soul to gather the auras of the subordinates and using the Soul Consciousness to connect the soul altars were the subtlest methods to control the troop in combat that only legendary field commanders who ruled the whole region could do.

As Xiao En and Yu Shan used to fight the God Clan, they knew that the clan had just a few talented field commanders that could do so.

They were astounded, indeed.

It was obviously the first time Benny controlled a troop in combat. His wildness could create something magically terrifying when he used his soul to control the troopers' operating

mechanism and Qi to create the tide of the strongest attack. It was unimaginable, indeed.

Yue Dao's troop had a totally different feeling compared to the audiences' when they saw Benny and his troopers coming.

In Yue Dao and the warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area's eyes, there was no Benny and his troop. There was a monster that had just crawled out of its pit in Hell. With an open mouth, it spurted blood scent as it was storming violently towards them. It wanted to tear them apart.

It was not a hallucination. They could even see the cold fangs and the evil, cold eyes of the monster.

Their minds were subdued in just a blink of an eye. They felt dispirited as they couldn't resist this troop. Their formation was scattered from its formerly sharp disposition.

Many people felt their feet soften.

Seeing the earth-destroying aura like the Devil from Hell, Yue Dao felt his heart become cold. His eyes showed his panic.

Yue Dao's troop was defeated right before the battle began.

"STOP!" Xiao En thundered, shaking the entire sky.

Under his thundering voice, what Yue Dao and his troop saw had changed. Now they didn't see the monster anymore. They pulled themselves together and found that it was the Windstorm warriors and Benny in the middle of their formation.

Benny's eyes were garnet, his face bloodthirsty. The destructive energy swirled around him. That energy was like countless silk fibers that sewed the Windstorm warriors' Qi into one bunch.

The onlookers could see clusters of gray mist and clouds hovering around the troop of three hundred warriors that vaguely formed the terrifying monster. It was very similar to the Demogorgon phantom that Shi Yan had created.

However, the monster above the troop of three hundred was more gigantic and brutal. It was the Qi and operating mechanism of three hundred people that Benny had used his extraordinary power to collect and perform.

It looked so real.

The audiences could even see a fearsome, giant demon crawling above Benny's head.

They could even feel the malicious aura of that demon, which made them discolor in fear. They now had to consider Benny once again.

Gathering the troopers' auras to generate a demon that looked so real was some strategic disposition technique that went against Nature. Even Xiao En and Yu Shan who used to fight with the God Clan were dumbstruck. Now, they knew that if it wasn't the first time Benny controlled a troop and if he was a talented, experienced field commander, he could make his corps change earth-shakingly.

The experts of Divine Light and Fighting League were also astounded. Miao Rong and Ju Bo frowned as light sparkled restlessly in their eyes.

"Can we take this boy to our Fighting League?" Miao Rong suddenly approached Xia Xin Yan and asked seriously, "This boy is a rough gem. Once he gets used to strategic dispositions, he will be a top field commander!"

Xia Xin Yan smiled, her beautiful eyes raking around. "You can ask Shi Yan. If he agrees, we will try our best to have him."

"Who's foolish like that?" Miao Rong forced a smile, shaking his head. He knew that hope was just in vain.

"Shi Yan, if he agrees to join the Divine Light, we will do our best to nurture him." Ju Bo came forward and spoke with an earnest face.

Shi Yan was surprised. He shook his head.

Benny was slowly recovering from his insane state. He calmed down but his eyes were still fluttering.

"How do you compare him to Leona?" Xiao En dismissed Yue Dao's team. His face became so severe. He looked at Benny and asked Yu Shan, "I think with this kid, it's not important whether we could have Leona or not..."

He could see Benny's potential. As it was just the first time Benny commanded in combat, if he studied harder, he would become a peerless talented commander.

Since he had never seen Leona, in his eyes, Benny was the top field commander. He thought that Leona couldn't be compared to Benny.

"This boy's not bad. But he lacks a lot of experience compared to Leona." Yu Shan chuckled. "Unless he has experienced more than one hundred battles, he will have no chance to resist Leona. He doesn't have experience and he has never trained an army."

Xiao En's eyes brightened up, "Is Leona that excellent?"

"Maybe Benny will surpass her later. Right now, he's far behind her. You tell me. Who do we need now?" Yu Shan smile.

"Both!" Xiao En's eyes twinkled. "It's good that we can have both of them!"

Shi Yan glared at him before smiling and waving his hand, "We're done here. Leona will come very soon. I will arrange for her to train your soldiers. About Benny... if you aren't afraid that he would cause harm, you can let him torture your soldiers for a while to help him earn experience."

"It's okay. If he agrees to work with us, it's our honor. We're glad to do that." Xiao En hurried to reply.

"We're also glad to send our men for him to torture." Miao Rong and Ju Bo also expressed. They looked excited and enthusiastic to proactively propose and chime in.

Chapter 1083: Meditate and calm the soul

Just like Leona, after Benny had shown his talents, he had become burning hot in others' eyes.

Warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area wanted him, and so did the Divine Light and Fighting League. At this moment, the forces staying on the Cloud Sea Star were boiling up because of Benny. They all asked Shi Yan to have this talented commander.

After that battle, Benny's debut had shown off his talents. He had become a character that could call the wind and summon the rain. People directly ignored his low realm as they only considered his talented leadership.

But, Benny listened to Shi Yan, and knew whom he could trust. Thus, he just kept silent.

So, everybody now targeted Shi Yan.

Shi Yan told them that they didn't have the spare efforts to train the corps for different forces. At this moment, they would only help the Fiery Rain Star Area. Afterward, when they had free time, they would discuss this matter again.

He understood that the Fiery Rain Star Area was now bearing a heavy pressure from the God Clan's threat. At this moment, many forces of the Fiery Rain Star Area were facing the God Clan. It was crucial to him and the Fiery Rain Star Area to improve the overall competence of the latter's competence.

Only when the God Clan got damaged would it have no free time to notice the growth of Bloodthirsty's bloodline. It wouldn't pay attention to the Agate Star Area then.

Yu Shan and Xiao En were thrilled on listening to Shi Yan. They felt so lucky, and this trip wasn't in vain. Divine Light and Fighting League felt extremely disappointed. However, Shi Yan didn't have any relationship with them, and he didn't promise them anything.

Shortly after, Shi Yan, Yu Shan, and Xiao En discussed. They agreed to arrange the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors to stay on this Cloud Sea Star.

The Cloud Sea Star was in a corner of the Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was near the space passage hub, and also near the Divine Light and the Fighting League. With the Child Formation, it was connected to the Devil Blood Star. Its location was quite convenient for them.

No matter it was for Leona to come and train, or for the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area to return to their headquarters and transport more materials, it was really convenient.

The Cloud Sea Star used to belong to the Dark Shadow Clan, and the Divine Light had claimed the star after that. However, since Shi Yan had rescued three thousand warriors of the Divine Light, they decided to retreat from this place.

If Shi Yan hadn't participated, normally, the Fighting League would take this Cloud Sea Star. Actually, Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan had planned to claim this Cloud Sea Star.

However, after Shi Yan, Xiao En, and Yu Shan had discussed their plan, they decided to make the Cloud Sea Star their rest stop. So, Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan didn't hesitate to agree, and declared that the Fighting League wouldn't have any other intention toward this planet.

Thus, the Cloud Sea Star belonged to Shi Yan for the time being, and the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area could stay here for a while.

Because of Shi Yan's special relationships with Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao, warriors of the Divine Light and Fighting League could come to the Cloud Sea Star as well. Somehow, this planet had become the communication center of different forces, a crucial place.

With the number of more than ten thousand warriors of the

Fiery Rain Star Area here, the other forces in Shadow Ghostly Prison didn't dare to mess up with the Cloud Sea Star. With the Fighting League's backup, no one would come here to court death.

The Cloud Sea Star had been appropriately arranged, but Zi Yao and the Divine Light experts hadn't left yet. They wanted to stay and widen their knowledge when Leona came back. They did want to learn the art of commanding corps.

Shi Yan didn't oppose, so Ju Bo and Sana were happy. They found some islets to stay as guests here.

Xia Xin Yan and Miao Rong hadn't left yet, so the warriors of the Windstorm and Water Moon War Department were also settled on the Cloud Sea Star. They had the same thought as Ju Bo and Sana: they wanted to exchange the excellent tactics and strategic disposition of troops with Benny and Leona.

Of course, Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan wouldn't neglect Shi Yan. They often met up with him, talking about cultivating methods to seize the chance to be with him.

Time flew hurriedly, and half a month passed by.

Within this period when Leona hadn't arrived yet, Benny had taken the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors to play with him. He had applied many strange and rare methods to train the troops, some of which were unimaginable. For example, he let some warriors with the same power Upanishad use a secret technique to connect their soul altars, which would combine their powers when attacking or defending.

Benny had some secret techniques that could connect people closely. They worked and gave rise to incredible attacks indeed.

He also arranged the warriors with power Upanishads that could support each other into smaller stations. The powers they used could support each other magically. At the same time, he did prepare the formation using different weapons and armors, and

also some odd dispositions.

Benny had them all in his head. He just lacked experiences. Today, as he got the Fiery Rain Star Area's volunteers for his practice, he was so happy that he didn't feel tired at all.

Xiao En and Yu Shan had paid close attention. In the beginning, they couldn't ease their mind because they didn't know what he was doing.

However, after ten days, when they saw how powerful their soldiers were when they applied Benny's techniques, they immediately decided to make their troops cooperate their best with Benny, no matter how hard he wanted them to play in the field.

They could ease their minds now, and even thought that if Leona didn't arrive, Benny here would be enough to transform the corps they brought here into a mighty force that could resist the God Clan.

For half a month, Shi Yan often took a walk with Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao around the Cloud Sear Star. When they had free time, they would go to watch the sky and the ocean, putting aside the worries of chaos and the threat from the God Clan. It was a rare chance for them to relax their tense nerves. Shi Yan sometimes tried to understand his power Upanishads as well. Unexpectedly, he did harvest something.

Under the state of his calm mind and soul, when he let go of everything to understand the magnificent natural sights around, it seemed easier to increase his realm.

This finding surprised and cheered him up. All of a sudden, he recognized that he had never had a quiet moment in his life. And, he actually needed time to relax. He should stop somewhere to admire the beauty of Nature, and let his heart and soul feel at peace.

While he sometimes had a flash of recognition of his powers, the tier of power Upanishads in his soul altar would be sparkling with starlight. At the same time, his Life and Death power Upanishad seemed to generate something magical.

He wouldn't try to put his mind to study them, just enjoying those fleeting glimpses. In this state, he felt his soul slowly sublimate. His Ethereal Extent had some changes as he reached the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

He suddenly realized that when he had his soul and body relaxed this time, it was a rare spiritual baptism for him. He really needed this kind of calmness and peace to increase and strengthen his realm.

This kind of peaceful and relaxing life also cheered up Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan. After the small quarrels they used to have in the beginning, they had become calmer. Sometimes, when they went with Shi Yan to watch the clouds changing in the sky, they could stay silent for a long time as they just simply enjoyed the sweet, comfy moment with their loved one.

It wasn't a short time since the two women had known Shi Yan. However, they had never had a moment when they could ease their mind and enjoy the natural attractions around with Shi Yan.

The days and nights they had spent with this man had always been accompanied by fighting, running, magical encounters, and dangers. There were very little moments they could just stand and enjoy the magic of life without worrying about the chaos behind.

The quiet and cozy life in this Cloud Sea Star was what they had always yearned for. Just like Shi Yan, they also had the chance to relax and open their mind to comprehend the mysteries of their powers Upanishads. They felt that their souls being purified, and something had changed in their soul altars as well.

This wonderful feeling was hard to describe.

Unfortunately, the happy days couldn't last long. On this day, while they were standing on the reef to watch the immense sea with many white waves, they heard Xiao En screaming.

Many warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area were gathering on the gourd-shaped island far from them. The battleships that had anchored and immersed undersea also floated up. Xiao En and Yu Shan wore a solemn face as they were observing the sky

"What's going on?" Zi Yao's face was cold. "Someone comes to provoke us?"

She felt irritated because her peaceful days were disturbed. She did want to shout and curse.

"Yeah. If it were not someone coming, Xiao En wouldn't be that cautious." While frowning, Shi Yan said, "It should be someone mighty who can threaten Xiao En. Let me check it out."

Then, while closing his eyes, Shi Yan sent a wisp of his Soul Consciousness, which flew like a space saber that could cut off the sky, disappearing into the void.

After ten breaths, his eyes slowly darkened. "It's the Potion and Tool Pavilion as the main force. They also have the Fire Clan, Crystal Clan, and Ice Clan, with around two thousand battleships and thirty thousand warriors!"

Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao changed their complexion.

"They are the force of Second Elder Gu He, right?" Xia Xin Yan threw Zi Yao a glance. "A couple days ago, I received the information saying that the Elder Conference of the Potion and Tool Pavilion ended. Zuo Lou didn't participate in that conference. When we returned from the space passage, Zuo Lou had taken his subordinates and disappeared. No one knows where he is now. He sure knows his fate if the Potion and Tool Pavilion will chase and exterminate him. He has taken action and avoided the danger. With Zuo Lou's absence, in the Elder Conference, Second Elder Gu

He took the control. He has vaguely replaced the Pavilion Master. I don't know the details, though. Although Feng Yan was there, she's not a member of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, so she couldn't join the conference. But, I heard that Fu Wei, Bettina, and Zha Duo failed. Fu Wei has to face the wall and reflect on herself..."

Xia Xin Yan frowned deeply while talking. "We don't know what happened inside the Potion and Tool Pavilion's structure. The only thing we can confirm is that the ruling party of the Pavilion now isn't Bettina or Fu Wei. It's Second Elder Gu He."

"Gu He?" Shi Yan contemplated, then looked at Zi Yao.

Gu He and the Divine Light had a close relationship. He thought if Xia Xin Yan knew about the issues of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, Zi Yao must know something as well.

"Gu He's the Second Elder of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. His power in the Potion and Tool Pavilion isn't less than Great Elder Zuo Lou. Today, the cooperation between Zuo Lou and the Dark Shadow Clan has been exposed, so he has lost his party and the ally. Gu He now naturally controls everything. Third Elder Bettina doesn't have a strong background, so she couldn't face Gu He. This time, it wasn't beyond our expectation that Gu He won in the Elder Conference." Zi Yao thought and then said, "Something had happened back in the Elder Conference. But, we don't know the details. We just know that Gu He keeps the Potion and Tool Pavilion's Canon now."

"The one with the Canon will be the Master of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, right?" Xia Xin Yan changed her visage.

"Yeah, the former Pavilion Master of the Potion and Tool Pavilion had his soul vanished. He's not different from a dead warrior now. With the Canon, Gu He only needs to carry out the last ceremony and ritual, and he can be the newly-elected Pavilion Master." Zi Yao nodded.

"Doesn't it say that the one who found the Canon could step on

the glorious throne of the Pavilion Master?" Shi Yan was confused.

"I guess Gu He found some reason to blame Fu Wei for something. Otherwise, he couldn't have taken the Canon from her. In short, the current Master of the Potion and Tool Pavilion is Gu He. If not, it would not have been easy for our Divine Light to enter the Shadow Ghostly Prison. Gu He had arranged everything. My teacher has carried out his plan," said Zi Yao.

"Then, why does Gu He come to Cloud Sea Star? From his momentum, I guess he is aiming at the Fiery Rain Star Area warriors." Xia Xin Yan was also confused.

"We will know shortly."

Shi Yan stood up. Starlight swirled around him like a sprinkle which condensed into small meteors. He then shot out in the direction of the gourd-shaped island.

Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao followed him immediately.

Chapter 1084: Gu He

The Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleships emerged from the thick clouds of the Cloud Sea Star, putting pressure on the small sea area underneath.

The heavy, mountain-like pressure came from the warriors on the battleships with so many giant, crystalline artilleries. The energy inside those artilleries was brimming as if they could fire at any minute.

The battleships of the Fire Clan, Crystal Clan, and Ice Clan surrounded the Cloud Sea Star from three different major directions. They blocked the sky, releasing their intimidating auras.

Second Elder Gu He of Potion and Tool Pavilion was close to the Fire Clan, Crystal Clan, and Ice Clan. He also had a close relationship with the forces like Divine Light. He was a mighty character who had the competence to resist Great Elder Zuo Lou.

Right now, as Zuo Lou had fallen, he had to live like a stray dog. No one knew where he was hiding. Gu He became an overlord, the official representative of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. It was his time now to rule over all the offices of the Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Xiao En, Yu Shan, and the warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area were looking at the sky with stern and dark complexions.

Many battleships of the Fiery Rain Star Area were mobilized from the nearby islands and in the sea area. They flew up while releasing a hazy halo. All things were ready to engage in the coming battle.

Right at this moment, Shi Yan glided like a meteor over the sky and appeared above the gourd-shaped island.

Miao Rong, Ju Bo, Sana, and the experts of the Divine Light and

Fighting League also gathered up. They were so surprised on seeing the Potion and Tool Pavilion's battleships emerging.

An orange-red, crystalline war chariot, which was strangely beautiful and yet luxurious, appeared with dazzling light. It carried a lot of strange divine crystals. An obese man squinted his small eyes while watching the warriors gathering underneath and maneuvering his war chariot to approach the other.

That man was a human. At first glance, he appeared like a flesh mountain, with the fat in his body bouncing as he moved. The loose garments on his body were precious, but they couldn't cover the fat and flesh of his body. They looked as if they could burst off at any minute.

This man had big ears, a round face, and a pair of bizarrely small eyes. If they didn't observe carefully, they couldn't even have seen his eyes – his fat had pressed and deformed his facial features.

"Gu He!" Xia Xin Yan called him.

Shi Yan arched his brows, looking at Gu He while putting up his guard.

Ju Bo and Sana of the Divine Light hesitated when they saw this plump of flesh. However, they still stepped out and greeted him.

Gu He squinted his small eyes, trying to pull a smile. He nodded to Ju Bo, talking gently. "You guys are all here. It's good then."

Ju Bo and Sana didn't understand a thing.

Gu He looked at Xiao En and Yu Shan, his eyes getting colder. He shouted all of a sudden. "Why did you people of the Fiery Rain Star Area come here without permission? Who allowed you to cross the border? You've brought more than ten thousand warriors and several battleships. Are you declaring war on our Agate Star Area?"

Hearing him, everybody was startled.

The battleships of the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan were

anchored not far from them. They silently moved, sending sharp auras to this area. They were ready to engage in a battle.

Xiao En and Yu Shan frowned while exchanging looks, their faces darkening.

"We came to Agate Star Area because we have an agreement with someone in your star area. We don't have any bad intention towards the Agate Star Area." Yu Shan hesitated for a while before pitching her cold voice. "It has nothing to do with your Potion and Tool Pavilion, right? Is the Potion and Tool Pavilion the owner of the entire Agate Star Area? Do we need your permission to enter the area?"

"The Fiery Rain Star Area and our Agate Star Area don't get along well." Gu He smiled coldly. He snorted, then continued. "We used to fight fiercely back in the days. Our Gu family had laid down our lives to withstand one family of the Fiery Rain Star Area. Afterward, the space passage that connected the two star areas was sealed. We do have an unwritten agreement that no party is allowed to trespass the other's territory. Today, you guys have come without any precaution. We can consider it to be your war declaration."

"Gu family?" Xiao En was surprised as he sneered, "Ah, turns out it's that Gu family. Haha, that family had been almost exterminated. I didn't expect someone from that family could rise again."

"Who are you?" Gu He had a cold and harsh look.

"I'm Xiao En. Haha, that year, your Gu family was beaten up by my Xiao family. I guess you've heard about your ancestor's humiliation, right? Haha!" Xiao En laughed like crazy.

Gu He had an extremely cold face while his eyes showed his deep grudge. He gazed at Xiao En for a while and then thundered. "We give you half a month to leave this place. Otherwise, we'll consider it as your declaration of war! We will unite to kill all of you!"

"Mister Gu He!" Ju Bo frowned, "They didn't come here to attack the Agate Star Area. They have some other plan..."

"Cut it off!" Gu He swung his hand, talking unreasonably. "They are from the Fiery Rain Star Area. Anyone who accompanies them will be the Agate Star Area's traitor! I will talk to your Divine Light's Master. You guys should help us deal with those aliens or just step aside. Don't cause trouble to the Divine Light!"

Ju Bo changed his face. His cold eyes sparkled, but he didn't talk more.

Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan also frowned. They then discussed quietly, but they didn't give an opinion.

The Fighting League and Elder Bettina had a close relationship. However, they didn't like the Great Elder and Second Elder. If they joined this talk, it would lead to an adverse result. Gu He would treat them harsher.

Apparently, because Zuo Lou was crossed out, Gu He became the overlord of the Potion and Tool Pavilion after the Elder Conference.

Gu He and Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan had a close relationship. With the agreement of the three great clans, and the allies in the Divine Light and the other strong forces, Gu He could be arrogant, because his time had finally come. Turning one's back on him at this moment wasn't a wise move.

However, Gu He didn't dare to declare war that simply.

The total warriors of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, Crystal Clan, Fire Clan, and Ice Clan were around thirty thousand. Although they outnumbered the other, Yu Shan and Xiao En's force had more Ethereal God Realm experts.

This fight would relate to the war between two star areas. If it were triggered, with more Incipient God Realm experts, the Potion and Tool Pavilion might win. However, it would be a strenuous

triumph, as they would lose a lot of experts. After that, they would have to face the anger of the Fiery Rain Star Area when they sent more forces to take revenge.

The warriors that Yu Shan and Xiao En had brought here weren't from the same force. They came from different clans and different forces. It would cause a great trouble indeed.

If they were killed here, the war between two star areas, the Agate Star Area and the Fiery Rain Star Area, would explode immediately, clearing up everybody.

Although Gu He was haughty, he wasn't impulsive. He didn't dare to act rashly.

"I just want to know one thing. Does the Potion and Tool Pavilion have the power to decide things in Agate Star Area?" Yu Shan asked coldly.

"It's not that our Potion and Tool Pavilion can decide the fate of this star area. I've talked to the forces everywhere. Fire Clan, Crystal Clan, Wood Clan, Ice Clan, and Ghost Mark Clan all think that if they let ten thousand warriors of the Fiery Rain Star Area stay in Agate Star Area, they won't be able to sleep well. If you don't want to leave, we will expel you," said Gu He.

"Did you talk to the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fighting League?" Shi Yan asked all of a sudden after keeping silent for a long time.

"Kid, who are you?" Gu He's eyes were cold. "You are only at the Original God Realm. Do you think you have the right to intervene?"

"My first name is Shi, and my last name is Yan." While frowning, Shi Yan said, "I think you've heard of my name before, eh?"

Gu He's eyes had a gleam of surprise, which he hid immediately. He then talked with a stiff face. "Never heard of you before. I don't need to talk to you!"

He looked at Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan, his face getting less tense. "I've talked to Feng Han. He said he didn't care about anything here. About the Monster Clan and Demon Clan, because of the far distance, I'm still trying to reach to them. I think they would agree with my decision. It's ten thousand people from a strange star area coming to the Agate Star Area. This potential danger's really big. We can't bear the unexpected events, if any. We must expel them!"

Gu He was determined to shoo them away.

Miao Rong and Xia Xin Yan were bewildered. With a begrudging complexion, they didn't say anything.

Since Gu He got the authority of the Potion and Tool Pavilion, of course, Feng Han would give him face. He didn't say anything, but it didn't mean he agreed. However, from what Gu He told them, Feng Han had agreed with his operation.

The atmosphere became tense.

The Potion and Tool Pavilion brought the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan to this area with massive momentum. They looked as if they would fire up at any moment. Yu Shan and Xiao En's force wasn't bad. If they had to fight, they wouldn't be afraid. However, it would be tough to return to Fiery Rain Star Area.

At this moment, the Agate Star Area didn't need to face the God Clan's attack, while the Fiery Rain Star Area still had to engage in the war. Although Yu Shan and Xiao En felt irritated, they couldn't afford the possible losses in this area.

"You tell me," Yu Shan turned to Shi Yan all of a sudden, talking begrudgingly, "We arrived here as you promised us. We just want to improve our corps' competence. What we need are talented field commanders like Leona and Benny. If they can come to our Fiery Rain Star Area, we can go back now."

"We must seal the space passage connecting to Fiery Rain Star

Area!" Gu He shouted coldly. "Your Fiery Rain Star Area is having a terrible fight with the God Clan. If the God Clan comes here through the space passage connecting your Fiery Rain Star Area, it will be a catastrophe to our star area. Thus, when you leave, we will absolutely seal the barrier. We will not have any connection anymore."

Hearing Gu He, all the people on the gourd-shaped island had a grimace.

Once they sealed the passage between the Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area, the connection between the two star areas would be cut off. If Leona and Benny got there, they wouldn't be able to return.

Of course, it didn't suit Shi Yan's thought and benefit.

In his eyes, the God Clan was the biggest enemy. The Agate Star Area should join hands with the Fiery Rain Star Area to resist the God Clan. The Fiery Rain Star Area had many experiences and information about the God Clan. So, they could help figure out how to deal with the enemy.

And, at the same time, the Ascot family was fabricating the secret treasure to clear the space passage connecting to Agate Star Area. Once they got it done, the Agate Star Area would have to face the Ascot family of the God Clan immediately. If they could have this ally from the Fiery Rain Star Area, they could exchange information and forces, which was good to both sides.

If they fought alone, they would be smashed, and their star areas would be occupied.

Shi Yan's face was getting colder. He lifted his head to look at Gu He of the Potion and Tool Pavilion. "It's me who gave Fu Wei the Potion and Tool Pavilion's Canon. According to the rules, Fu Wei's the official master of your pavilion. You're just an Elder. Do you think you can stand here and bluster?"

Chapter 1085: Soul Incantations

Yu Shan, Xiao En, Miao Rong, and Ju Bo were astounded, their eyes strange.

Everybody here was heavy-hearted because of Gu He. As they had to think for the welfare of the forces behind them, they didn't dare to confront Gu He directly.

Because Gu He represented the Potion and Tool Pavilion.

Shi Yan was indifferent. He didn't care about the superb position of Potion and Tool Pavilion in Agate Star Area. He directly questioned the dubiety of Gu He and his power.

Gu He paled.

Some warriors with profound realms and cultivation bases behind him were filled with rage and murderous intentions. One of them was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm, a hidden consecrator of Potion and Tool Pavilion whose name was Ino. This expert cultivated Soul Incantations.

Ino frowned, his eyes suddenly as dark as the bottomless abyss. He gazed at Shi Yan.

A strange, malicious soul energy that could pull the soul altar out of the body immediately fastened to Shi Yan's soul, trying to pull his soul out of his body.

Yu Shan and Xiao En discolored.

Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao turned cold.

"Slow down!"

A clear but cold voice arose. Layers of magical energy rippled. Time suddenly slowed down. The operating rules of everything were forced to change.

The spiritual energy of the Soul Cursing Technique casted by Ino was also affected. The energy that tied Shi Yan's soul became slow

and powerless. The pulling force applied to Shi Yan's soul was reduced massively.

Ino had a handsome face. He didn't look old, but his eyes were deep and archaic, hiding some unknown magic. His handsome face twitched and changed gloomily. Green light dots flew out like the ignis fatuus from his eyes.

A soul curse was released from his eyes and it hit the targeted soul hard.

Boom!

Xia Xin Yan's brain was shaken hard as if she had gotten hit by lightning. Her Sea of Consciousness blasted and shattered. She couldn't gather her Soul Consciousness again.

She paled while her soft body shook badly. The God power of her body was running out.

Her Time power Upanishad dissolved. Ino's Soul Incantation continued to tie Shi Yan's soul and attempted to pull it out.

Xiao En and Yu Shan had cold faces as they took action.

A sea of fire seethed in the void. Shortly after, it covered this area. Inside the sea, thunderbolts moved like winding dragons that vented out their anger.

The soul incantation that Ino had cast was burned. Its energy was consumed by the fire and its will was smashed by the thunderbolt. It dissolved instantaneously.

Ino's beautiful face was colder. He couldn't help but snort. He didn't attack the second time and turned to see Gu He.

Gu He shook his head slightly, his small eyes deceitful and malignant, "Fu Wei violated the regulation of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She's forced to face the wall and reflect on her mistakes. The elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion had discussed and we all agreed that she doesn't have the right to keep the Canon. We don't

have any other option around. I will now keep it."

Gu He scanned the crowd and spoke arrogantly, "This is our internal matter. I can't tell you the details. You just need to know one thing. I have full authority to represent Potion and Tool Pavilion!"

After that, he didn't care about Shi Yan anymore so he didn't give him an explanation for Ino's attack. He swung his hand impatiently, "We'll give you time to prepare. Please leave. Otherwise, when your time is up and you're still here, we won't be polite anymore."

Shi Yan now had cold and harsh eyes. He touched his forehead. Death energy was released which cleared the remnant of the soul incantation in his brain.

Turning around, he walked to Xia Xin Yan and asked with great care, "Are you all right?"

Xia Xin Yan smiled and lifted her head to look at Ino standing by Gu He. She lowered her voice, "He didn't dare to harm me."

Shi Yan's face was malicious. He nodded and then lifted his face, "I found the Canon. I handed it to Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion. I feel so annoyed today. I want to take it back. Return the Canon to me."

Gu He's eyes were scornful. He stooped and glanced with disdain, "The Canon belongs to Potion and Tool Pavilion. No matter where it has drifted to, it's a halidom of us. No matter who gets it, it still belongs to Potion and Tool Pavilion. Moreover, Elder Fu Wei had paid fully for the Canon. According to our Potion and Tool Pavilion's business regulations, our deal was closed. The Canon has nothing to do with you now."

"You won't hand it back to me?" Shi Yan pondered for a while. "I'll take it myself!"

Crack! Crack!

A faint blue ring on his fat middle finger sounded with a crunch. The surface of the ring cracked. Something wiggled out of the ring directly and shot away.

A thin slit appeared and that object swayed into that slit before it closed shortly afterward.

Gu He and the other warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion grimaced. They all looked at Shi Yan hostilely. The murderous intention in their eyes couldn't be hidden.

"Well, I have a good habit," Shi Yan looked innocently, "When I deliver anything precious, I always attach a restriction. Especially such things like this Canon, I have to be more cautious."

Before Shi Yan knew the Canon's identity, he had seen its magical features. As a routine, he had left a wisp of his Soul Consciousness with space power. That way, he could use Space power Upanishad to track the thing down. Fu Wei didn't know that because she didn't check the status of the Canon.

He thought that he would never have a chance to use that restriction. It turned out the changing situation made him do so. Fu Wei was currently grounded. He didn't expect that the Canon would fall into a cunning person like Gu He.

He didn't believe that Fu Wei would violate rules. Everything Fu Wei had done, she did it for Agate Star Area to eliminate the traitor of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She didn't do anything that made her ashamed. Shi Yan understood that Fu Wei was tricked. Gu He had set her up for something or made up a false accusation. In short, Shi Yan knew that it was Gu He who was behind all these things.

If Fu Wei kept the Canon, he wouldn't say anything. However, as Gu He controlled Potion and Tool Pavilion now, of course, Shi Yan couldn't just defend without attacking.

"You dared to do something on the Canon of our Potion and Tool Pavilion!" Gu He twisted his face. His layers of fat rattled, which

made him look like a giant maggot.

"Swish!"

The corner of Shi Yan's eyes had a slit. He rose his hand to grab the void and the Canon was now in his hand.

"If you want to take the Canon back, tell Fu Wei to meet me. You... don't deserve to keep this thing." Shi Yan spoke curtly and impolitely. He nodded to Fei Lan and Ka Tuo behind him. "Go to Devil Blood Star and call precursor Blood Devil. I want to see if Gu He can control everything in Agate Star Area."

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo nodded quietly. Their figures flashed and disappeared in the Child Formation.

Thousands of Fiery Rain Star Area warriors with Xiao En and Yu Shan gathered around the Child Formation. Even if Gu He wanted to stop them, he couldn't do anything. He could only see Fei Lan and Ka Tuo leave.

"Kid, you've interfered with Potion and Tool Pavilion's internal issue. You have taken our Canon! Your sins can't be forgiven!" Gu He took a deep breath and nodded to Ino and then shouted, "Kill him for me!"

Ino's deep and dark eyes had a strange light. The corners of his mouth moved as he was about to cast the soul incantation.

Xiao En and Yu Shan snorted. They swayed and stopped by Shi Yan. They all looked at Gu He and Ino with cold, malicious eyes.

"Do you really want to fight with our Agate Star Area?" Gu He shouted with a cold complexion.

"You can't stand for the entire Agate Star Area. You can't represent Potion and Tool Pavilion, either. You can speak on behalf of yourself only." Shi Yan sneered, "It's true that the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan have sent their soldiers to cooperate with you, but I don't think the three big forces would bet the future of their entire clan on you, Gu He!"

The Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan in Agate Star Area were all mighty clans, especially the Fire Clan as it could resist the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. It was the strongest force.

Ice Clan and Crystal Clan were a little weaker, but not by much. If the three clans followed Gu He, it would be very difficult.

It was too bad that the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan didn't send any elders to this operation. As they didn't send any strong warriors with high positions here, it meant that they weren't dependent on Gu He. It was just a cooperative activity between them.

It was just a collaborative relationship. Of course, they wouldn't risk their lives under the circumstance that they couldn't have any profits. Thus, Shi Yan didn't believe that the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan would risk their lives with Yu Shan and Xiao En for Gu He.

Indeed, Gu He grimaced more upon hearing Shi Yan.

Ino took action again. This time, he was still discreet.

Shi Yan stood still, holding a blood broadsword in his hand. The blood eyes on the sword started to wiggle.

Blood beamed across the sword, spreading like gossamers and covering Shi Yan's shortly. Some kind of energy that could seal the soul, Sea of Consciousness and the soul altar was released from Shi Yan. However, Yu Shan and Sea couldn't sense anything.

Although Ino had mastered the soul incantation and he had released many deadly curses, he couldn't block Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. They could only float around his body, but they couldn't find the entrance.

"Divine weapon!" Ino discolored.

He gazed at the blood broadsword that Shi Yan was holding in his hand. His dark eyes changed strangely while he was casting his secret incantation. He wanted to affect the energy of the blood

sword.

Boom!

A brutal, evil energy shot out from the blood sword. It was like an immense blood sea attacking his soul. Ino's deep eyes had a gleam of fear. He also looked aghast.

The strange eyes on the blood sword opened. The blood beams had locked Ino from a distance. The sword was like a ferocious monster that was accumulating energy to storm over Ino.

Ino's consciousness was hazy. He hastened to stop his incantation and tried to steady his Sea of Consciousness and soul altar. His face grimaced.

Rolls of fat on Gu He's face shivered as he was scared. He studied Shi Yan.

He had heard of the name Shi Yan earlier. In Potion and Tool Pavilion's Elder Conference, this name was spoken together with Bath, Gu Te of the Monster Clan, and Blood Devil of the Demon Clan. It was mentioned more times than even Bath and Gu Te. Being the Second Elder of Potion and Tool Pavilion, how could he not know about Shi Yan?

However, he had underestimated Shi Yan's abilities...

Holding the blood sword, Shi Yan's eyes were as scarlet as blood. His appearance was extremely cold and harsh. He indifferently looked at Ino and Gu He and didn't say a thing.

He was waiting. He was waiting for experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan. It would be more favorable for him when they came.

Xiao En and Yu Shan were so astounded to look at the evil deeds he was using. They stood on his left and right and were ready to protect him.

They knew that when the experts of the Monster Clan and

Demon Clan arrived, the wind on this Cloud Sea Star would change.

Chapter 1086: The Fate Traveler

Ino's eyes were cold and blurry like ice while he was controlling his wisps of Soul Consciousness, which moved like invisible spiritual snakes. They all aimed at Shi Yan.

However, the soul incantation he had cast was going to deviate if they aimed at Shi Yan. Without Shi Yan's soul energy waves to detect, his curses couldn't perform.

Shi Yan held the blood sword in his hand while the blood beams spread all over his body and created a thick blood cocoon that covered his body.

Nothing could intrude!

The soul secret techniques couldn't lock him, so the incantation couldn't work anymore.

Ino was so irritated and he wanted to vomit blood.

This was the first time he had ever encountered a bizarre situation like this along his path of cultivating soul incantations.

He knew that the blood sword Shi Yan was holding was strange and evil, indeed. He also knew the reason why his secret curses couldn't work. It was because of that blood sword. However, as Yu Shan and Xiao En were watching cautiously, he couldn't storm over to snatch that blood sword. Apparently, he couldn't use the secret techniques to kill Shi Yan.

The fat on Gu He's face shivered. His small eyes flared with ferocious light and gazed at Shi Yan with deep resentment.

His Gu family and the Xiao family of Fiery Rain Star Area had a bloody grudge. Since Gu He was just a small child, he had listened to the teachings of his ancestor. He must make Xiao En's family pay a big price!

Thus, Gu He hated anyone who came from Fiery Rain Star Area.

This time, it was coincidental that Xiao En was in this group. Gu He wouldn't let this chance slip away.

"Shi Yan!"

Xia Xin Yan and Zi Yao called him with worried faces. They hurried to approach him to check his situation.

Staying inside the fine blood fibers, Shi Yan looked cold. He squinted and shook his head to tell Zi Yao and Xia Xin Yan not to worry about him.

"This man robbed Potion and Tool Pavilion's Canon. Do you outsiders want to interfere in the internal issues of our Potion and Tool Pavilion?" Gu He's face was cold, but he couldn't hold his flame of anger anymore. He glared at Yu Shan and spoke, "If you mean it, don't blame Potion and Tool Pavilion for not showing mercy!"

Gu He's mentality was almost cracked.

Yu Shan and Xiao En could recognize Gu He's mental state. They frowned quietly. They were also anxious as they continued to turn around to check the Child Formation. They hoped that the experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan could come here soon.

Gu He took a deep breath. He seemed to have made up his mind. He swung his hand as he'd prepared to start this battle, his face cold and harsh.

However, his big mouth parted as if he was about to talk, but he couldn't make a sound.

Gu He's big face winced and piled up the rolls of fat. His eyes were aghast. He looked really awkward.

Many warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion surrounding the area were bewildered. They looked at him confused as they didn't know why he couldn't make a sound although he was obviously shouting.

Gu He started to sweat. His face slowly paled. His column-like, big neck wiggled as if he was searching for something.

Warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Divine Light, Fighting League, and Fiery Rain Star Area were dumbstruck. They also followed his line of sight to see what was going on.

Gu He suddenly stopped.

He looked in a direction.

It was where Shi Yan was standing.

The eyes of dozens of thousands of warriors were now gazing at one spot, which was next to Shi Yan.

No one knew for how long there was a white-headed, archaic old man standing next to Shi Yan. That old man wore a silver robe. His brows were long and white like mist. His eyes were filled with a smile. And his face was especially smooth as it was like white jade. It seemed like he was still pretty young.

He was holding a scepter, which looked like a branch of an old, dead tree. The wooden material of his scepter was strange. It could release the energy waves of life.

The arms of the old man had many magical wooden textures. Those textures were strange and wonderful. However, they looked exactly the same as the texture of his scepter, which seemed to contain some principles of this world.

This old man was a member of the Wood Clan.

Holding the scepter, the old man was smiling while studying Shi Yan. Sometimes, he touched the blood-fine fibers on his body and gave profuse appraisals.

At this moment, the numbers of experts on the gourd-shaped island were as many as clusters of clouds in the sky, which included more than ten First Sky and Second Sky of Incipient God Realm experts. However, before Gu He spotted the archaic man, no one

had recognized the old man was there.

Everybody was astounded as they could never have imagined something like this. They all looked at the white-haired Wood oldie. The oldie ignored all of them. He was still studying Shi Yan with great curiosity. His pair of eyes was full of childhood interest and warmth. He didn't have any malicious intent.

However, under his gaze, Shi Yan felt very irritated. It felt like the old man could read all that he had experienced in his life easily.

The eyes of that old man seemed to be able to see through people's hearts and all of their experiences they had in their whole life.

From a distance, Gu He looked at them. In his rice-sized eyes, he seemed to be begging as if he couldn't even talk without permission from that old man.

Standing by Shi Yan, Yu Shan and Xiao En were so solemn looking at the old man. They exchanged looks as they could grasp the fear in each other's eyes. All of a sudden, Yu Shan and Xiao En bent their bodies to greet and say, "Precursor." Then, they stood with their bodies bending and didn't say more.

Miao Rong of the Fighting League and Ju Bo of the Divine Light studied the old man and tried to find information of him in their brains.

Shortly after, Ju Bo shivered, divine light shooting out of his eyes. His eyes were glued to the wooden scepter in the old man's hand. He muttered, "It's made of the Life Tree of the Wood Clan... A precursor of the Wood Clan... Shang Chen... Great Sage Shang Chen."

His voice was so low that the others around couldn't hear. Only Sana heard him. Sana was skeptical and lowered his voice, "Who is he?"

"Fate... The Fate Traveler." Ju Bo forced a smile.

Sana discolored in fright.

Gu He was still begging, looking at the Wood old man.

Shi Yan pulled himself together. He suddenly found that Ino's soul incantation was cleared while he didn't recognize it. He looked at Ino who was wincing with trickles of blood on the corners of his mouth. He looked hurt and was begging.

He was baffled and couldn't help but look at the Wood old man next to him. Frowning, Shi Yan said, "May I ask what you want, precursor?"

The Wood old man smiled, his left eye blinking. Instantaneously, Gu He who was fixed over there was able to stammer, "Great Sage... Why... why are you here?"

Great Sage?

Many people looked bewildered. They looked at the Wood old man and tried to identify him.

Miao Rong of Fighting League was shocked. Dazzling light shot out from his eyes. When he looked at the old man again, his face was filled with respect. He bent his body slightly to show his respect for a junior and didn't say more.

"I'm here to save your life." The Wood old man shook his head, looked at Gu He, and sighed, "Your Gu family has declined for several thousand years. Until your generation, no one made a raise. Why do you want to find trouble for yourself? Do you really want your Gu family to be uprooted?"

Listening to him, Gu He's face turned gray like the earth. However, he bought it. Just like a primary student asking for his teacher's advice, he said, "Great Sage, please explain to me."

"Okay." The Wood old man smiled and pointed at Shi Yan, his voice slow and tender. "If I didn't come, here's what would have happened. You guys would fight with the warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area. Fiery Rain Star Area would fail. However, when the

Monster Clan and Demon Clan comes, both of you would have gotten huge losses. Then, the people of Fiery Rain Star Area would have left. You guys would also expel this young man to Fiery Rain Star Area. However, in one hundred years max, he would return. He would eradicate your Gu family. You, Gu He, would be killed too."

The old man spoke casually, but many people didn't believe him. They thought he just spoke nonsense.

However, Second Elder Gu He of the Potion and Tool Pavilion felt like he had just fallen into an ice chamber. He saw his death in advance. He paled and shook uncontrollably. He just stood there, shivering with an extreme fear.

He had no doubt of what the old man had just told him!

When he saw Shi Yan again, Gu He was panic-stricken. He looked both crazy and perplexed.

"Oh, I can add one more thing," the Wood old man sighed. "If you started this battle, Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area would be involved. The star war would happen. And the God Clan could invade Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area in two or three hundred years."

He pointed at Miao Rong, Ju Bo, Yu Shan, Xiao En, and Ino. He spoke nonchalantly, "All of you would have died in the battles."

Those people under his finger felt their souls shudder. They were so frightened as they could foresee their future.

"You say it as if they're all true," Shi Yan smiled oddly. "It's really bad that you're not a hoax medium."

"Oh no, I'm the biggest hoax medium in Agate Star Area." The old man grinned, his makings relaxed. "But many people believe in this hoax medium. Because... what I've told you could be your future."

"Great Sage, I'm wrong." the Second Elder changed his visage and

bowed deeply. He acted repentantly and earnestly.

Everybody was stunned.

"Sigh. If it's not related to the fate of the two-star areas, I don't need to spend my efforts to calculate and make people skeptical." The Wood old man shook his head. The wooden scepter in his hand released extreme energy waves that could affect people's souls and gave them a hallucination that made their souls collapse.

Shi Yan wasn't an exception.

Yu Shan and Xiao En discolored in fright.

"Please advise us your status and title?" Xiao En hesitated for a while before asking with respect.

"I'm Shang Chen," said the Wood old man faintly.

"Shang Chen... Shang Chen! You are the Fate Traveler who cultivates Fate power Upanishad? You've been to our Fiery Rain Star Area, right?" Xiao En was suddenly excited. He asked with his arms swinging, "I know you. The secret books of the Xiao family mentioned you many times."

"I've traveled through many star areas. Not only your Fiery Rain Star Area." Shang Chen smiled, "Oh, right. I used to drink with Xiao Zhan."

Xiao Zhan was Xiao En's grandfather. However, he had fallen in the battle with the God Clan. Shang Chen's profile in the books of the Xiao family was written by Xiao Zhan.

"Oh, turns out it's you, precursor Shang!" Xiao En was happy. He showed more respect.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

While Xiao En was thrilled, the Child Formation behind him activated. Beautiful halos expanded. The experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan emerged with Bath, Gu Te, and Blood Devil as the leaders. The three of them were full of murderous auras and

ferocious faces. They came for a bloody battle.

More and more Monster and Demon experts came unceasingly.

Gu He discolored. He glanced at Shang Chen, his face modest. He just stood quietly and didn't dare to pitch his voice to ask for a battle anymore.

Chapter 1087: Great Sage

Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath were annoyed because Leona wanted to leave. When Fei Lan and Ka Tuo told them the situation where Gu He of Potion and Tool Pavilion wanted to attack Shi Yan, they grumbled and came like thunder.

Warriors of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan all wore heavy armor with fearsome iron helmets. Their murderous auras shot out like sharp tips. When hundreds of Monster and Demon warriors lined up neatly, a flow of bloodthirsty aura gushed out like an overflowing river.

There was no emotion on Leona's daunting face. She looked cold and harsh, her eyes radiating a dark halo.

After those Monster and Demon warriors had undergone her training, they seemed to be dyed with blood. This kind of thick blood scent nauseated people.

The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion faced the soldiers behind Leona with fear.

Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath stood arrogantly in the front. Standing behind him were some First Sky of Incipient God Realm experts. They were all heroes of Monster and Demon Clans. Their auras were like the rainbow, their energies fierce and abundant.

It wasn't like when they had entered Shadow Ghostly Prison where only Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te were Incipient God Realm expert. Of course, back then, there were only three Incipient God Realm experts of Monster Clan and Demon Clan. Since they had other important roles, they didn't join the trip to Shadow Ghostly Prison.

It was different today. When they knew Potion and Tool Pavilion had taken the Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Crystal Clan to this place with around thirty thousand warriors, Blood Devil and the others

had to mobilize the experts of their clans.

There were nine Incipient God Realm experts from Monster Clan and Demon Clan including Blood Devil and the other two, and more than ten experts at Ethereal God Realm. Although there were just several hundred warriors who came here this time, they were all from the elite force.

"What happened?" Blood Devil's voice was like a bronze bell that rang. He coldly glared at Gu He, "Congratulations Second Elder for your higher position. However, Potion and Tool Pavilion has never interfered in any important matter of Agate Star Area. After you hold the office, you want to break the rules immediately, don't you?"

Usually, Potion and Tool Pavilion would never participate in any dispute of Agate Star Area. However, they often affected the forces discreetly in the shadows. Everyone knew that.

Gu He took the Ice Clan, Fire Clan, and Crystal Clan here, which meant that they had to sweep off the outsiders from Agate Star Area. However, they had broken the rules of Potion and Tool Pavilion.

As Blood Devil came, he immediately asked Gu He without trying to be nice or polite.

Gu He furrowed his brows. He begrudgingly looked at Shang Chen and didn't say much.

What Sheng Chan said had shaken him hard. He was threatened.

Gu He couldn't help but glance at Shi Yan, his face grimacing more.

He knew that at his position, Shang Chen wouldn't deceive him. What Shang Chen said was all the truth. If he started a war here, his Gu family would be uprooted. He would be killed too. The young man in front of him would be the originator.

Gu He was so worried.

"... Blood Devil," Shang Chen called him quietly.

Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath heard his voice. They were surprised and their bodies shook. They immediately greeted him solemnly. "Great Sage."

They seemed to know Shang Chen better than Gu He. At first glance, they knew Shang Chen's identity. They immediately showed him their respect.

"This dispute ends here. Don't extend it further." Shang Chen sighed and then added, "If you don't want to see Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area fall into the God Clan's control, you must calm down now."

While talking, Shang Chen looked really tired. It seemed like talking was also strenuous for him at this moment.

A wisp of blood mist silently diffused from Shang Chen's God Body. His abundant Qi drained quickly. He did not look good at all. His face gradually paled...

It seemed like an invisible hand was destroying his mind and body at the same time. He could freeze Gu He and hurt Ino in just a blink and no one could recognize his attack. However, he currently didn't have a beam of power to resist. He could only stand and bear the pain.

Shang Chen coughed terribly. A trickle of dark blood oozed from the corner of his mouth. He smiled sadly. Lifting his head to look at the immense horizon, he shivered.

Everybody was frightened. They looked at him, but they didn't know what was happening to him. The ones who could understand the situation had bitter eyes while they felt many waves rising in their hearts.

Blood Devil was shaken. He walked to Shang Chen and prepared to use the Immortal Demon Blood to heal the old man.

"It's useless," Shang Chen waved his hand to stop Blood Devil,

beaming a forced smile. "It's the price that I have to pay. Otherwise, I can't see that spider web of fate or the path to walk..."

Pausing for a while, he tried to look excited. "Don't worry. I'm all right. I've risked my life to stop your battle. I hope you will listen to what I've told you today."

Gu He, Xiao En, Yu Shan, Blood Devil, and the others looked at him and nodded. No one dared to protest.

"Don't fight. Give up the racism. Give up family hatreds and resentment. Let go of the dispute between the two-star areas," Shang Chen looked and talked to them. "The barrier between Agate Star Area and Ancient God Star Area will be forcefully torn in ten years max. When that happens, the great army of God Clan will invade you. I hope you will be well prepared in ten years. Improve the competencies of everyone to the utmost. If you can't defeat the God clan, you will be killed. You will be enslaved."

All warriors of Agate Star Area, Blood Devil, Bath, Gu Te, Gu He, Ino, Miao Rong, Ju Bu, and even the warriors at Incipient God Realm had ashen faces. No one doubted Shang Chen.

Everybody stooped and felt heavy-hearted.

Shang Chen looked at Yu Shan and Xiao En. "It's the right move that you came to find Leona to train your soldiers. In this vast universe, the ones who could face the God Clan are only members of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline. You will have only seven or eight years before the massive operation of the God Clan. They will attack Fiery Rain Star Area with their best power. If you can win in that battle, Fiery Rain Star Area won't need to worry about the God Clan for a long time. You need to hurry and try your best to prepare for that coming battle."

Xiao En and Yu Shan were frightened. They nodded. They believed what Shang Chen had just told them.

Shang Chen coughed, his line of sight falling on Shi Yan. "I was

asked to be here. I want to take you to someplace. Follow me."

"Who asked you to come to see me?" Shi Yan was surprised.

Shang Chen grinned and didn't explain. Four rings suddenly flew out of his sleeve and flew toward Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Benny respectively. "Someone asked me to deliver those rings to you guys. They are pretty useful to your realm and power. I wish for you to reach the perfect state in the future."

He looked at Shi Yan and said, "You don't need to take care of them for a while. They have their own destinies."

Fei Lan, Leona, Ka Tuo, and Benny received the rings. They sensed for a while. Seconds later, their eyes brightened and, their faces were happy.

Apparently, what the rings stored was extremely suitable for them.

"You two," Shang Chen regarded Fei Lan and Leona and smiled, "The ones you want to find have escaped adversity. You don't need to worry about them. They're doing well, though. You will meet them soon."

Fei Lan and Leona were very happy.

Fei Lan's man and Leona's father had left Raging Flame Star Area a long, long time ago. They didn't receive any message from them for such a long time. After they had arrived in Agate Star Area, they knew that the ones they wanted to find used to be confined by the Dark Shadow Clan. However, after leaving the space passage, they didn't find anything.

The two of them were disappointed and worried.

Today, hearing Shang Chen, the two of them had finally eased their minds. They were even happier than receiving the rings.

They both said thanks to Shang Chen. Benny and Ka Tuo also bowed to him with sincere faces.

"No need to thank me," Shang Chen shook his head. "It's I who owes you..."

He immediately turned to Shi Yan and said, "You don't need to worry about them. Come with me. Hurry up."

"To where?"

"I will tell you on the way."

"Alright."

Shi Yan simply confirmed with Shang Chen.

"You gave Potion and Tool Pavilion's Canon to Gu He," said Shang Chen all of a sudden.

"Give it to Gu He?" Shi Yan shook his head and smiled coldly, "He doesn't deserve it."

"It was to Fu Wei. The Canon is destined for her. Today, among the Elders of Potion and Tool Pavilion, only Fu Wei has the capacity to decode the mysteries of the Canon." Shang Chen looked at Gu He and pondered, "Fu Wei is the future of Potion and Tool Pavilion. If she can't decipher the Canon's mysteries, you... will follow the trail of the former Pavilion Masters. Only if Fu Wei can break the mysteries of the Canon can you escape your fatal destiny."

Gu He paled.

The former Pavilion Masters had forged weapons or refined pellets until they had fallen into bedevilment, shattered their bodies, and left only a dying wisp of a soul. They couldn't stand for a long time, though.

It seemed to be related to many secrets in the refining of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Lower realm blacksmiths and alchemists wouldn't meet such a bottleneck. However, when they reach a particular level, they would eventually fall into such a destiny. The previous Pavilion Masters and the oldest elders of the pavilion had

disappeared like that.

Gu He took a deep breath and said with a dispirited face, "I understood."

"It's good that you've understood." Shang Chen nodded. "I just want the best for you. I want you to live longer. Remember to give the Canon to Fu Wi. Otherwise, you will die eventually."

Shang Chen looked at Shi Yan and said, "Give it to him. We are in a hurry. We don't have much time to waste here. Your Great Grandpa... is waiting for you to rescue him."

"My Great Grandpa?" Shi Yan discolored in fright. "How is he?"

"He's too extreme. He has a problem. I've confined him for the time being. The situation is... serious." Shang Chen sighed, "We should talk on the way."

Shi Yan didn't hesitate anymore. He snorted at Gu He and threw him the Canon. "If you still have the Canon the next time I see you, I will take it for the second time. Well, I will take your life with it too."

Gu He discolored. He didn't dare to open his mouth and talk. He just grabbed the Canon with a wince.

After he had listened to Shang Chen's prophecy saying that he would die by Shi Yan's hand if he fought him, Gu He was wary of Shi Yan unknowingly. Facing him, Gu He couldn't help but be restlessly anxious.

Chapter 1088: Soul Rotting Aphids

Shang Chen rushed away. He was here for about one hour before he departed.

However, in one hour, most of the experts of Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area seemed to be under his spell. They had made up their mind to stop the potential battle from happening.

Quickly, all the warriors in that place scattered. Gu He took the Canon and drove his battleships away. Warriors of the Ice Clan, Fire Clan, and Crystal Clan left with him. Ju Bo, Sana, and Zi Yao of the Divine Light discussed for a while and then decided to return to Divine Light's headquarters. They had to start preparing for the fierce war that would come in the future.

Blood Devil, Yu Shan, and Xiao En discussed with the warriors of Fiery Rain Star Area for a while to outline their plans. Leona would arrange and help the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, and Fiery Rain Star Area train their soldiers.

Yu Shan and Xiao En really liked Benny, so they asked Benny to help Fiery Rain Star Area soldiers in training to prepare for the great war in the future.

Shang Chen's words were vague and seemed to be far ahead. However, no one dared to doubt him. They'd deemed his words as the truth and the basis for their plans and strategies.

The Fate Traveler, Shang Chen, stood as the mysterious prophet who had operated for many years in Agate Star Area. None of his prophecies were wrong.

Rumors said that when Shang Chen was just a little boy, he could vaguely see the past and future of people. For a long time, Shang Chen had earned a living as a fortune-teller. One day, he could all of a sudden predict the future. Gradually, he had become famous and got the wonderful power Upanishad to understand fate.

Several thousand years had passed and the name of Shang Chen had been spread out between the top strong forces. Experts who knew his talents would consider him the life coach to consult.

Shang Chen didn't fail them. He had solved many disasters that could have eradicated the entire Agate Star Area. He had kept Agate Star Area safe through many perilous periods.

Because of Shang Chen, the blood war to come had to stop before it actually took place. Gu He left with the warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion. Forces of the Divine Light and Fighting League also left the planet. Afterward, Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te also returned to their places through the Child Formation.

Leona stayed in Cloud Sea Star. Together with Benny, they helped Fiery Rain Star Area experts train their troops. Cloud Sea Star resumed its tranquility.

Inside the deep and dark sea of stars, two figures flashed and disappeared like meteors.

They had left Shadow Ghostly Prison and went pretty far. In Agate Galaxy, they traveled like two shuttles. The space nodes around them had fierce commotions as they continually swayed through the spaces. They disappeared shortly after into a space slit and reappeared in another area.

Today, the two of them arrived at the edge of Agate Star Area, an area of floating, dead stars.

They landed on a desolate dead star with many rough caves. This dead star had no earth and heaven energy or living being energy waves. It was so cold and quiet.

"Swoosh!" Shi Yan landed on the ground and was sweating, "Are we there yet? You always urge me to use the Space power Upanishad to go through the space nodes and teleport on a small scale, but you didn't tell me about the situation yet. Did you know

that moving continually like that will consume my soul energy by a lot?"

Apparently, his condition wasn't good.

After they had left Cloud Sea Star, Shang Chen continually urged him and showed him the direction so he could use the Space power Upanishad to teleport.

Shi Yan had to consume his energy constantly. After many times, he was almost exhausted. Currently, he had consumed 70% or even 80% energy in this body.

Each time he teleported, he could cross several life stars, which was around billions of miles. If he hadn't reached Ethereal God Realm, he would be exhausted already.

During this journey, Shang Chen didn't say a word. He wore a heavy-hearted face and pondered, He didn't react to Shi Yan's question, which made Shi Yan more suspicious. Shi Yan burst out eventually.

Shang Chen still had a solemn countenance, but his eyes were much better. He suddenly smiled and turned his head to see Shi Yan, "I found the right one, indeed. With First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base, you could teleport eleven times. Each time, we are traveling billions of miles. The power you have in your body is really extraordinary."

"I gave up everything to go with you. I'm not here to listen to your compliments." Shi Yan was hurried. "How is my Great Grandfather?"

Shang Chen pondered for a while and then said, "You should see it first."

A light blue halo expanded from his palm and rippled like water waves. Slowly, it projected some images.

A massive blue ice crystal emerged. This crystal was blurry and sparkling with a chill-to-the-bone cold air. It confined a tall and

thin body. That person seemed to have his body's functions and soul confined and frozen.

"That's my Great Grandpa!" Shi Yan hissed coldly.

"Take a closer look." Shang Chen sighed. The blue light in his palm changed again. The blue crystal zoomed bigger.

Yang Tian Emperor was inside the ice crystal and it became clearer. Shi Yan could see that his entire body was bleeding with many cuts. He looked like a person when a beast had used its claws to scratch him. Some scratches were so deep that Shi Yan could even see his bones. It was because of the distance and the ice crystal that Shi Yan didn't recognize his situation at first glance.

At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor's God Body was magnified several times. Shi Yan could see the wounds stretch over his body like many deep ditches that even reached his skeleton.

There were hundreds of scratches expanding and crossing each other all over his body.

Shi Yan's face looked like he had a layer of frost covering it. However, his voice was extremely calm. "Who did that?"

Shang Chen maintained his hand's position. He looked at him naturally and calmly. "He did that to himself."

Shi Yan trembled. The murderous aura in Shi Yan's eyes was like an evil dragon turning its body. "He did that? You're telling me that he did that to himself?"

Heavy murderous aura!

Shang Chen was shaken. He knitted his brows and sighed. He's worth being the heir of that bloodline.

"It's true that he did that to himself. You keep watching." Shang Chen spurted a silver electric beam that seeped into the image in front of them. He magnified Yang Tian Emperor's image several times. Now, Yang Tian Emperor looked like a giant who could

shade the entire sky with his mountain-like body.

Inside his deep eyes were strange lights. Shi Yan could feel some strange but fierce energy fluctuations in his brain.

Shi Yan suddenly closed his eyes. A wisp of Soul Consciousness flew out and tried to sense something.

After a while, he was shaken. He opened his eyes, which were filled with fear. "What are those tiny creatures in his soul altar and in his brains?!?"

He could feel clearly hundreds of thousands of little creatures inside Yang Tian Emperor's brain and soul altar. Those creatures were very small so he could only sense them with his soul. However, they were so evil and strange with cold Qi and were filling Yang Tian Emperor's head.

Shang Chen balled his fingers into a fist. Yang Tian Emperor's image disappeared. "Yang Tian Emperor has been in Evil North Zone of Agate Star Area for many years. He received the profound inheritance of the Despair power Upanishad. He consistently challenged the local experts. In that way, he increased his realm and power stably and rapidly. Every time, he always challenged the expert whose realm higher was than his. He defeated them in the end. It was the mystery and yet essential feature of Despair power Upanishad. He has comprehended its essence...

"The last expert he had challenged in the North Zone had a rare evil treasure, which contained a significant amount of those creatures. Before he died, he had released them to erode Yang Tian Emperor's body and soul. He immediately fell into a bedevilment status. He lost control of his soul and consciousness. He crazily scratched his body like that. He had almost destroyed his God Body.

"This creature is called Soul Rotting Aphis. It's a kind of micro demonic insect. Those aphids can gnaw the brain and reproduce. They can invade people's thoughts and distort the Sea of

Consciousness and soul altar. They will make people crazy and lose themselves."

Pausing for a while, Shang Chen continued, "Yang Tian Emperor has the Soul Rotting Aphids in his brain. He lost his mind shortly after. He has fallen into bedevilment. He has destroyed his body. I've used the blue ice crystal of the extremely cold North Zone to stop him and the aphids in his brain. In that confinement, we can preserve him well."

"I can use heaven flames to refine those insects or worms," said Shi Yan.

Shang Chen shook his head and said casually, "We can't use that method. Heaven flames could burn the Soul Rotting Aphids, but they could also burn Yang Tian Emperor's soul. Those demonic insects have blended with his Soul Consciousness and brain. At this moment, they are one. If you burn the Soul Rotting Aphids, Yang Tian Emperor would be killed too."

Listening to him, Shi Yan frowned, "Do you have any method?"

"Of course, I have a method," Shang Chen nodded. "We need you to do that. Follow me first. When we get there, I will tell you the details."

Shang Chen touched the ground under his feet. A strange noise echoed from deep inside the ground of this barren dead star. It seemed like he had just activated some mechanism.

He nodded to Shi Yan and then plunged down to the dark cave that had just cracked under their feet. He entered the dead star directly.

Hesitating for a while, Shi Yan jumped into that cave and entered the dead star.

After fifteen minutes.

Shi Yan saw Shang Chen stand on a high triangle tower. That tower was made of Empty Fantasy Crystal. It had so many

exquisite and complicated light beams crossing each other. Obviously, it was a magical Teleport Formation.

Underneath the Teleport Formation were many top quality divine crystals, which contained an enormous amount of earth and heaven energy. This kind of energy was so thick that it was almost like water. When it rose, it was like the water of a dreamy lake and it made people feel awed.

At a first glance, he knew how complicated this Teleport Formation was. It was much more exquisite than the Child Formation that he had refined.

"Where does it connect?" Standing bewildered for a while, Shi Yan asked.

"We should leave Agate Star Area first," smiled Shang Chen.

"It... This Teleport Formation could cross star areas?" Shi Yan discolored in fright.

Shang Chen nodded, "In our Agate Star Area, this is the only profound Space Teleport Formation that can cross the space border. I've been watching this place for so many years."

Chapter 1089: Desolate

In the center of an energy sea that looked more like a lake, dazzling lights shot out, weaving into a complex formation.

A fierce wave of energy triggered.

Shi Yan and Shang Chen glowed like blinding crystals. They disappeared in the brilliant light. Both of their bodies and souls were teleported. They disappeared from this dead star.

Boom! Boom!

Explosions echoed unceasingly inside the dead star. The cave that had been cracked slowly closed. The marvelous space formation didn't have energy waves anymore. The top-quality divine crystals with abundant energy had lost the energy after they were activated. Now, they looked like dull, ordinary stones that were inlaid in the formation.

No energy waves anymore.

Inside the thick fog, Shang Chen and Shi Yan were like two shining beams moving forward.

This kind of mist had magical powers, which could separate the Soul Consciousness. In this area, Shi Yan couldn't sense his surroundings. He felt blind with his eyes open.

Obviously, it wasn't the first time Shang Chen had come here. In this thick mist, he continually gave Shi Yan direction and guided him to move forward.

"Did we leave Agate Star Area?" Shi Yan was baffled.

In that great Space Teleport Formation, Shi Yan felt like his soul and body were separated. He felt so dizzy. When he woke up, he found himself in this place.

However, he didn't see the same Teleport Formation here, which

made him astounded.

Usually, the Teleport Formation couldn't teleport one way. It required another Teleport Formation in the destination to connect the route and teleport people or things.

However, when he woke up, he saw himself in the thick mist without another Teleport Formation. He was so surprised.

"It's true. We aren't in Agate Star Area anymore." Shang Chen nodded and said, "We are in the peripheral area of another star area. It's called Fantasy Mist Star Area, which is adjacent to Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area. It's not really far from the place we have just left..."

Shang Chen looked ahead of them, his body releasing magical energy fluctuations that could clear the mist in front of them. He focused and didn't say much to Shi Yan.

"Why did you take me here?" Shi Yan frowned.

"Someone asked me to do so."

"Who asked you?"

"One of the undying bastards of your Bloodthirsty's bloodline! I owed him one. I've promised him so today, I fulfilled his wish."

"Who is that precursor?"

"Frederick!" Shang Chen said through his gritted teeth.

Shi Yan was baffled. He thought and then shook his head. "I've never heard of him before."

Shang Chen turned his head to look at Shi Yan and the Blood Vein Ring on his finger. He spoke faintly, "Hasn't it told you anything?"

"Its memory isn't complete." Shi Yan answered honestly. He recognized his intention immediately and asked, "Can you tell me more? The story related to the ring and the descendants of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline? Can you tell me the secrets you know?"

Shang Chen pondered for a while and then shook his head, "I don't know. You'd better wait until the ring gathers its memory fully. It will tell you then. I'm not from your bloodline. I don't know many secrets of yours. If I tell you something, it's just the surface of the matter. I may disturb those bastards' arrangement... It's not gonna be okay then."

"Those... bastards? Who are you referring to?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He asked excitedly, "Some precursors of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline are still alive? How many of them?"

He always thought that the precursors of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline were all dead. The only one who was still alive was the one who cultivated Death power Upanishad. But he still didn't have many clues related to that man. Would that Frederick... be his name?

"How could they die easily?!" Shang Chen pouted his lips, his face awkward. "You've underestimated their tenacious vitalities."

"Can you tell me which power Upanishad Frederick cultivates?" Shi Yan asked earnestly.

Until now, Shi Yan had known five out of eight inheritances of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline, which included Death, Erosion, Darkness, Chaos, and Destruction. He didn't know about the other three. As Shang Chen mentioned them, of course, Shi Yan had to know them.

"Frederick is a member of the Corpse Clan. Of course, he cultivates the Corpse power," said Shang Chen casually.

"Corpse... Corpse power?" Shi Yan's face became odd. "Corpse power is one of the Great Eight Inheritances?"

"Of course," Shang Chen's face was also odd. "You don't even know about the Great Eight Inheritances?"

Shi Yan felt so ashamed. He beamed a forced smile. "Until now, I've known only five Powers Upanishads including Death, Erosion,

Darkness, Chaos, and Destruction. Now I know about the Corpse power. I don't know the other two."

"The Despair power Upanishad that your Great Grandfather is cultivating is also one of them. This kind of power Upanishad requires a lucky encounter and innate endowment to enter. There's no inheritance that could get them into this cultivation path. Your Great Grandfather is so stubborn. But it's what helped him understand the truth of Despair power Upanishad. Oh, right. Agate Star Area used to have a peerless expert who inherited the Despair power Upanishad from your Bloodthirsty's bloodline. Your Great Grandfather could sense the energy of Despair power Upanishad. That's why he came to the North Zone to look for something. Now he has a profound knowledge of that man," explained Shang Chen.

Shi Yan had divine light shining on his face. "Oh, it turns out that the Despair power Upanishad is one of the Great Eight Inheritance!"

"The last Inheritance is called Soul Driving. It's an evil secret soul technique, which is much profound than that amateur Ino." Shang Chen was still frightened as he mentioned that man, "Your precursor who has mastered Soul Driving power is the most mysterious man in this universe. Besides the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight, no one knows his real identity. Rumors say that he doesn't have a body. He's just a wisp of a soul wandering around the big star area. He has driven many experts into the dark. The soul of those experts became part of him. He turned them into puppets that he could control."

Taking a deep breath, Shang Chen looked aghast. "The force he controls is so dominating. He's the big brother of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. He's the most dangerous and mysterious expert. He's the archenemy that all twelve families of the God Clan want to kill. The twelve families of the God Clan have spent their strong armies with countless efforts and time, but they couldn't figure out

his real identity or his whereabouts."

Shang Chen seemed to be wary of that person who had mastered the Soul Driving technique. When he talked about that expert, his face also changed.

"Haven't you mastered the Fate power Upanishad? Even you don't know his real identity?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"The Fate power Upanishad isn't something like you imagine. Quite the contrary, the more you've comprehended it, the more complicated fate means to you." Shang Chen sighed and mumbled, "The deeper I learn about it, the more helpless I've become when I couldn't do anything to turn things around. The spider web of fate is so complicated. I can only have glimpses of it..."

"So, how many people of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline that you know are still alive?" pondering for a while, Shi Yan asked.

"There are at least three out of eight members of the Bloodthirsty's entourage. Frederick cultivates Corpse power. Xuan He cultivates Death power Upanishad. And the one who cultivates Soul Driving power. No one knows his real name. Besides them, there are some more possibly living in different corners of this vast universe..." said Shang Chen.

"So the Bloodthirsty's bloodline doesn't have only eight people?" Shi Yan was astounded.

"You're so ignorant that it's funny." Shang Chen explained with an odd face. "The Great Eight Inheritances of Bloodthirsty have their fruits everywhere. Of course, there aren't only eight people. The Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight are the eight leaders of the Eight Great Inheritances. Although there aren't many people who cultivate the eight great powers, it's not only eight of them in this universe. However, after that war with the God Clan, almost all members of the Great Eight Inheritances were killed. The eight members of the entourage were also damaged badly. Some disappeared..."

"How mysterious or special is the Master of the Bloodthirsty?" Shi Yan asked, "It seems like my inheritance comes from him..."

"Him? I'm not qualified to talk about him." Shang Chen changed his face in fear. He immediately closed his mouth, his panic-stricken eyes glancing at the Blood Vein Ring on Shi Yan's finger. Pondering for a while, he said, "Wait until the Ring Spirit has restored its memory. Then, you can ask it. I don't dare to say anything related to him."

After that, no matter what Shi Yan tried to ask him, Shang Chen remained silent. He didn't say anything while wearing a bizarre countenance.

After a long time drilling through the thick mist, Shi Yan's eyes brightened as he screamed. "There's a life star!"

A beautiful sky star was inside the thick mist. It radiated a fierce halo that looked like an electric arc that covered everywhere. It was a still planet as it was moving with energy that could destroy everything.

Under the magnificent halo of the star, Shi Yan found many mineral stars and dead stars surrounding that blue-sky star. However, while the star was moving, it often impacted and crushed the dead stars and mineral stars standing in its way as easily as breaking dried tree branches. Those mineral stars and dead stars turned into smaller meteors that fell extremely quickly.

That blue sky star was very massive. It was much bigger than any star Shi Yan had seen. His Soul Consciousness couldn't cover the entire star and those electric arc layers had sealed the whole planet.

The blue-sky star was maneuvering with an earth-shaking energy fluctuation. It was much faster than the speedy battleships

Shang Chen screamed excitedly. "Finally found it!"

Shi Yan was scared. "The destination you said is this life star?"

Shang Chen nodded and said, "I've agreed with Frederick to bring you there. I went to Agate Star Area to find you and arrange for you to access that life star."

"Access that life star?" Shi Yan was surprised. "Why do I have to go here?"

"The thing that could cure your Great Grandfather is in this planet. Besides, it has more magical things. Frederick wanted you to go there for something better for you." Shang Chen looked so bitter and regretful when he took out a blue-sky fruit which looked similar to that life star. "I have to exert a lot of effort to have this "Guiding Fruit." Oh never mind. The favor I owed your Bloodthirsty's bloodline could be paid off with this though."

"Can you give more details?" Shi Yan was a little annoyed.

"This life star is called "Desolate." It's an ancient continent. In this vast universe, there are only five ancient continents. This "Desolate" is one of them, but it isn't similar to any other ancient continent. "Desolate" doesn't give birth to any creature. It only bears precious and rare Original Incipient Grade herbs and other materials. It will open every ten thousand years for ten years. Yeah, you know the ancient continents have the Origin. The Origin somehow has cognition. You can consider "Desolate" a life star with cognition. Only the "Guiding Fruit" growing in "Desolate" can let you in. Here... it's for you."

Shang Chen explained and then handed Shi Yan that strange fruit.

Chapter 1090: Outstanding Talents

The Guiding Fruit was as big as a walnut. It had a strange blue hue with many strange patterns on it. Strange energy was surging inside that fruit, which was someone resonating with the ancient continent called "Desolate." With a close look, Shi Yan could see that the patterns on the Guiding Fruit were releasing the clear blue light.

Shang Chen threw the Guiding Fruit to Shi Yan, his face bitter and regretful. "The Guiding Fruits are scarce. People got it from the previous time that the ancient continent opened. It's called the Key of Desolate. You can use it to enter "Desolate." I have fulfilled my promise to Frederick."

The Guiding Fruit felt a little cold in Shi Yan's hand. Still furrowing his brows, Shi Yan didn't understand Shang Chen's intention. "I don't get it."

"Okay, it's like this," Shang Chen looked at the ancient continent called Desolate in front of them. His eyes sparkled with divine light, "Desolate has many secrets. It also has the most magical, wonderful herbs and stones. Most of them are at Original Incipient Grade, which is most suitable for refining weapons and pellets. In this vast sea of stars, you can consider Desolate an undiscovered treasure house."

"What does it matter to the Soul Rotting Aphides inside my Great Grandfather?" Shi Yan tightened his fingers around the rigid fruits and asked, "Why does Frederick want me to get in there?"

"There's something that could wash the Soul Rotting Aphides in your Great Grandfather's brain. That thing is rare and hard to find. It's in the ancient continent."

Shang Chen pointed at Desolate and said, "That thing is called Seven-colored Demonic Flower. It looks like a beautiful girl's face. It can cry or smile, and yes, it has cognition. It can poison a

person's mind. That flower is an Original Incipient Grade herb. It's the most precious tonic to refine many soul spells and charms."

Pausing for a while, Shang Chen continued, "And I don't know why Frederick wants you to get in there. But I think that people who get the Guiding Fruit would risk their lives to get into that continent."

"Because of those rare treasures of earth and heaven?" asked Shi Yan.

"Nah, it's only one reason," Shang Chen smiled and said, "Desolate is an ancient continent. It has cognition! Right from the beginning, it has sealed itself and kept wandering around the significant star areas. It opens every ten thousand years. Besides giving birth to the earth and heaven precious treasures, there are more mysterious areas in the center of Desolate because it has maintained the primal status since the beginning. The other ancient continents have exhausted their energy to produce creatures. Gradually, they became just like other typical life stars.

"But Desolate is different! It has never given birth to creatures. Earth and heaven energy in that continent is still at its thickest level. There's something marvelous of the primal time. However, only those who can get in there could understand... As far as I know, experts of the great star areas who returned alive from Desolate always had a harvest. Their realm breaking speeds would increase unimaginably."

Shi Yan was bewildered. He asked, "Experts from other star areas could get in that continent too? What's the realm breaking you've mentioned?"

"Of course the experts of the other star areas would come here!" Shang Chen's face was calm. "As far as I know, this time, there should be dozens of warriors entering the ancient planet. They're all outstanding talents of the big star area. Their powers are astounding. Just like you, they even have the ability to challenge

warriors at a higher realm."

Pausing for a while, Shang Chen said earnestly, "The breaking I've mentioned is about your powers Upanishads. I heard that warriors could fuse different powers Upanishads in Desolate. I think Frederick wants you to come here because of this feature. Your powers Upanishads are many, which holds you down. Desolate... is extremely suitable for you."

Shi Yan pondered for a while and then said, "Is it true that anybody with the Guiding Fruit could enter Desolate?"

"No," Shang Chen shook his head, "Desolate will resist and expel Incipient God Realm experts. Since the Incipient God Realm experts' energy is too abundant, it would damage Desolate's structure. Thus, Incipient God Realm experts wouldn't be able to get in there. Only warriors like you, the outstanding warriors at Ethereal God Realm can access that continent. You will meet plenty of Ethereal God Realm experts from different star areas, not only Fantasy Mist Star Area. There will be experts from many star areas including the God Clan experts..."

"Will there be fighting?" asked Shi Yan seriously.

"It's not 'will.' Battle happens every minute in the most furious and bloodies way. The Original Incipient Grade materials and marvelous regions that cultivate different power Upanishads can make people crazy. Right at the moment you get in there, you will have to face the strongest Ethereal God Realm experts in this universe. Since you are at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, haha, you must be more careful, boy."

While talking, a book flew out of Shang Chen's sleeves. As it was flipping in the wind, Shi Yan could see figures and drawings on each page, including grass, flower, stones, wood materials, and more. All looked lively as if they were real samples. Shi Yan could see the tiny descriptions too.

"Here, take this book. It contains the drawings of the Original

Incipient Grade materials that I've studied. You will need it in Desolate."

Shi Yan didn't pretend to be too polite. He reached for the book and bowed to thank the old man.

"I told you what I had to tell you," Shang Chen rubbed his chin, which didn't have a beard. He swung his hand generously, "You should go. Just hold the Guiding Fruit in your hand. When you go near Desolate, something will happen. I don't need to tell you more. I've remembered your soul energy fluctuation. Ten years later, I will come and find you to help you complete your tasks."

After Shang Chen said that, he turned around and left quickly as if he was afraid to meet someone here.

In just a blink of an eye, he disappeared from Shi Yan's line of sight. His aura was also concealed. No matter how hard Shi Yan tried, he couldn't track him down.

The ancient continent named Desolate was still barging into other stars and crushing the stars standing in its way. Sparks of broken stars exploded like the most dazzling fireworks. It was still moving around in the area of thick mist.

Shi Yan observed closer. He found that Desolate was slowing down as if it knew what it was doing.

Although Desolate was moving fast, Shi Yan wasn't afraid that he would get ditched behind as he had cultivated Space power Upanishad. It wouldn't be a big problem to chase after Desolate. Thus, Shi Yan wasn't hurried.

Suddenly, his soul had a vibe as he felt three auras approaching him.

The vitality waves of those three auras were abundant with a lot of Blood Qi. Shi Yan could feel one of them was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm.

He couldn't know Shang Chen's realm because of his magical

power Upanishad. However, he vaguely guessed that Shang Chen was at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm. He was likely one of the true peerless experts of this universe.

Three blasts sweeping over like rainbows or three lightning strikes. Shortly after, three people appeared right at the location where Shang Chen had just disappeared.

A married woman in her forties with an appearance of someone who had experienced hardships in her life emerged. She wore a dark blue brocade garment with a jade ornamented belt that marked her beautiful contours. Although her gait was graceful, her face was full of rage. As soon as she arrived, she thundered, "Old bastard! Bring your ass here!"

Standing by the woman were one young lady and one young man who looked pretty similar to Shang Chen. The young man looked really dashing. He was wearing a silver robe. He was fast and had great manners, but his face was so cold.

The young woman was slender and was wearing a light blue dress. She had a water blue vest over her dress that showcased her two white, jade-like arms. Her moonlight arms were decorated with many colorful jade rings. She also wore a crescent moon emerald necklace that dangled above her ample bosom, which supported her charming figure.

The young woman had a lagoon belt on her waist, which was as small as a hand and as delicate as a snake.

The middle-aged woman brought a young man and a girl to this area, right when Shang Chen had just left. She ground her teeth.

"That damn old bastard! I'd risked my life to take the Guiding Fruit for our children and you stole one. Tell me, is that how you do your parenting role?" The matured woman looked here and there. She spoke through her gritted teeth, "Get your ass down here for me!"

The young man and lady were also cold. They harshly looked around.

It was too bad that Shang Chen had left earlier.

The three of them released their Soul Consciousness to search for him for a while. The married woman had shouted for a while but they didn't see any commotion of Shang Chen. After a long time, they gave up.

The woman glanced and her line of sight fell on Shi Yan. She struggled in her mind for a while and then said to him all of a sudden, "That old bastard handed something to you. I know it. I know the aura of the Guiding Fruit because I found them, two of them."

She turned her head, looking lovingly at the man and the girl behind her. Taking a deep breath, she said, "Please return it to us. I've prepared the fruits for my son and daughter. Shang Chen that bastard, has stolen one from me."

Pausing for a while, she said resentfully. "I don't care what he has promised other people. I don't mind what earth-shaking favor he owes them. Nevertheless, this Guiding Fruit belongs to me. He has stolen it from me. Please return it to me!"

The young man and the lady focused on Shi Yan. "Friend, you've reached First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Even if you can get into Desolate with Guiding Fruit, you can't survive for ten years there. You should know reality and return the fruit to us. I'm sure we won't mistreat you. We will find another chance to repay the favor that my father owes you guys. What do you think?" The young man was calm. He spoke with great manners. The way he treated people looked pretty similar to Shang Chen's.

At the same time, the slender girl in blue took after her mother. Her swan-egg-shaped face was mesmerizingly beautiful. However, she had a cold and clear voice, "Please return our thing to its owner. Otherwise, we will not be afraid to take it back with force."

"Don't be wanton!" The young man shouted at her. "He has some relationship with Father. Our Father has taken risks to cause a grudge with us to give him the fruit. He has his reasoning that we don't know. We don't want to trouble him too much though."

"Don't mind that heartless bastard. He deserves his ten thousand deaths sentence as he doesn't care about his children's futures!" The woman was so enraged. It looked like she didn't want to waste her saliva talking about her husband. "Boy, please give it back to us. We really don't want to trouble you."

"I'm sorry. This Guiding Fruit is very important to me. It's related to my beloved one's death or life. I... I can't give it back to you."

Shi Yan bent his body slightly and sighed.

A dazzling space slit cracked behind his back. He clasped his hands towards the three and stepped backward, disappeared into the space slit. When he reappeared, he was at the outer layer of Desolate already.

Chapter 1091: Ancient Continent

"Space power Upanishad!"

The matured woman screamed in fear. She could only watch Shi Yan disappear and reappear by the outer layer of Desolate in a blink of an eye. She couldn't do anything.

She was so annoyed.

At her realm, she could know Shi Yan's true realm with only a glance, but she couldn't know which powers Upanishad he was cultivating. Thus, she couldn't predict that Shi Yan had Space power Upanishad.

Seeing Shi Yan escape using his Space power Upanishad, she understood immediately. She knew why Shi Yan had been calm when he met them.

"Mother!" the slender but graceful girl changed her visage.

The young man also had a regretful face. He sighed begrudgingly and shook his head. "Father must know the power Upanishad he cultivates. That's why he could leave him here unguarded."

As the three of them were ready to attack Shi Yan, they had even mobilized their energy. On the one hand, they wanted to take the Guiding Fruit back. On the other hand, they wanted to make Shang Chen show himself. When Shi Yan had successfully escaped, they knew Shang Chen had left a long time ago.

"That cowardly bastard!" The matured woman gritted her teeth. She looked so angry that her eyes were raging with flames.

The young man calmed down quickly. "He's entering Desolate. We can't take the Guiding Fruit back. Yeah, we can't always get what we want. We need to alter the plan, though."

"Little Qiu (*), do you have any good solution?" The woman sighed begrudgingly.

(*) 虬: Young dragon with horns

The young man shook his head. "I don't have any good solution. Anyway, we can enter Desolate with the Guiding Fruit. No one could break this rule for many years. Of course, we can't, either."

He suddenly smiled and said gently, "Honestly, I'm not interested in entering Desolate."

"Ge!" yelled the girl.

Waving his hand, the young man stopped her screaming. He naturally took out a Guiding Fruit from his sleeve and shoved it into her hand. "Little Yue, you go there. I'm here waiting for your good news."

"No!" The girl shook her head, her neck reddening. She screamed, "Father took my Guiding Fruit. It means he favors you more than me. You know he has keen eyes. This trip is crucial to you. You must take the chance!"

"Nah, he just took it randomly. It was easier to take your fruit. You are overthinking it." The young man smiled brightly and relaxedly, "I can reach Incipient God Realm without entering Desolate. You need to fuse the powers Upanishad. You must get in there shortly."

After the young man said that, he didn't let the girl talk more. He swayed his body and moved away like a beam of light. After several flashes, he disappeared.

"Just keep it as Little Qiu gave it to you." The woman lovingly adjusted the hem of the girl's dress. She said tenderly, "Go and bring us a surprise ten years later. Find your brother the materials he needs. I believe you can do it."

The beautiful eyes of the girl were complicated as she nodded and answered gently, "I understand."

She bent her waist slightly and said seriously, "Take care, Mother, and gege."

"Good girl. We will be alright. Your evil Father can calculate things well. He will appear if something happens to us," the woman consoled the girl.

"Yes, Mother."

The young girl nodded and bid farewell to her mother. She flew like a gust of wind towards Desolate. The rings on her white wrist flashed. The exquisite patterns on them emerged beautifully.

It happened as what Shang Chen had told Shi Yan. He didn't need to do anything to enter Desolate. The Guiding Fruit in his hand was the key.

When he approached the edge of Desolate and sensed the earth-shattering energy inside, Shi Yan felt an explosion in his soul. He was shaken hard. It was the masterpiece of God and the power of Nature. The torrential energy hiding in Desolate was thicker and more powerful than that of an expert he knew.

Shi Yan immediately felt overwhelmed. His soul flickered anxiously as he couldn't approach further.

However, the Guiding Fruit exploded and made blue halos cover his entire Body and protect his soul altar. Shi Yan fell calm.

He didn't even move. An unknown force started to pull him into the atmosphere while the electric arc that could kill the soul covering the planet ignored him and let him pass through.

While he had almost entered Desolate, he saw an Incipient God Realm expert trying to break into the planet at a corner pretty far from him. The electric arc stopped him and attacked his soul. The Incipient God Realm expert immediately got hurt. He had to use some soul class secret treasure to get rid of the attack.

Shi Yan also saw many blurry blue shadows like him from other areas of Desolate. They were slowly guided by Desolate and they moved through the atmosphere.

After he had passed the atmosphere of Desolate, he had a wonderful feeling as if he had just jumped into the water. He felt floaty as he slowly sank.

All of a sudden, he became a shooting star that plunged through layers of cotton clouds and a sparking electric passage. He grumbly landed. However, before he hit the ground hard, he hurried to urge his energy. The Immortal Demon Blood burst out, which held him backward.

Shi Yan landed inside a vast bog. This wet, muddy area had countless plants and foliage. The energy here was so thick that it was like a murmuring stream moving above his head. With a deep breath, Shi Yan felt so wonderful as if the pores in his body were all relaxed. It was a marvelous experience, indeed.

Shi Yan was shaken, standing idly and perplexedly. He felt like he had an explosion in his head.

Earth and heaven energy were so thick that it was almost like water spreading everywhere. Even though Shi Yan didn't do anything, energy still flowed into his chest and seeped through his skin, following his veins to fill his Essence Qi Ancient Tree. It felt like soaking in a warm spring to wash his dirty body. Even his soul was clear.

Ancient continent! Worth the name of the ancient continent!

Shi Yan was surprised. He furrowed his brows and touched his forehead instinctively. Shortly after, his eyes brightened up.

His co-soul has some changes!

Shi Yan's co-soul was Grace Mainland's Origin, which was the ten heaven flames combined with a wisp of his soul. Now, his co-soul was like a sweet stream gushing out the remaining energy that it had gathered from outer space, which poured into this Ethereal Extent.

In this area, his co-soul seemed to be able to guide the energy of

outer space into his body. At the same time, it felt so relaxed and safe.

Shi Yan's co-soul was Grace Mainland's Origin and Grace Mainland was also an ancient continent. In this area, his co-soul seemed to harvest big benefits as it could guide a lot of free energy into this body.

Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to check and found his co-soul wrapped in wisps of creamy white mist, which were drawn from the energy around him. It congregated in his head and covered his co-soul. The co-soul was washed once again and it gave him a magical feeling of something crystal clear and clean.

He suddenly recognized the incredible benefit that this place had offered his co-soul and Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan stood still in the swamp where he was surrounded by thick energy and many strange pieces of herbs and foliage. Shi Yan didn't want to move yet.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan was trying to sense the commotion around him. Suddenly, his Sea of Consciousness became chaotic as if some invisible force had just affected his mind. It was almost impossible to sense the surroundings using Soul Consciousness. When he tried to fly away, a strong gravity was suddenly applied at his spot which pulled him back and prevented him from flying up to the sky.

"Desolate" has cognition... it's sealed itself and will open every ten thousand years... You can escape after ten years...

What Shang Chen had told him about the magical features of this area suddenly emerged in his head. Shi Yan was astounded. He lifted his hand to walk and put aside the thought of flying away. Surprisingly, the intense gravity that had just pulled him down didn't exist!

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. Now he could confirm what Shang

Chen had told him. This area was truly marvelous. And he realized that the earth under his feet indeed had its consciousness. This planet was truly a fantastic existence in this universe that stood for something mysterious that no one knew about

Shi Yan stood at his spot and took out the book that Shang Chen had given him to study the drawings and descriptions that Shang Chen had prepared.

Shang Chen wrote this thin book himself. Shi Yan admired his style of calligraphy and the realistic drawings. Those pictures seemed to be able to emerge from the pages. The content of this book contained descriptions of Original Incipient Grade materials and how to find and distinguish them. It was useful with the drawings and description as the readers could have a deep understanding of those wonderful materials.

Shi Yan quieted down. He temporarily put aside the mysteries of this ancient continent to focus on the book.

Shang Chen wasn't just operating in Agate Star Area. He was the Fate Traveler and he seemed to travel through many strange star areas. His knowledge was broad and profound. The descriptions he wrote in the book were clear and easy to understand, which gave Shi Yan big benefits.

Without this book, even if he saw the most precious thing on this ancient continent, he could never know it and waste his rare chance.

With this book, he had a tool that could give him explanations at any time. This book was precious to him to distinguish something priceless.

Bam!

While he was reading the book earnestly, a low explosion came from afar with an angry scream.

Frowning, he stashed the book. Thinking for a while, he silently

dashed towards the source of the noise.

The sound he had just heard came from Shang Chen's daughter...

She was the elegant woman who wasn't good to him while they were out there. The two Guiding Fruits they had should have something in common, which guided her near him. Shi Yan was worried that something unexpected happened to that girl so he came to see if he could help.

Anyway, the Guiding Fruit that got him here came from them. Although Shang Chen had given him the fruit himself, Shi Yan still felt shameful. Moreover, she was Shang Chen's daughter. For Shang Chen, he couldn't stand still when his daughter got into trouble.

However, things didn't go as he thought.

When he arrived quietly, he saw that the young woman had fallen into a small, clear pond. She was soaking wet and her damp clothes were sticking on her generous contours. At this moment, she was rubbing her beautiful rear end gracelessly. She murmured in pain. Evidently, she got a rough landing.

The robe that covered her beautiful curvy butts was wet, which made her more mesmerizing than ever. The contour of that wonderful butt cheek was breathtaking. Seeing her soft hand rubbing it, it looked pretty flexible. The bouncing cheek almost made Shi Yan's nose bleed.

Standing and looking at her from a far distance, Shi Yan thought that he should leave quietly before he recognized her sharp-blade look that would drill into his eyes and lock him down.

"Little bastard!"

The young woman cursed indignantly. She didn't notice her gentle curves were revealed. She violently dashed forward and raised fierce thunderbolts in the sky.

Chapter 1092: Refine Blood

The sky above the pond was covered with lightning. Electric arcs weaved like a light net that snatched over Shi Yan.

In the grumbling thunder like an avalanche, the young woman gritted her white teeth, her elegant face cold. Savage electric dragons swirled around her body with an intimidating aura, her narrow eyes shooting electric beams.

Shi Yan was frightened!

That woman was at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm. She seemed to cultivate both Lightning and Ice powers Upanishads. She had exquisite attainment of both powers Upanishad. The moment the lightning strikes swarmed over Shi Yan, a sleet shower also started to fall from the sky. The rocks that were the size of a human head fell massively and rolled with power and icy energy.

At that moment, the temperature of the surroundings was reduced dozens of times. After the lightning strikes hit the pond, it was damaged severely. Dirty water splashed on exploded foliage.

Apparently, the woman thought he was peeping at her. She was so angry that her face turned purple. Her attacks could rise strong waves and gusts of wind from the surroundings. Her fiercely scorching lightning had stirred the entire area and left nothing in peace.

While lightning strikes and sleet were attacking everywhere, Shi Yan retreated like a ghost, flashing on and off.

Brilliant starlight dots sparkled around Shi Yan. They made his way, his trajectory in the sea of stars, moving him at fast speed. He ran so fast that even the Soul Consciousness couldn't catch him.

After the battle in Cloud Sea Star, Shi Yan had put aside all the chaotic issues to watch the rising and lowering tides with Xia Xin

Yan and Zi Yao. His soul was peaceful and relaxed. When he had the mood to comprehend his powers Upanishads, he could occasionally grasp the key element of his power. Within that short time, he had improved his Star power Upanishad to the level that could make people feel envy and awe.

Shi Yan urged his Star power Upanishad and used the Star power to create the magical sea of stars. His body seemed to fall into the starry sky, moving as if he was a star that could change according to the galaxy. His soul and body had fused with earth and heaven.

Starlight dots emerged. While he was moving backward, those starlight dots sometimes gathered, sometimes scattered. This kind of movement was strange but marvelous.

The woman had her eyelashes battered. Her Soul Consciousness was released like a vast net, but she couldn't figure out his direction.

In her sensibility, Shi Yan had disappeared from her sight as if he had become a part of this ancient continent, a tree or even a leave. He had blended well into the surroundings that the young woman couldn't detect his life energy fluctuation.

The ability to recognize and locate the soul and aura was the premise to guide the attacks. Just like when a normal warrior fought, he needed to see where the opponent was to properly aim his attack. The thundering attack of the woman also needed to locate Shi Yan first before she could do anything.

However, right when Shi Yan used his Star power Upanishad, he had become part of the earth and heaven here. Sometimes, the others could see him with their eyes, but they couldn't grasp his location with their Soul Consciousness.

This irritated the young woman a lot. Her savage attacks couldn't be accurate. She could only stir up the area around the pond. She had created many holes on the ground. At the same time, the dirty water of the swarm shot up and turned into a muddy shower

falling from the sky.

A large amount of dirty water had showered her and made her helter-skelter.

As this ancient continent had restricted the warriors' Soul Consciousness, they could sense a small area around them. It was different from the other places where they could cover half a star with their Soul Consciousness.

Thus, when Shi Yan's image disappeared from her sight, she couldn't figure out where Shi Yan once again.

The graceful young woman had a lot of mud and other dirty, sticky objects from the swamp all over her body. She walked around the area to check for a while, but she couldn't see any commotion from Shi Yan. She felt so gross and she wanted to find a clear lake to wash her body and change her clothes.

This area had many lakes and bogs. Some were filled with dirty water, but there were still many clean lakes. However, it was strange that the entire place didn't have any life energy fluctuation of living creatures. Without insects, the whole place was filled with unknown foliage.

After Shi Yan had escaped the woman's attack, he still looked calm and gentle. He wandered around the swamp and held the book Shang Chen had given him in his hand.

He wasn't too bored to compete against that girl. However, Shi Yan thought that she was tough at her Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm with her Lightning and Ice powers Upanishad. At the same time, her blood Qi was abundant with a strong life magnetic field. Perhaps she wasn't less powerful than a First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert like Feng Yan. Shi Yan thought it was really difficult to fight to the death against her.

Anyway, he didn't need to fight that woman.

She was Shang Chen's daughter and the Guiding Fruit that Shi

Yan got was from her family. At the same time, Shang Chen had treated him pretty well and his relationship with Frederick of the Bloodthirsty bloodline was quite good. From any aspect, he shouldn't provoke or fight with her. He'd better stay away from her.

With the book in his hand, Shi Yan read carefully while observing the spiritual herbs and flowers around him.

There were many flowers with peculiar auras and energy. However, they weren't Original Incipient Grade materials. His book didn't have any articles about them. However, Shi Yan could find many Divine Grade materials, which were attractive to Original God Realm warriors if they appeared in the market.

However, he wasn't here for them. Although he found them interesting, he had to put his efforts into finding the strange and rare things in this book.

This swamp seemed endless. He walked around the area for a long time, but he didn't see the end.

Lifting his head to look at the sky, Shi Yan had an admiring look. Although it'd been a while, every time he watched the arch of the sky above his head, he always felt surprised.

There were many colorful clouds in the sky, which looked like rainbows hanging that never disappeared. Their glamor made his soul mesmerized. Every time he looked at the sky, he felt like he was in a fantasy world where he never wanted to leave.

Thick energy like water and spiritual herbs and grass were everywhere on the ground. There were magical sights that he had never seen before. It's an ancient continent!

However, he hadn't seen the special places that Shang Chen had told him or found Original Incipient Grade materials yet. Anyway, the energy he had consumed for teleportation to this area was refilled. The Essence Qi Ancient Tree in his body was filled.

Today, he stopped by a lush lawn. His eyes brightened in thrill.

Those green tufts were Immortal Grass!

To him, a warrior with Immortal Demon Blood, the Immortal Grass was a great tonic! Shi Yan didn't want to keep his manner so he lingered on this lawn to pick up the Immortal Grass and grind them to take the green fluid. His fingers absorbed the fluid and he used the magical energy from the liquid to generate Immortal Demon Blood!

Just like he had taken in the panacea, he felt so refreshed. The ruby drops of Immortal Demon Blood were generated and were stashed inside his veins, bones, and even his lungs.

Tufts of Immortal Grass disappeared under his fingers. Gradually, the Immortal Grass around him was cleared and it left a bare ground.

He sat neatly on the damp, muddy area. His aura was quiet when he was mobilizing the Immortal Demon Blood in his body. It circulated around his internal organs and made them fill each of his veins.

His blood Qi surged like a rising tide, shooting out from his God Body. Bones of his skeleton sounded of "crack." Each of his muscles was shivering as if the muscles were taking in energy and sounding happy.

The shrunken seven hundred and twenty acupunctures points in his body started to vibrate. When drops of Immortal Demon Blood circulated in his body, he seemed to receive great God power. He felt that an unrivaled energy had just filled his body.

Beams of blood mist flew out of his pores. His God Body was quenched another time as if he had a complete transformation.

Those Immortal Grass had helped him generate more than three hundred drops of Immortal Demon Blood. Those drops of Immortal Demon Blood flew through his veins and burned down

dregs and contaminations, which made his God Body tougher and more tenacious.

Shortly, he transformed into an Immortal Demon shape. Ferocious, sharp spikes appeared on his elbows, knees, and shoulders. His body was as red as melting iron. At this moment, his body had an exploding beauty with the natural armor that covered his entire body. He looked like the perfect knight with a naturally fierce and brutal aura.

This procedure took time. The bones in his body sounded of "crack crack" for a long time. Eventually, he resumed his normal shape.

After a while, he awoke and slowly stood up to check his condition. He grinned happily.

Although his realm hadn't broken through yet, each muscle of his was filled with power and his bones like iron. Now Shi Yan had confidence that nothing could break him.

His thought flickered and his eyes shot out dazzling light that was aimed at the pinky finger of his left hand. The fingertip exploded when he released the star energy in his body through his finger. He immediately urged the Immortal Demon Blood.

A ruby Immortal Demon Blood was sent to that damaged area. The supernatural recovery ability of the Immortal Demon Blood was activated immediately. He could feel clearly that the broken bones were covered and connected shortly.

After fifteen minutes, he found his little bone was recovered. Checking for a while, he saw nothing abnormal.

He suddenly recognized the tenaciousness and recovery level of his body. All had become terrifying because of his Immortal Demon Blood.

Laughing, he urged the energy in his body, striding forward. He felt he had reached the peak of his state, and he would break

through to the Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm soon.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The ear-splitting wind hissed by his ears as if something was whipping in the air, which almost exploded in the air.

Standing bewildered for a while, Shi Yan accelerated and dashed towards the source of the sound.

Dozens of meters long vines were winding around a blurry shadow in front of him. Those vines had a lot of sharp thorns that danced like crazy pythons and wreaked havoc in that area. Their auras were so frightening.

He concentrated and observed. That massive blurry shadow over there was a kind of bizarre demonic rattan. It looked like a small mountain with so many vines, which were moving and whipping unceasingly. Those vines were trying to capture a person.

That figure was dashing madly like an electric beam and swaying between vines that had covered the sky. Surprisingly, that was Shang Chen's daughter, a warrior cultivating Lightning and Ice powers Upanishad at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

However, her condition was evidently not good in this moment.

Chapter 1093: Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan

The iron-like thorny rattans were dancing in the sky like lightning strikes. They had crushed a lot of surrounding things.

The demonic rattan was like a small mountain with many strong, terrifying vines. They looked rigid enough to resist different energy attacks. The lightning strikes that the woman had used couldn't scratch it much.

While those vines were moving in the air, they narrowed her available space. Gradually, she lost space to hide.

The vines had a lot of sharp thorns. When they passed by her, they brought gusts of wind that blew her body and made her shiver. When those rattans touched her blue dresses that were made of some special materials they were cut open.

Her blue dress was torn, revealing her soft, creamy white skin.

She became more anxious, her breathing disordered. Her soul altar became turbulent. The dispute between her Lightning and Ice powers Upanishad emerged, which reduced the power of her attacks.

Normally, warriors who cultivated different powers Upanishads could use their powers to support each other or fuse their powers into one with a special method, further promoting their powers to another higher level. However, there were still different situations...

Before they could fuse the powers and let their mind be turbulent, the dispute between powers Upanishads happened, which reduced the powers of their powers Upanishads.

The vines pushed the girl into a corner. As her attacks couldn't do what she had expected, she became more anxious, which triggered the conflict between her two powers.

It was also the reason why most of the warriors wouldn't cultivate two or more powers Upanishad at the same time.

When a warrior cultivates different powers Upanishad at the same time, their breakthrough slows down when they reach Ethereal God Realm. Their progress would be slower than the warriors who cultivate only one power Upanishad. It was really hard to fuse different powers Upanishads and at the same time, it could cause a conflict between the powers during fighting that would decrease the warrior's fighting competence.

Shang Chen's daughter had strange halos ripple through her eyes. Terrifying lightning strikes burst out from her rings on her porcelain wrists. Suddenly, a dazzling lightning strike emerged. In just a blink of an eye, she had a shining blue lightning rod in her hand. This rod was made of pure lightning energy with burning power stored inside.

With the blue lightning rod in her hands, the lightning beams crawling on her body had the gates to gush out. They all flowed fiercely towards the lightning rod.

Within that moment, billion lightning beams twisted together. The lightning strike that was just generated became longer and larger. The furious energy it carried increased unceasingly.

At first glance, Shi Yan slightly paled, his face fearful.

That blue lightning rod was apparently an Original Incipient Grade weapon. It could absorb and amplify the lightning energy in her body.

After she took out the lightning rod, her aura changed massively. At this moment, she didn't use any bit of her cold energy. She used pure lightning to control the lightning rod. The area around her now had countless lightning strikes that created terrifying electric dragons.

The rod that the woman was holding was also a divine weapon of

lightning class. However, it was much better than Du Lin's Thunder God Spear. Shi Yan could tell that because the lightning energy accumulated inside that rod was much more abundant and turbulent.

The tenacious vines got hit by lightning strikes every time they made their way to approach the girl, sending gray smoke to the air.

This demonic rattan wasn't rooted inside the swamp. It could move fast and agilely. Seeing the girl take out that lightning rod, the massive body of the demonic rattan wiggled, retracted the vines, and sank back into the swamp. Countless vines moved toward the rattan. Shortly after, the demonic tree disappeared into the murky wetland.

The woman looked upset. She cursed and struck her lightning energy into the swamp, which sent the muddy water into the sky.

It seemed like she had waited and plotted that demonic rattan for a long time. She even tried to hide her real power and the divine weapon to entice that tree. However, seeing Shi Yan emerge, she was afraid that he could ambush her. Thus, she had to use the divine weapon before the right time she had planned. This commotion had scared the demonic rattan and made it run away.

Cursing the tree for a while, she turned around with her cold face and glared at Shi Yan. She said indignantly, "It's you again!"

Frowning, Shi Yan didn't get a clue. "It has nothing to do with me, doesn't it?"

"If you hadn't appeared, I could have lured the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan out of its bog and killed it!" said the young woman with a pair of cold and harsh eyes.

"I just passed by coincidentally. It's you who thought that I would attack you. It's your mistake." Shi Yan shook his head and didn't mind her anymore. He frowned and prepared to leave.

"You shouldn't dream of leaving!" She snorted. "Let's sum up the

debt of you peeping at me!"

She didn't use the lightning divine weapon to attack Shi Yan. Her rod turned into an azure lightning strike and then a jade ring on her moonlight wrist. Her ten slender and delicate fingers moved, shooting out lightning strikes that weaved with each other into a thick mesh lightning net.

Thunder sounded grumbly in that net which flashed with the blinding lightning. The net suddenly snatched over Shi Yan.

At the same time, an icy aura spread over from the swamp under his feet. Shi Yan couldn't react when the cold air intruded his feet.

As soon as the cold air got through his feet, his legs froze and locked his veins and bones. He couldn't move or run away.

Apparently, this woman was prepared. She knew that she couldn't find Shi Yan if she let him run once. Thus, she had mobilized the ice energy earlier and sent it underground. When she created the lightning net, she had also urged the freezing energy to block Shi Yan, which prevented him from using the Star energy to escape.

Her eyes were elegant but as cold as the frost flower. They had a gleam of arrogance and coldness. "Let's see how you run from me this time!"

Shi Yan burst out laughing and said begrudgingly, "Do you think you can kill me with this?"

Boom!

A fiercely brutal aura shot up into the sky with a deadly murderous aura.

Crack! Crack!

Shi Yan's feet were set free instantly. When the bloodthirsty aura was released, his veins and bones moved with boiling Immortal Demon Blood. His energy was brimming within seconds. He had a

violently surging energy.

"Crack!"

Shi Yan balled his hand into a fist, which then ballooned like a windmill. He furiously punched the lightning net with plenty of murderous auras.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Thunderclaps resounded and lightning beams shot out everywhere when the lightning net the young woman had cast was smashed. It became many sparks twinkling around her.

"If I want to fight to the death against you, I'm sure you can't win. However, I'm giving your father Shang Chen face. Can you not disturb me, please?" While electric beams were shooting out everywhere, Shi Yan told her with a severe complexion.

The beautiful eyes of the woman froze as she looked at her lightning net shatter with disbelief. As she knew that she couldn't gather her energy again, she grimaced, "Are you really at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm?"

She was called Shang Ying Yue and she was Shang Chen's daughter. She cultivated Lightning and Ice powers Upanishads. She had a divine weapon. Shang Chen used to use different Blood Qi to quench her body. Whether it was because of her divine weapon or her exquisite powers Upanishads, she belonged to the group of top warriors in this vast universe.

At Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, she could defeat most First Sky of Incipient God Realm experts.

She had the competence to challenge the warriors whose realms were one level higher than her's!

However, it was unacceptable to her when Shi Yan had smashed her lightning net. Shi Yan had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base.

Although she didn't use her max power in that attack, it wasn't something that ordinary warriors could resist.

She deemed herself brilliant, but at this moment, she couldn't defeat a warrior at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, which was extremely unbelievable to her.

However, what made her flame of rage burst was that Shi Yan told her that she was disturbing him!

"I am disturbing you?" Shang Ying Yue felt so angry. "You took my Guiding Fruit and my brother couldn't enter this place. You've sneaked on me twice! And you tell me that I'm disturbing you?! I have never seen any man at your despicable level!"

Swoosh!

She blinked. A lightning strike was aimed at Shi Yan. Thunder resounded noisily. At the same time, a strange blue icicle drilled towards Shi Yan's chest instantaneously.

This was a combined attack of Lightning and Ice power Upanishad!

The lightning icicle carried two magical powers with a strange, evil energy fluctuation that was beyond Shi Yan's understanding. He was surprised that his Soul Consciousness couldn't lock it.

Frowning, Shi Yan urged his Power Upanishad.

He rose his hand and made a cut in the void. A fine space crack with outer space streamers appeared in front of him.

The lightning icicle, the combined attack of Ice and Lightning power Upanishads, headed into the space slit and disappeared. It couldn't cause a scratch on him.

Seeing that her attack couldn't affect him, Shang Ying Yue became more indignant and her eyes got colder. She wanted to mobilize more energy.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Right at this moment, they both heard the wind flutter from afar. It seemed like someone was approaching.

Shang Ying Yue was baffled. She retrieved her attack. Pondering for a while, she agilely climbed on a lush tree and hid her body. She wanted to know who would arrive.

She knew about this ancient continent more than Shi Yan.

Every warrior who could enter the ancient continent was a prominent warrior of the great star areas. Although she was arrogant, she knew that she wasn't invincible in this place. Thus, she knew when she needed to hide.

Seeing her hide and not attack anymore, Shi Yan discolored. He looked around and hid in between the branches of another tree. Then, he frowned and watched in the direction of the coming noise.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The wind howled colder like daggers moving through the air, which was pretty unpleasant to the ears.

Rumble!

The demonic rattan that was hiding under the swamp suddenly flew up. It used all the tangled but flexible vines to run away as if it was running from something.

The demonic rattan seemed to recognize something dangerous as if it knew that the one who was coming could harm it, so it had to run in advance from the swamp.

Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan were astounded. They silently put up guard since they knew that the one who was about to arrive wasn't an ordinary warrior.

Chapter 1094: The Gu God Sect

Gu: legendary Chinese witchcraft. It is a kind of mysterious object artificially cultivated by special methods, which can be cultivated for many years. It can be large or small. Generally, it is a worm or some kind of insect.

The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan used its several thousand vines at the same time to fly out of the muddy puddles and run away fast.

There were many kinds of spiritual herbs and trees around this area. Murky swamps and clear lakes were situated in this place, which sent thick moisture into the air together with the abundant energy.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Buzz! Buzz!

The strange noise was zooming over. Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue hid in different trees, frowning and waiting.

Shortly after, the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan which had just left returned. Countless vines wiggled on the ground like living tentacles as it hurried to get under the muddy bog where it used to dwell.

Shi Yan was surprised.

Before he had arrived on this planet, he had listened to Shang Chen talking about Desolate, the ancient continent. This ancient continent didn't have any living creature or races. There was no living being with a body and blood like Monster Clan, Demon Clan, or Human Clan living on this planet. Every ten thousand years, Desolate would open, but later on, it would kick those people out.

However, there were many Original Incipient Grade herbs and grass. They didn't have blood and flesh, but they did have simple cognition. They were the spirit floras.

According to Shang Chen, the spirit floras had a limited lifespan. They couldn't live and cultivate forever like the Monster Clan or Demon Clan. When the plants in this star grew to a particular level, their energy vanished and returned to the ancient continent, which prevented from changing the structure of the continent.

The creatures with blood and flesh weren't like that. Taking the Human Clan or the God Clan for example, as long as their realms were profound enough, their lives could be endless.

As long as they were alive, creatures from different races would need energy from earth and heaven to cultivate. They would grow unlimitedly. Even if a life star could have more earth and heaven energy, sheltering a large number of this kind of experts, its energy would all be consumed eventually and become a dead star in the end.

Grace Mainland was also an ancient continent. However, after the Immemorial Epoch, the Antiquity Time, and the Ancient Time, it had given birth to many immemorial creatures, God Clan, and the Ten Great Clans. Until this moment, its energy had been used up.

Desolate seemed to have realized this point pretty early. It was the most selfish planet among the great ancient continents. It was like the woman who has never given birth so she could maintain her beauty, health, and vitality.

Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was a spirit plant that had grown in this ancient continent for a long time so it had a simple consciousness. The "Hundred Kalpa" meant that this plant would take one hundred years for each of its [Kalpas](#), and one hundred Kalpas were just ten thousand years, which was also the lifespan of the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. It could live only ten thousand years. When its time was over, it had to vanish and its energy would return to the ancient continent.

a Sanskrit word meaning a relatively long period of time (by

human calculation) in Hindu and Buddhist cosmology. Sometimes, it's used to describe a calamity too.

Seeing the demonic rattan hide under the swamp, Shi Yan frowned at the description of that plant in his book. He felt astounded.

The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was as rigid as an icy crystal. It had cognition and often hid in the dirty boggy wetland. After it could create ten thousand vines, it could refine the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, which was an Original Incipient Grade material that allowed for the refining of the dangerous divine weapon of soul class.

Those were the details of Shang Chen's description of the demonic rattan in the book.

The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was tough. Once it hid in the pond it was dwelling in, it was hard to force it out.

Putting the book away, Shi Yan glanced at Shang Yin Yue hide on a tree through the gaps between the branches and leaves.

The two massive trees they were hiding in were tall and big with thick branches and leaves that shaded a large area. Besides just two people, they could even hide ten without making any significant traces for the others to discover.

This ancient continent had a magical effect on the Soul Consciousness. Even Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't catch the life energy fluctuations around him. He believed that people who came here would encounter the same restriction. In this area, eyes were the sharpest tools to find a target. Thus, hiding in a thick bush didn't sound funny at all.

Rattle! Rattle!

All of a sudden, strange rattling and buzzing noises swarmed over from everywhere.

Shi Yan squinted to have a better look. He changed his

complexion immediately. His face was now ashen.

So many toxic insects and even snakes and scorpions were flying in the sky. Shi Yan could see the green-legged spiders, black scorpions, and many toxic insects move in gray clouds and cover the entire sky like slashing waves. There were more than millions of them. In just a blink of an eye, they packed the area.

Those insects and toxic animals had swallowed all kinds of spirit herbs and grass, leaving not even a dried leaf. On their way, all things were cleared.

The wetland was exposed.

Millions of deadly creatures swarmed over the area like a disgusting, rising tide, while others flew in the sky.

Sssss! Sssss!

A strange whistle reverberated in the place, echoing unceasingly. It seemed that the cry came from a flute that controlled the toxic insects and animals.

Shi Yan put on a cold a harsh face and slowly pulled himself together. He watched the oncoming venomous things.

He knew that the ancient continent didn't have any of those demonic insects or anything that had blood and flesh. Those things came from some people from outer space like him. The whistle he heard was definitely from someone who was guiding those insects. There was something hiding in the dark somewhere.

On the tree opposite Shi Yan, Shang Ying Yue had a cold face. It looked like she found those things disgusting.

Instinctively, women were afraid of those little nauseating things. Shang Ying Yue wasn't an exception. Watching the toxic insects and venomous animals coming close, she had released her energy in advance. The cold Qi she had released had frozen the entire tree.

Demonic insects and venomous animals surged like rising waves on the ground. They started to move and congregate. Gradually, they became a vague face...

That was a dark, old Dark Spirit man whose face was filled with pimples. He looked ferociously ugly. Slowly, the demonic insects and toxic animals gathered and formed his body. After a while, he didn't look much different from normal people.

He grinned and let out a hoarse laughter. He rose a bony hand from his loose, black robe, pointing at Shang Ying Yue from a far distance.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Countless insects wildly swarmed over. Shortly after, the ancient tree where Shang Ying Yue was hiding was covered with insects. Within ten seconds, the tree fell. Its branches and leaves were all swallowed.

Shang Ying Yue had blue lightning beams crawling on her body. She stood in the middle of the insect pile in disgust. An electric halo expanded from under her feet, keeping those insects away from her.

"You're the daughter of Shang Chen and An Liya and your name is Shang Ying Yue, right?" The Dark Spirit old man looked at her. After a while, he laughed evilly, "By the way, the Guiding Fruits you guys have are from our Hollow Fearsome Star Area. Yeah, from us, to be exact."

"You are from the "Gu God Sect" of the Hollow Fearsome Star Area?" Shang Ying Yue discolored, her eyes showing a concealed fear.

Hollow Fearsome Star Area was like Fantasy Mist Star Area. They were both extremely famous high-level star areas in this vast universe. The general competence of these star areas was mighty. They were also part of a small number of star areas that the God

Clan didn't dare to intrude. Compared to Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area, these two-star areas were much stronger.

However, the main reason that the God Clan didn't dare to touch the Hollow Fearsome Star Area was that of the Gu God Sect. This sect was the most mysterious sect in this universe. Members of this sect cultivated evil incantations and witchcraft. They were so intimidating that even the God Clan didn't dare to provoke them.

Members of the Gu God Sect had mastered using legendary venomous worms. They could kill people without touching them. They could make the others' soul altar rotten as if it was gnawed by toxic insects.

Legends said that one expert from the Great Twelve Families of the God Clan used to want to attack Hollow Fearsome Star Area. However, while he was still trying to convince the experts of his family, his soul altar began to fracture day by day. The God Clan couldn't do anything but watch him die. They didn't know how to heal him.

This rang the alarming bell to that God Clan's family. They aborted the thought of dealing with the Gu God Sect.

Of course, many people thought that the reason why the God Clan hadn't started a war was that the Gu God Sect had just operated within their Hollow Fearsome Star Area. They didn't show their intent of invading other star areas or causing conflict with the God Clan. At the same time, this sect was really strong. The God Clan had planned to invade the other star areas first and then Hollow Fearsome Star Area.

Anyway, no one dared to defy the intimidation of the Gu God Sect. This peculiar sect of Hollow Fearsome Star Area had a good grasp of the wickedest witchcraft in the entire universe. Even strong Incipient God Realm experts were wary of them.

"It's true. I'm from Hollow Fearsome Star Area. My name is Sha Zhao." The old man of the Gu God Sect grinned and revealed his

white, sharp teeth, which was scary, indeed.

"Sha Zhao!" Shang Ying Yue screamed in fear, her face more grimaced. "I've heard of you from my mother. You are the strongest expert at Incipient God Realm of Gu God Sect!

"Haha, overpraising." Sha Zhao guffawed. His laughter was really unpleasant to the ears. "I'm here to take the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. Am I bothering you?"

"Not at all," Shang Yin Yue's eyes sparkled as she talked faintly, "If you don't mind, I'm leaving now so I don't interfere with your business here."

"Suit yourself," Sha Zhao looked at her and then hissed. Countless toxic insects proactively made her way and let Shang Ying Yue go.

Shang Ying Yue didn't hesitate. She nodded and then walked out of the way. When she was about to get rid of the insect surroundings, she talked while walking away from Sha Zhao, "I should make it clear that the one who is hiding in the tree over there is not an acquaintance of mine. You shouldn't think I have some other intention for leaving him here."

Then, she accelerated and leaped out of the circle of demonic insects and venomous animal like a lightning strike.

Sha Zhao was surprised, laughing evilly. "Friend, come out and talk."

Shi Yan looked harsh and cold as he watched Shang Ying Yue dash away. He took a deep breath and landed away from the tree. Fierce flames burst out from his feet.

Many insects and animals proactively avoided him and gave him room to land. The venomous insects hissed as if they were provoked and ready to fight.

Sha Zhao's eyes brightened. He was so excited looking at the fiery flame under Shi Yan's feet. "Heaven flame of the Origin! Haha, it's

the flaming Origin! Good, so good!"

"You want it?" asked Shi Yan calmly.

Sha Zhao nodded continually and said honestly, "The flaming Origin is rare. This kind of flame is marvelously useful to the disciples of our Gu God Sect. Little buddy, can you give up your favorite thing?"

"Sure can," squinting, Shi Yan also smiled. He pointed at his head, "It's fused with my soul. Kill me and you can get it. Simple, eh?"

Sha Zhao frowned and was silent.

Chapter 1095: Do You Have Some More?

Hundreds of thousands of demonic insects and venomous animals lay on the ground like thick gray mats. They covered ten square miles of this area. At first glance, they gave people a head-splitting headache.

The demonic insects and animals could nibble people's souls!

Sha Zhao furrowed his brows, his face dark and hard to probe. His inky black eyes had something flicker like an ignis fatuus, which gave him a malicious look.

He didn't attack Shi Yan immediately.

Warriors from the Gu God Sect had a unique technique to sense the realm and power of the enemies. They could guess their opponent's powers and realms through observing Blood Qi, mental status, or even how pink their faces were. They could guess precisely the energy and realm of their opponents.

Sha Zhao understood clearly that the realm wasn't the only criteria to assess someone's overall competence.

Taking himself as an example, although he had only Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he believed that he could subdue or even kill First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert.

He knew that Shang Ying Yue who had just left was also this sort of warrior. As he grasped her profile, he let her go easily.

Sha Zhao squinted, his eyes drilling in Shi Yan. Something like invisible soul threads flew out of his eyes and covered Shi Yan like a net made of seaweed. They were trying to explore Shi Yan...

Shang Ying Yue didn't actually leave this site.

She had used a secret treasure that Shang Chen had given her to make her invisible. She hovered like a faint gray smoke and waited silently by the edge of the insect mass. Her Blood Qi and soul

energy fluctuation were also concealed so that even demonic insects with their great sensibility couldn't find her.

Shang Ying Yue's eyelashes shivered. She looked at the two men standing in the middle of the toxic insect formation and waited for something.

After a while, she was surprised that she couldn't explain the situation.

Sha Zhao was standing with his venomous animals and laughing oddly, "You're joking, right? We come to this ancient continent for our own purposes. We won't fight if it's not necessary. It's no use to anybody and brings no benefit. Okay, let's deal with it this way. I will force the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan out of the swamp and confine it. You will use your heaven flame to refine it. We will share the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread equally. What do you think?"

Shang Ying Yue was startled, her face odd. She was so skeptical looking at the two of them.

Sha Zhao was the strongest warrior at Incipient God Realm of the Gu God Sect. As he could take the Guiding Fruit to access this ancient continent, it spoke up the fact that the Gu God Sect has trusted him a lot.

Shang Ying Yue had heard about how terrifying Sha Zhao was from her mother. Thus, even though she had come here for the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan, she had proactively avoided Sha Zhao to prevent causing any conflict with him.

Although they were both at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, Shang Ying Yue wasn't confident that she could defeat Sha Zhao in a fight to the death against him. Thus, she chose to leave.

However, Shi Yan had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Since Sha Zhao was strong enough to shoo her away, why was he so friendly to this low warrior?

Was he really powerful?

Shang Ying Yue had a lot of questions, but she couldn't find an answer. However, when she looked at Shi Yan now, she had changed her attitude. She told herself to be more cautious.

Of course, she didn't know what Sha Zhao had seen with the secret technique of the Gu God Sect.

This particular technique of the Gu God Sect was called "Blood Peeping Divine Technique," which could use the Soul Consciousness, Blood Qi, and people's appearances to assess the body's integrity and the profound level of their souls. This technique was famous for its accuracy in this universe. It was also one of the most exquisite techniques of the Gu God Sect.

Using the Blood Peeping Divine Technique, Sha Zhao had observed Shi Yan's blood Qi, his lean muscles, his heartbeat, and the strange missing soul to make a terrifying final conclusion: His body was like a refined crystal or metal that had been quenched many times. His Soul Consciousness was as refined as a blood vein!"

This was the level that a normal Incipient God Realm couldn't compare to!

How could a warrior at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm reach such a level of body integrity and mentality? How could Sha Zhao dare to look down on him?

Especially right at the beginning, Shi Yan didn't appear to be fearful. He provoked the other first. This made Sha Zhao more cautious and he had made up his mind almost instantly. If it wasn't necessary, he wouldn't fight that young man.

As Shang Ying Yue didn't know that Sha Zhao had used an exclusive technique of the Gu God Sect to check Shi Yan, she didn't understand the situation.

"Share the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread?" Shi Yan chuckled and

glanced at the deep place in the muddy pond. He talked naturally, "Can. Then we can work as you've suggested. You will force the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan out of its dwelling and then I will refine it. Yeah, do it. I'm eager to see the secret techniques of your Gu God Sect."

"No problem. Little buddy, wait for me. Let me handle it first." Sha Zhao laughed loudly. A short flute, which had a lot of holes like stars slid out of his dark sleeve. This flute had a snake-skin pattern, making it look archaic and exquisite.

"Whistle! Hooooooooooooo!"

Sha Zhao squinted and blew the flute. It then sounded like someone whining and crying, releasing ghosts into this world.

Under his low-pitched, gloomy melody, the ambiance began to cool down. It felt like departed spirits were wandering around with an icy aura and intruding people's Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan's indifferent eyes flashed with an icy light.

Shang Ying Yue who was still hiding in the dark also changed her face. She hurried to quiet her mind and urge her power.

In Shi Yan's and Shang Ying Yue's Sea of Consciousness, many toxic insects and venomous animals suddenly appeared!

They seemed to be formed by the Soul Consciousness or real souls of those demonic insects and animals. When the old man blew the flute, they got into the other two's Sea of Consciousness easily and then began to move around.

"Little buddy, be careful. When I play the Demonic Sound Flute, our little friends won't stay idle, but they won't purposely aim at you." Sha Zhao said, his voice hoarse and rough. Although he was smiling, there was a wicked intent that people couldn't see deep in his eyes.

Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue frowned. They knew that even Sha Zhao was being too friendly and he knew how strong Shi Yan was.

He didn't want to let Shi Yan go unharmed. Besides luring the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan, he had used the Demonic Sound Flute to control demonic insects and venomous animals to probe Shi Yan's ability. He wanted to test if Shi Yan was as strong as he had estimated.

Shi Yan understood it clearly. If he showed that he couldn't bear this attack, Sha Zhao's bloody treatment for him would swarm over immediately and leave him no chance to run away.

In his Sea of Consciousness, countless demonic insects were floating and baring their fangs and claws. All of a sudden, they streamed towards Shi Yan's soul altar.

Those tiny, ferocious creatures wanted to nibble at his soul altar and then swallow his soul.

Shi Yan was so frightened.

He couldn't imagine how evil the Gu God Sect's technique could be. Those little things in his Sea of Consciousness were just wisps of a soul, but they were more terrifying than real bugs. They could gnaw his soul altar! This kind of witchcraft had him aghast at this moment.

He had never experienced anything like this. Shi Yan felt a little clumsy and annoyed.

Sha Zhao could connect his soul with those insects and animals. Each of them was his eyes and ears, so he could actually get into Shi Yan's soul. He could also feel what Shi Yan felt. He knew that Shi Yan didn't have any solution to this situation.

Sha Zhao smiled faintly. He was so proud of the venomous worm witchcraft of his sect.

That year... one of the God Clan experts was killed by this technique. The toxic insects had bitten his soul altar to death. Today, even though this kid was extremely powerful, how could he withstand the "Soul Eating Heaven Venomous Worm" of the Gu

God Sect?

The smile on Sha Zhao's face went from concealed to exposed. He looked delighted.

After the demonic insects and toxic animals chewed off the soul, they would evolve and transform. The more refined the soul was, the better the benefits that his bugs could have.

Sha Zhao pictured those beautiful little things after they evolved...

Shang Ying Yue wasn't Sha Zhao's target. He sent some dormant bugs to her as a warning for her to not act rashly.

Sha Zhao didn't believe what Shang Ying Yue had told him. He thought that Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan wanted to refine the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. He believed no one in order to prevent unexpected events.

Once Shang Ying Yue showed that she wanted to rescue Shi Yan, those idle insects would take action and give Shang Ying Yue no extra time or power to help the other.

When Sha Zhao did something, he was always meticulous with backup plans.

A cloud of demonic insects and toxic animal swarmed over and flooded the tier of Power Upanishad in Shi Yan's soul altar. Those tiny bugs buzzed loudly and gave Shi Yan a head-splitting headache. He couldn't gather his thoughts when his Sea of Consciousness was turbulent.

Seeing the toxic bugs and animals approach the tier of powers Upanishad, a freezing energy emerged. An inky black bead that had always stayed in Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent floated up. Just like a strange, evil eye, it fell into the tier of Power Upanishads. It was the Poison-dipped Cold Bead!

The Poison-dipped Cold Bead was condensed from the soul of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It could swallow extremely toxic things.

With the coldness, it could cool down the soul and prevent the warrior from falling into bedevilment.

The Poison-dipped Cold Bead slowly emerged. Black light rings rippled like water waves.

The demonic insects and toxic animal entering his Sea of Consciousness screeched in fright. They immediately scattered and tried to avoid the bead. However, those black light rings had covered them all. No matter how hard they'd tried to wiggle, they couldn't fly out of Shi Yan's brain.

Sha Zhao's face paled. The melody he was playing became more unpleasant and shrill. The mass of toxic bugs under his feet buzzed angrily.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Each of the insects covered by the Poison-dipped Cold Bead's black light in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness turned into a wisp of gray smoke after being drawn into the Poison-dipped Cold Bead.

Within seconds, all of the venomous little things that had intruded Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness were swallowed.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness resumed its state. Shrinking his pupils, Shi Yan smiled strangely. He parted his lips to give Sha Zhao a compliment. "It tastes good. Should be a good tonic for me though. Thanks for your generous gift."

Pausing for a while, he smiled happily, "Do you still have some?"

Sha Zhao was bewildered. After a while, he felt so ashamed and said, "I'm terribly sorry. Whenever I play the flute, some of those hot-tempered little buddies can't be controlled. It was just a mistake. Please forgive me."

Sha Zhao clasped his hands to apologize, his manner sincere and conscience-stricken. It made Shang Ying Yue more astounded as she didn't understand the entire picture of it.

Chapter 1096: A Sudden Fatal Attack!

"I can't thank you enough. Why do you have to say sorry?"

Shi Yan smiled meaningfully. He begged earnestly, "I'm serious. Those insects and toxic animals are beneficial to me. If you agree to give them up, I will be grateful."

Sha Zhao discolored. He was cursing under his breath and sending his regards to eighteen generations of Shi Yan's family.

Until this moment, he wasn't so sure what the black bead that had emerged all of a sudden in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was. That bead was the nemesis to his toxic little buddies. He was aghast when the bead swallowed all of them.

Among his hundreds of thousands demonic insects and toxic animals, there were only several hundred that had evolved to a phase they could intrude people's soul. Each of them was precious and rare. He loved them as if they were his roots of life.

The demonic insects and toxic animals with cognition that could intrude the others' soul were the real "Gu": the legendary venomous worms. They were also the mediators for many witchcraft practices of the Gu God Sect's witchcraft. It required a lot of efforts and materials to nurture a Gu until it could transform. Gu was the secret of the power of Gu God Sect's disciples.

Dozens of his top Gu worms were devoured all by the bead inside Shi Yan's head, which made Sha Zhao almost vomit blood. At the same time, he had to act as if he didn't mean it. He smiled and gave an apology to Shi Yan. It was a big hurt to his pride, which was as painful as someone pricking a piece of meat from his heart.

"Just a mistake, really a mistake..."

Sha Zhao's face twitched, trying to press down the anger in his heart. His eyes were restless as if he was a volcano that was

prevented from erupting.

"Then forget it."

Shi Yan chuckled, squinted and relaxed. He deliberately urged, "Oh, continue to deal with the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan please."

After the Poison-dipped Cold Bead had swallowed around a dozen demonic insects, it didn't hurry to return to Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent. It sank into the center of his Sea of Consciousness. Wisps of Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness tied the Poison-dipped Cold Bead like tentacles. His Sea of Consciousness became cold and peaceful with this cold, tranquilizing bead.

After his Sea of Consciousness had the Poison-dipped Cold Bead, Shi Yan was more sensitive to the energy fluctuation of those demonic insects and venomous animals. He could recognize them and capture their life energy fluctuation precisely. He could even know how toxic they were and how much venom they had in their bodies.

This cheered up Shi Yan immediately.

He suddenly understood that something had been activated after the Poison-dipped Cold Bead had devoured Sha Zhao's venomous little friends.

The Poison-dipped Cold Bead came from the Departed Spirit Jellyfish, which was the most toxic and mysterious creature in this world. It lived by swallowing poisonous substances or venoms, which made it a source of poisonous substances.

Most of the demonic insects and toxic animals that Sha Zhao had been feeding had extreme toxins and venoms. People who touched them couldn't have a decent death. Some toxins could enter the Sea of Consciousness directly and even the God experts couldn't do anything to prevent it.

However, to the Poison-dipped Cold Bead, they weren't

troublesome. They were tonics.

Thus, something changed in the Poison-dipped Cold Bead as it decided to stay in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. It seemed like the bead was waiting for more insects to feast on it.

Squinting and feeling the change in his Sea of Consciousness, Shi Yan smiled brightly and calmly urged Sha Zhao.

Sha Zhao gritted his teeth and gave an unnatural smile. "I'm on it. I'm on it!"

Sha Zhao continued to play his Demonic Sound Flute. The low and forlorn melody had driven the toxic insects and animals crazy. They dashed like fierce sand flowing into a deep place in the muddy pond where the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was hiding. In several breaths, insects had filled that murky pond.

Those venomous insects wiggled, which could tingle people's scalps and drill deep into the pond. At the same time, they chewed off the plants nearby.

Their small eyes flared with harsh, green light. All of them were so excited like beasts smelling blood. All bared their tiny sharp fangs, dancing and stirring the entire swamp.

Some strange rumbling noises arose from the swamp. They were the sounds that the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan caused when it wiggled the vines. Apparently, the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was dealing with those dangerous toxic insects.

Sha Zhao's face was cold. Deep in his eyes was dark green light. The Demonic Sound Flute he was playing shrilled ear-piercingly like ghosts crying and whining.

Suddenly, he opened his mouth, gushing out poisonous smokes in many colors. The toxic vapors hovered like cotton clouds above the wetland. Strange fluids dropped from the vapors and seeped into the venomous insects and animals inside the pond.

Those insects and animals became wilder and tried to gnaw the

Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. Slowly, vines emerged from the water and twisted like slithering snakes. The rattan was trying hard to get rid of something.

Shang Ying Yue was hiding in the dark, her beautiful eyes bright. She seized the chance when all the insects were gathering inside the swamp to attack the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan to approach this area once again. With the protection of her secret treasure, she could avoid Shi Yan's and Sha Zhao's sight.

Shang Ying Yue was dumbstruck when she saw the swamp where the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was emerging from, little by little. She saw hundreds of thousands of insects creeping on each vine of the rattan. She frowned in disgust. She felt her scalp become numb and that crowd of toxic bugs and animals made her nauseate.

She forced herself to calm down and used her cold energy to wake up her mind. She was preparing something discreetly.

The ring on her porcelain wrist slowly glowed, transforming to a rod and coiling around her arm. She was ready to attack in any minute.

Looking at the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan being tied, she was secretly excited. Her round, milky breasts thrust out and bounced magnificently. However, no one could see her glamor at this moment.

The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was tied and was leaving its bog. Those tiny insects and toxic animals were like its archenemies. Several thousand vines of the rattan had survived several hundred kalpas, but now, they were powerless. The insects had chewed off all the thorns on its vines.

Its consciousness was vanishing.

Sha Zhao exhaled. He stopped playing the Demonic Sound Flute and laughed contentedly. He was about to tell Shi Yan to refine the

Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

However, at this moment, he suddenly got alerted. His face grimaced in just a flash.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The three while bones were gloomy and quiet. They were crystal clear and slowly emerging from three different narrow slits. Just like three lightning strikes, they thrust towards Sha Zhao in just a blink of an eye.

Sha Zhao discolored, raising his hands to counter.

He could never have imagined that Shi Yan would choose this moment to attack!

When he played the Demonic Sound Flute, he was wholly concentrated. Sha Zhao had put up his guard all the time because in his mind if Shi Yan wanted to attack him, he would seize the chance when he was playing the flute. At that point, he had to use his mind to control the insects to entangle the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

He thought it was the best chance for Shi Yan to attack him. He even pretended to reveal his weakness as he had a perfect plan and just needed Shi Yan to attack him all of a sudden.

Unfortunately, Shi Yan didn't do anything but stay calm while Sha Zhao was playing his Demonic Sound Flute. Sha Zhao had waited for a long time with his intense nerves, but nothing had happened in the end.

When the melody from the Demonic Sound Flute ceased, Shi Yan was watching the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. Sha Zhao thought that Shi Yan had actually wanted the rattan. Seeing everything settle down, Sha Zhao calmed down his tense nerves and waited for Shi Yan to refine the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. And while Shi Yan was doing that, he was going to attack him discreetly.

However, right at this split of time, Shi Yan had taken action! Sha Zhao didn't put up his guard.

The three bone thorns slashed the void like lightning strikes and stabbed him directly in his chest. They were so fast that he couldn't even think of how to resist.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Three sounds echoed when the sharp weapons thrust into his flesh. The beautiful chest plate of Sha Zhao's armor was broken. Three strange blood flowers bloomed in Sha Zhao's chest and they could see the vessels and muscles wiggling inside. Some demonic insects in his body were trying to use their tiny sharp claws to hook and pull the tip of the Bone Thorns. They were trying to stop the Bone Thorns and not let them stab his heart.

Those were the Life Devin Gu worms he had fed with his own blood and flesh!

Sha Zhao spurted blood, his face ashen. As his body was damaged, his Life Divine Gu worms were also injured. Immediately, his essential organs were wounded.

"So cruel!"

Sha Zhao shouted, his face cold and harsh.

Shi Yan contemplated and didn't say a word. His face was cold and sinister like a saber. His God Body shook hard. A furious murderous aura shot up into the sky. His joints cracked as the energy in his body rose like big waves.

Right at the moment the energy in his body increased massively, he suddenly had a bloody sword in his hand. Leaping through the air, he slashed Sha Zhao.

The entire sky was dyed red because of the massive sword. A quiet, bloodthirsty pressure suddenly swarmed over.

Sha Zhao was scared out of his wits.

"Ptui!"

He opened his mouth to spurt out a mouthful of filthy blood with a lot of pieces of meat where tiny venomous insects were hiding.

Those insects had bone sabers and small wings. They screeched while eating up the meat he had spurted. Their bodies were ballooning at a speed that naked eyes could observe. They became gold and round.

The toxic insects swelled and became ferocious. They plunged towards Shi Yan one after another. When they approached him, they exploded and created an extremely intimidating energy attack, which stirred up the void around Shi Yan.

The toxic insects were as big as soya beans, but after they had eaten Sha Zhao's meat, they burst off their body and created energy tornadoes that prevented Shi Yan from approaching Sha Zhao to continue his attacks.

Sha Zhao's face was bleeding as if someone had used a razor and cut his face. He looked as ferocious as the devil.

He screeched pitifully. The Life Divine Gu worms in his chest tried to force the three Bone Thorns out of his body.

Immediately, Sha Zhao jumped onto the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan and countless insects and small animals covered his body. They scattered, running away and immersing into dirty ponds here and there.

After dozens of seconds, hundreds of thousands of toxic insects and venomous animals had disappeared, leaving only the explosions of the small, round insects that Sha Zhao had released.

"After I recover, I will let you know how it tastes like when you have ten thousand insects nibbling your heart!"

Sha Zhao's shrill came from underground and faded out. While he was screaming, he had run far away. Apparently, he was frightened, indeed.

Chapter 1097: Panic and Upheaval!

Sha Zhao's chest was hurt severely. His Life Divine Gu was also damaged. As his toxic demonic insects couldn't attack Shi Yan's soul altar, he didn't dare to tangle with Shi Yan anymore. When the situation turned bad, he resolutely ran away.

Hundreds of thousands of toxic insects squirmed into the dark swarm and drilled thousands of meters deep into the ground, scattering everywhere.

The round insects continually exploded, creating violent shockwaves.

Shi Yan was inside the energy tornadoes while starlight chains were patrolling around him and protecting his body.

After the exploding energy ended, the bodies of those insects turned into ashes and they vanished. And now, the other toxic insects were running underground to escape.

In the swamp in front of Shi Yan, the vines of the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan were moving as if they were recovering.

A significant amount of earth and heaven energy from everywhere congregated at the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan, which had an amber hue that naked eyes could see. Since the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was native to this ancient continent, it could heal itself by gathering earth and heaven energy. Right now, it was having a speedy recovery.

Frowning, he glanced at the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan and Shi Yan's eyes turned cold. The murderous aura on his body changed quietly.

A desolate dead intent that was as cold as ice suddenly oozed out from his body and covered every corner around his body. This kind of deadly aura was able to seep into the ground despite the thick layer of soil.

Since the other spirit herbs and grass were all eaten and this ancient continent didn't have living creatures, Shi Yan could urge his power without any barrier.

His Death power Upanishad moved. He became a corpse without any vitality. He gave people a deadly heavy ambiance.

Shang Ying Yue was still hiding. She wanted to refine the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan, but her heart suddenly beat faster. The energy in her body was subdued. She felt so uncomfortable.

Shang Ying Yue quietly sensed for a while. She could feel that her vitality was affected as the full Blood Qi was reduced.

She changed her complexion in fear. She didn't dare to sense further. She gathered her spirit to withstand the power of the Death power Upanishad.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

It felt like a wind of Death had just blown through the area. The temperature dropped and it became chilled to the bone. A strange noise echoed from underground.

Dozens of thousands of demonic insects were dragging him moving underground. Although it was still the murky and dirty wetland, countless insects had dug up the passage so he could move freely underground.

Many insects were glowing in ice blue and dark green lights, lighting up the dark subterranean world.

The Life Gu worms were wiggling inside Sha Zhao's chest, their small claws weaving like the skillful craftsmen patching his wounds, making them stop bleeding.

Ba-dum! Ba-dum! Ba-dum!

Sha Zhao's heart suddenly beat faster. His soul altar swayed hard. Wisps of Soul Consciousness in his Sea of Consciousness turned

into smoke.

His face changed into a green-hue color, his eyes bulging. He clutched his chest and gasped for his breath. He couldn't help but curse loudly.

Deep underground not far from him, many insects and venomous animals were dead, their bodies stiff.

When each of his demonic insects or venomous animals were killed, Sha Zhao felt like he was pricked by a needle. In that short moment, Sha Zhao felt needles thrusting into his flesh thousands of times. This experience wasn't pleasant at all!

Sha Zhao clutched his chest, his face purple. He winced and bared his teeth like an ugly monster. Blood continued to trickle down from his mouth.

He suddenly felt an extreme fear!

A sharp energy wave expanded and reached him from above his head. Sha Zhao's dark eyes lit up for seconds as he was sensing. Suddenly, he roared and screamed.

GRRRRRR!

Just like a beast roaring in a low-pitched voice, countless insects gathered around his body, aligning their bodies and linking with each other.

Those insects used their tiny claws and fangs to connect to each other, bleeding in different colored blood. More than ten thousand insects had congregated into a monster that looked somehow like Sha Zhao.

That monster gathered the energy of blood and flesh from the insects and angled its hand into an iron-like anchor, soaring into the sky.

Shi Yan didn't dare to linger. He spurted out blood that then turned into blood mist, covering the entire insects and small

animals around him.

It was an evil technique of the Go God Sect that was used to cover the aura of demonic insects and venomous animals.

A blood light slashed down from the sky and fell like a meteor, which violently attacked the anchor that the monster had created. Shortly after, the anchor was shattered. The body of the monster, which looked like Sha Zhao, was dismembered. It turned into many demonic insects and toxic animals that ran helter-skelter.

Shi Yan stayed by the muddy pond and squinted to sense. He couldn't catch a glimpse of those insects' auras.

On this ancient continent, the coverage and sensibility of the Soul Consciousness were limited. He couldn't lock Sha Zhao's position accurately. He could only guess his general direction by the number of insects gathering.

Shi Yan guessed that Sha Zhao was where there was the largest crowd of insects. He was correct, indeed.

However, Sha Zhao was cunning enough and the witchcraft techniques of the Gu God Sect were extraordinary so they could hide all the insects.

Shi Yan had chased after him to this area. However, he could only shake his head and sigh as he found that he couldn't force Sha Zhao to get out of his spot.

As Sha Zhao was a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm expert from the Gu God Sect, he was a dangerous character on this ancient continent. At the same time, Sha Zhao was interested in the flaming Origin in Shi Yan's soul. Shi Yan had figured this out right from the beginning.

He knew that it wouldn't go well with Sha Zhao. Thus, he tried to attack Sha Zhao when he wasn't prepared.

The three Bone Thorns had the sharpness of space. Even Sha Zhao who was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm couldn't endure

them. Since Sha Zhao's competence was limited, Shi Yan wanted to seize the chance and kill him. However, everything ended with his failure.

After Shi Yan found the insects moving further away underground to disappear, he decided to return and collect the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

An azure light flashed when he caught a glimpse of beauty. The light blue lightning was clear and pure. It disappeared into a hole leading to the underground like a rainbow.

Shi Yan was baffled for a while. He walked neither fast nor slow towards that area, his face astounded.

That big hole was caused by Shi Yan's bloody sword. It was as big as a basketball yard and was several hundred meters deep underground. It was dark and quiet. Many murky streams were running into the deep hole and carrying leaves and spirit herbs with them. At first glance, the hole was a chaotic area.

A clear blue light glowed inside the hole. It was as bright as the moon and it slightly shook his Ethereal Extent.

He concentrated on sensing. He found that the dazzling star in his Ethereal Extent was bouncing. It became restless in his Ethereal Extent.

That star was evolved from the Star Nucleus and stayed in his Ethereal Extent, becoming a special attraction of his Ethereal Extent.

His understanding of the Ethereal Extent wasn't deep enough. Until now, he hadn't known what was special about his Ethereal Extent. However, after he had arrived in this ancient continent, his co-soul had continued to pour energy into his Ethereal Extent. He could feel the extent enlarging together with the star in it.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

As he had felt the change of the Ethereal Extent, he wanted to

take a better look at it. Suddenly, he heard some strange noise, so he turned his head to see.

In the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan's general direction, Shi Yan saw the flame burning high and torrentially. Although it wasn't the heaven flame, it wasn't less scorching. It was rumbling and burning the rattan, dyeing the entire sky in a fiery red color that looked like the sunset.

Someone was burning the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan!

He understood immediately.

His eyes rolled. He couldn't help but snort. He knew who did that, his face darkening.

Looking at the big hole in front of him, Shi Yan found that the blue light disappeared and the star in his Ethereal Extent didn't vibrate anymore. Turning his head around, he discovered that the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan was being burned. After hesitating, he took a deep breath and released his energy to dash towards its direction.

"Da-ge! Fiery flame happens over there!"

In the corner of the swamp, a muscular man was holding an enormous hammer that was so rigid. He shouted, his voice like a bronze bell ringing. This beefy man was tall and broad. His gold hammer was as big as a windmill with sharp metal spikes, giving people an intimidating look.

However, the man who he called big brother was a lanky but good-looking one. The smile on the corner of his mouth was so charming. He was wearing gorgeous, richly ornamented garments that were obviously customized. It had so many pieces of beautiful jade decorating his hem. It gave him both elegant and imposing looks at the same time. This man was indeed particular.

"That furious flaming energy will draw the attention of many

people. Yeah, it should be something good then."

The handsome man smiled. He licked his lips, his eyes suddenly turning red. "Let's go hunting!"

"Haha, it's so good." The muscular man thundered and dashed with his gigantic hammer.

The other side of the swamp.

Inside a dirty puddle, the mud in the wetland moved all of a sudden. A humanoid creature slowly emerged while mud oozed down its body. His eyes were so sharp and icy like sabers.

He rose from the middle of the mud pond like a clay statue, coldly watching the red sky over there.

After a while, he swayed back to the dirty pond like a white eel swimming inside the mud. His body was as soft and flexible as the snake. While moving through the murky pond, he didn't cause any ripple.

The wet mud splashed and its water evaporated immediately. Smoke and fire burst up to the red sky, creating a massive lantern that covered the entire Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

Not far from the rattan was the elegant gait of Shang Ying Yue. She was frowning while a blood-red ring on her porcelain wrist fired scorching flames at the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

Many vines of the rattan were dried and cracked. The flames burned them down. Slowly, something appeared from the cracked vines.

Shang Ying Yue's beautiful eyes had a strange light. She was stirred up.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was crucial to her. This time she got to this ancient continent, she must find many things. The

Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was one of them. She had to try to get it at any cost.

Thus, even though she knew that Shi Yan could return at any minute, she couldn't control her stirring desire. She immediately showed herself and used the secret treasures to refine the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

However, she didn't expect that her rushing actions could make the sky look like it was burning. It had alarmed some thugs who couldn't be here after just a short moment.

Chapter 1098: Forcefully Seize

The sky was vivid and red with flames shooting up into the sky. The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan's bark slowly cracked, revealing the hairline ice threads.

The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan had so many vines. After they were refined, there appeared countless ice-blue threads that were magnificently beautiful silk fibers in a fulgent blue-crystal hue. Those silky threads carried a faint soul energy fluctuation. They were magical Original Incipient Grade materials.

Shang Ying Yue's eyes were brilliant. Her face was filled with joy. She continued to burn the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan while taking out some rhombus crystals.

The rhombus crystals looked like long, narrow eyes that flew out of her white hand, falling towards the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

The lozenge crystals moved quietly, rolling the Hundred Kalpa Soul Threads around like when people rolled fibers around a core and connected many fibers together.

Watching the crystals rolling the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, Shang Ying Yue's beautiful eyes were filled with thrill. She pulled herself together and tried to burn more vines.

As she knew Shi Yan could come back at any minute, she hurried to finish the rattan to avoid Shi Yan's sudden attack.

While hiding in the dark to observe Shi Yan and Sha Zhao's battle, her attitude towards Shi Yan changed completely!

When she first met Shi Yan, she didn't put him in her eyes because he had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base. Before they had entered the ancient continent, she had made up her mind to not leave Shi Yan in peace.

And she did that.

As Shi Yan had proactively avoided her at first, she was more certain that Shi Yan's realm was low as well as his competence. This ancient continent had many high-level Ethereal God Realm experts and Shi Yan was at the lowest level of the food chain. She thought that everybody could bully him.

However, Shi Yan had beaten Sha Zhao up...

Of course, she knew that Shi Yan had used cunning tricks. He had ambushed Sha Zhao first. Anyway, Sha Zhao was defeated.

Moreover, Shi Yan was cruel and malicious. Seeing that his first attack didn't finish the enemy, he had tried to eradicate Sha Zhao with more attacks when Sha Zhao was hurt severely.

She realized that Shi Yan wasn't easy to deal with... While collecting the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, Shang Ying Yue was vigilant and ready to counterattack in any minute.

All of a sudden, her soul shivered in fear!

Shang Ying Yue's face changed in fright. She looked gingerly and focused while lightning beams creeping on her graceful body like dragons. She looked like she had electric rings illuminating her body.

A flow of cold and desolate aura flooded from everywhere and ran directly into her hearts and Sea of Consciousness.

Shang Ying Yue was shaken.

Inside her head arose a bloody, mountain-like word that said: "Die." It furiously barged on her Sea of Consciousness.

That word "Die" was bloody and carrying the energy of brutal, crazy, bloodthirsty feelings, which had struck her mind. She was baffled and it was as if her soul had been smashed. Her energy was running like water overflowing the broken dike.

Murderous intent intruded her brain, occupying her tier of power Upanishad and making her flustered.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Lightning arose in her Ethereal Extent. Billions of lightning strikes directly drilled through her tier of power Upanishad and Sea of Consciousness to act on the word "Die" and to counterattack the flooding negative emotions.

Countless icicles were floating and stirring in the cold and dark sea in her Ethereal Extent. They sent the icy energy into her soul to wake it up.

Her beautiful eyes sparkled. She touched her forehead.

The Ethereal Extent made of billions of lightning strikes arose above her head and covered the entire vivid red sky. Lightning strikes turned into wild dragons, roaring and soaring bravely as if they wanted to destroy earth and heaven.

This flaming piece of land appeared to have the Lightning Disaster, which could destruct the entire area. Thousands of massive electric dragons were roaring and fiercely plunging towards a young man who was sauntering from a distance.

That young man was Shi Yan.

He used the Death power Upanishad with the negative emotions and intruded Shang Ying Yue's head. He knew that he would receive the most violent attack, but he had underestimated Shang Ying Yue.

Seeing countless beams of lightning dashing over, his body felt like it had become a massive heart that throbbed grumbly. The Immortal Demon Blood in his body moved like liquid steel. It gave him a massive amount of energy. With this energy, he calmed his mind and generated a space barrier.

Each ripple was a layer of space confinement. Shi Yan was making many hand seals and dozens of space confining layers floated up.

The massive lightning dragons stormed over and tried their best

to tear and destroy the layers of space confinements. However, they slowed down.

"Lock!"

He lifted his head and pointed at the sea of fire where flames rolled torrentially from Shang Ying Yue's secret treasures. Instantaneously, the flames were frozen and didn't dance anymore.

Shi Yan's ten fingers wiggled, pulling the rhombus crystals, which were taking the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, towards him. Shi Yan had taken the spoils that Shang Ying Yue had to work hard to get.

Boom!

A lightning rod tore the sky, lashing over from a far distance. Shi Yan's space barriers were ripped off in just a blink of an eye.

The Soul Consciousness with space energy moved with trouble while Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was chaotic. The tier of powers Upanishad was shaking hard. Shi Yan felt like some small knives were giving him terrible pain and cutting his soul.

Shi Yan's trembled, his face dark and cold. "Worthy of your Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base!"

An attack from Shang Ying Yue's divine, lightning weapon had hurt him instantly. Many wisps of his Soul Consciousness were destroyed shortly, making his soul feeble for a moment. The power of a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior and her divine weapon piled up which included the Ethereal Extent. Shi Yan couldn't bear the overwhelming attack.

"Hand back the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread!" Shang Ying Yue shivered and said through her gritted teeth.

Billions of shadows of that lightning rod appeared above Shi Yan's head. It weaved and made a thick mesh net, putting pressure on him with the energy that could kill all kinds of creatures.

Even an ordinary Incipient God Realm expert couldn't resist this strike.

Warriors who could enter the ancient continent were all top famous Ethereal God Realm experts of the great star areas. Usually, they were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but sometimes, their powers surpassed their realms.

Shang Ying Yue was one of those warriors.

She had a divine weapon too. When she struck her attack with her Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivation base, the lethality was earth-shattering.

Shi Yan's face darkened. Murderous aura gushed out from his body like a blood sea. The blood Qi in his body could be compared to that of immemorial beasts that were extremely abundant. He was urging his Immortal Demon Blood to transform to the Immortal Demon Body.

Shang Ying Yue was so powerful!

"Da-ge, this woman is really strong!"

A voice thundered from a far distance. Then, they saw a giant gold hammer with a lot of spikes like a golden hedgehog fly towards them. After each second, the giant hammer's energy was doubled. The energy in that giant hammer, which was as big as a windmill, could blow off a small mineral star.

Boom!

The massive hammer fell like a meteor piercing through the atmosphere, hitting on the shadows of the lightning rod in the sky. The void was shattered when lightning beams and gold lights bloomed. The ground cracked and countless deep ditches appeared.

A beefy man came in laughing. He wore golden armor which made him look like a heavenly guardian. The sharp metal Qi emitted from his body, which could pierce through any rigid

things of this world.

"Da-ge, it's the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan!"

The muscular guy blinked and laughed loudly, his voice like the sound of a big bell. "Interesting!"

As Shang Ying Yue was attacking Shi Yan, he had the option to wait for them. After the two of them were hurt, he could appear and clear the scene. However, he didn't do that. He had interfered when Shang Ying Yue had urged her energy to the utmost. It seemed like the brawny man wanted to show off his tyrannical, brutal face.

That man looked big and rough, but he wasn't too old. He had a stubborn and wild appearance. He stomped the ground grumbly like an avalanche.

He rose his hand and grabbed the gigantic hammer. He guffawed at Shang Ying Yue, "You're strong. I like strong girls."

"You're sick!"

Shang Ying Yue scolded, her face cold. She turned to Shi Yan. "Hand me that thing. If you don't, don't blame me for what's going to happen!"

"The Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan belongs to our brothers. We've found it, but we have some personal business that we haven't taken care of yet," said an elegant, handsome man while he was strolling toward them.

Shi Yan felt funny as he didn't know whether to cry or smile. He looked at the brawny man appearing from nowhere and paused his energy accumulation. Then, Shi Yan watched the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan.

After Shang Ying Yue's fire had burned it down, the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan now existed in the form of many gray-blue threads fluttering around the area. At the area where the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan used to be, the ground was

covered with many fulgent, sparkling silky fibers. They were the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, which was releasing some faint soul energy fluctuations.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread were thin and tiny. There were more than ten thousand fibers. Shang Ying Yue had collected one-fifth of them, which Shi Yan had already stashed in his Fantasy Sky Ring.

There were still a lot of them on the ground. However, it wasn't easy to get them all.

Recently, when he held the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread in his hand, his tier of powers Upanishad had some magical vibes that proved that the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread had some wonderful effects to the tier of powers Upanishads. Shi Yan paid more attention to the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread

"There are still four-fifth of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. If you want, come take it."

Shi Yan said calmly and shook his head at Shang Ying Yue, "You can't take things in my hands. If you want, you can take those remaining on the ground, but I'm sure you will struggle to get them."

"Nah, it's not true," said the beautiful man who had just arrived. Pausing for a while, he frowned, "Someone can't hold it anymore!"

Just like a wisp of the departed spirit, he gloomily floated and bobbed towards the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. A frightening pale halo expanded from his eyes as his aura was extremely dangerous.

"Someone is underground," the beefy man laughed indifferently. "Well, it's funnier with more people. No matter how many come, that thing will belong to me and my da-ge."

Shi Yan frowned and glanced in a direction. He found a mud statue slowly emerge from a puddle on the ground with only a pair

of cold eyes without human emotions.

Chapter 1099: Soul Kalpa

The mud statue was hidden inside the swamp. When Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue were fighting, it had started to collect the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread.

When the unknown brothers came, the mud statue stopped for a while, but it couldn't hold its desire for a long time. It tried to collect more of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread right after that.

The way he was collecting the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread wasn't similar to Shang Ying Yue's method. The mud statue opened his mouth to spurt out a muddy brook, which acted like a small, soft hand that grabbed the sparkling blue-ice silky threads and shoved them into his mouth.

This mud statue seemed to have mastered the power of mud and sand, especially the powers of Earth. As he was swallowing some of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, the amount of Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread on the ground was reduced.

The good-looking man aimed at him right after he made the first utterance with Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan. It was because the mud statue had high productivity in collecting the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. If he had more time, there would be nothing left for those people to harvest.

The good-looking man was not the only one who could feel something wrong. Shang Ying Yue also gave up Shi Yan and dashed towards the mud statue, her face indignant.

Only the brawny young man could still grin. He looked indifferent as if he had absolute belief in his big brother.

Splosh! Splosh! Splosh!

Strange but marvelous energy surged torrentially from the puddles around them. The immense gray energy of Earth burst off like a divine brush that drew the giant hand that could shade the

entire sky.

That massive hand was made of wet mud and moist soil. It was the anger of the God of Earth with Earth power. Right when it appeared, the ground under people's feet shook violently. Everybody trembled hard. They felt their chests being hammered, making them feel like suffocating.

Someone was using the power of Earth and sending the vibes through the ground to enter people's souls.

Apparently, the one who was using Earth power was that mud statue. With a pair of cold and indifferent eyes, he glanced at the good-looking man who was dashing towards him.

Six gigantic hands like massive mountain ranges emerged with the palms facing the others and arms jutting directly from the ground. Their five fingers were gray with dust and tremendous power, which could even crush the entire mountain.

Six massive hands were moving in the swamp as if they had the soul. Thirty fingers created the strange hand seal that seemed to seal this entire planet.

The handsome man floated like a ghost. He squinted and beamed a faint smile.

A fan appeared in his hand, which was neither made of gold nor jade. It was made of some unknown material. The exquisite drawings on the fan of the mountain and lakes were changing continually.

Shortly after, the drawings on the fan were like thousands of flowers blooming inside a quiet valley. The drawings switched between mountainous areas to fairy-like castles. This fan was as magical as an Ethereal Extent.

The changing images on the fan stopped.

Eventually, clear blue rivers appeared on the fan, which was meandering like spirit snakes and elongating everywhere to

unknown regions.

When Shi Yan pulled himself together to watch, he didn't see the fan anymore. He saw heavenly blue rivers on the horizon of the swamp. Those heavenly rivers were several thousand meters long and they were so crystal clear that he could even see their bottom, which had many shining rocks. It gave people a peaceful feeling in their souls.

Boom!

All of a sudden, the rivers interchanged, impressively pouring from the horizon. People could see heavenly rivers like blue ribbons powerfully shooting at the mountain-like hands.

A chain of tremors that could shake the mountain swarmed over. Shi Yan stood far from them but still saw his body shake hard. He was even blown away. Gradually, he couldn't see the area of that fierce battle anymore. He could only see the increasing earth-shaking energy fluctuations.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan sensed for a while. All of a sudden, he opened his eyes and dashed away resolutely.

The realm and power of the mud statue and the good-looking man weren't something ordinary warriors could compare to. They weren't weaker than Shang Ying Yue. They could be even stronger than her.

He was at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. In Agate Star Area, he dared to fight against an ordinary First Sky of Incipient God Realm. However, the warriors in this area were all geniuses of the great star areas around the universe. Their real competences had even surpassed their realms. Shi Yan knew both the mud statue and the handsome man was as strong as him.

Still, there were Shang Ying Yue and the muscular man with his hammer who wasn't weaker than Shang Ying Yue. The four people who were competing for the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread were all

brilliant warriors.

He didn't want to stir up this murky puddle.

Making up his mind, he wasn't hesitant to leave. Flying like a dark light, Shi Yan glided over the swamp and got further away from that area.

On this planet, the Sea of Consciousness was affected. They needed good eyesight to find the hiding enemy. Once he could go far enough, his opponents wouldn't be able to use the Soul Consciousness to lock his location or find him.

He left silently so when the other four found his aura disappear, he traveled a far distance already. Thus, he wasn't hurried.

The ancient continent kept many marvelous treasures and the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan wasn't the only Original Incipient Grade materials. There were more awaiting him to find. He shouldn't risk his life so early.

Shortly after, he left the battle site and moved gingerly towards the massive hole that the other had created before.

His thoughts flickered. He took out the lozenge crystals with some of the beautiful ice-blue Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. Blue light continued to sparkle from the crystals with the faint soul energy that had surprised people.

Holding the book that Shang Chen had given him, he frowned and studied it carefully. After a while, his Soul Consciousness flickered again.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was the soul threads of the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan. It was somehow similar to the soul threads of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. However, their functions were different. According to Shang Chen's document, the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread could amend a soul altar. Warriors at a profound level could have their soul altar crack as a result of a serious damage...

The soul was the basic foundation of a warrior and the soul altar was where his Essence Qi, Spirit, and Soul gathered. It was the most important thing.

When the soul altar had cracks, the warrior would find it hard to increase his or her realm further. His or her power Upanishad would even shatter. When a warrior fell into bedevilment condition, his soul altar would be damaged or even end up collapsing.

Taking the former Pavilion Masters of Potion and Tool Pavilion as examples, their soul altars collapsed as the result of their failures in refining and forging treasures. They had to turn into a flow of a drifting soul to survive, which vanished into the universe after some time.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread could patch the cracks. If they had more Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, together with the other Original Incipient Grade materials, they could rebuild a soul altar. It was the same as rebirthing. The warriors with soul altars all had a profound realm, but the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was really precious to them as it could fix their soul altar.

In the great star areas, the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was a peculiarly rare item that was scarce and in high demand. It was the top treasure that many people had yearned for.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread had another function. It could urge the natural Kalpa in the Ethereal Extent. It could make the powers Upanishad attack the Ethereal Extent to quench it, which would help warriors increase their usage of the abilities of their powers Upanishads.

While the warriors were battling others, the Ethereal Extent could be a big help as it could change their powers Upanishad to increase their attacks and their overall competence.

The Ethereal Extent was unrivaled and marvelous. Until now, nobody had explored all the mysterious abilities of it. The Hundred

Kalpa Soul Thread took one hundred years for a Kalpa. And it would have a disaster for each Kalpa. After one hundred Kalpas, it had lived for ten thousand years. At that time, the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan could have intelligence. After each Kalpa, it could generate some Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread.

Thus, the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread could also make the Ethereal Extent experience the Kalpa, which would quench it and make it tougher.

Shi Yan blinked. Dozens of fulgent soul threads on the lozenge crystals flew out and entered his eyes and his Sea of Consciousness. They traveled through the tier of power Upanishad to reach the Ethereal Extent. They were about to get into the Ethereal Extent. Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent had a big change.

The starry sea inside his fantasy world suddenly had many lightning strikes, sharp wind blades, windstorm, weaving lights, and surging flames. All the powerful energies were burst out of the same time, wreaking havoc in his Ethereal Extent. They seemed to attempt to destroy his Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan's face changed. He didn't think much but he found a murky pond. He entered and hid several thousand meters underground.

Thunderbolts struck inside his Ethereal Extent while fire surged up to the sky. Wind blades and ice mountains also attacked everywhere. Countless attacks made of Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth, storm, ice, and lightning had struck Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent directly. It seemed to tear his sea of stars, causing an intense pain that almost broke Shi Yan's spirit.

Taking a deep breath to gather his mind, Shi Yan used his Space, Death and Life, and Star powers Upanishads as the basic foundation to change and generate different abilities of the three powers Upanishad to resist the madly violent energies in his Ethereal Extent.

This was a Kalpa to Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent, also a quenching time of Nature to his Powers Upanishads he must undergo.

The Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread could trigger the Ethereal Extent's Kalpa to strictly train the soul. If he could get over this great challenge, his soul would be incredibly strong. His soul altar could transform and he could even reach the new realm.

Initially, he came here to find the blue light that had given him a strange feeling. Because he had underestimated the power of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, he had fallen into a passive situation that forced him to get underground to cultivate.

However, the battle on the ground between Shang Ying Yue and the others were so furious that they weren't free to mind him.

Under the swamp, Shi Yan was covered in layers of wet, doughy mud like a ball. From time to time, that muddy ball shivered and released immense life energy fluctuation.

Shi Yan's body didn't have a significant change, but his soul altar was changing dramatically as his Ethereal Extent was like a ruin that different energies were hitting hard and bringing deadly dangers.

His thoughts changed. The brilliant galaxy Ethereal Extent gathered countless twinkling stars that created a star area, which vaguely looked like a bow and an arrow. It was so massive and imposing like a mountain, a river, or even a beast. That galaxy changed continually as if it wanted to showcase the marvelous power of Nature.

The star bow and arrow emerged, shooting out a vivid bright arrow that was made of many meteors. In just a blink, it crushed all the mountains and rivers in his Ethereal Extent.

The Star power Upanishad changed continuously by his thoughts, releasing incredible lethality.

Shi Yan was focused and trying to learn the magical features of

the power to catch a glimpse of the Star power Upanishad. He wanted to use the Star power Upanishad to withstand the Kalpa of his Ethereal Extent and train his will.

Chapter 1100: Break the Shackles

In the other corner, the peculiar man with mud covering his body suddenly sank into the ground. Disappearing with him was half of the amount of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. Six giant hands pressed down like imposing mountains that sent away the energy that could seal the entire sky.

The shining rivers crossing the sky moved like sparkling chains with sharp auras that attempted to wrap the imposing hands. Thunderclaps echoed while a lightning rod danced in the middle of the sky.

The beefy man had a large build and it was as tough as iron and steel. With the giant hammer in his hand, he grinned and stayed aside. He didn't want to join this battle, anyway.

The good-looking man frowned and looked at the six imposing hands disappearing into the ground. He sensed for a while and then said, "This man is dangerous."

"Da-ge, you can't hold him?" shouted the muscular man.

"He cultivates Earth power Upanishad and he knows the surroundings well. His energy and power Upanishad can mingle with the muddy pond well. It's hard to force him out." The handsome man shook his head. "It's hard to deal with this man. Yeah, the warriors that come to the ancient continent this time are all top warriors of the big star areas."

"Da-ge, how about those Hundred Kalpa Soul Threads?" the brawny man grinned.

There were still many crystal clear Hundred Kalpa Soul Threads covering the muddy pond, even after the mud statue had taken half. Perhaps it was why the handsome man didn't murder Shang Ying Yue.

The remaining amount of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread was

glowing faintly. Shang Ying Yue was standing there with an icy countenance.

Shang Ying Yue had a cold face as she was too indignant. She hated that she couldn't kill all the people here.

She had found the Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan first. But Shi Yan and Sha Zhao had bothered her too much. Shi Yan took a part of the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread and the mud statue took half of the remaining. There weren't many threads lying there. And the two mysterious brothers were gazing at them.

Shang Ying Yue was so angry that she wanted to spit blood.

The good-looking man rubbed his chin. He pondered for a while and then guffawed, "We will take half of them."

The man holding the massive hammer was surprised.

Shang Ying Yue was also astounded.

"We will take half. Everyone who sees it should receive a share of it. Leave some for her," said the man with a smile.

The muscular man was surprised, but he didn't argue. He seemed annoyed, but he walked over to take half of the remaining Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. Then, he turned to the other man, "Da-ge?"

"Let's go." The handsome man's eyes drilled at Shang Ying Yue. He said, "I'm Wu Feng. Please send my regards to your father. Tell him I miss him."

Then, he and the muscular man and left.

"Wu Feng... Wu Feng..." Shang Ying Yue was dumbstruck. She furrowed her bold brows and thought for a while. She discolored as if she recalled something. She looked fearful, indeed.

"Da-ge, who is she? We could have killed her and taken all the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. It's not your style."

After they left, Wu Bai, the younger brother, shouted at his brother.

"If we killed her, we would receive a lot of trouble later. We'd better stay away from trouble." The handsome man called Wu Feng felt funny.

"Who is she?"

"Shang Ying Yue."

"Never heard before."

"Kid, you've been grounded to cultivate year round, so you don't know many things. Her father cultivates Fate power Upanishad. He can touch the spiderweb of fate, which is really magical. Her mother also has a strong background. When I was out to experience, her father used to help me once. I owe him."

"Da-ge was it the time you got stuck in Original God Realm and couldn't break into Ethereal God Realm. He guided you that time?"

"Yeah, that time."

"Oh, you owe them a favor then. No wonder why you didn't kill her."

After Shang Ying Yue had stashed away the leftover Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread, her cold face got less tense. She took a deep breath and pondered for a while. She took out a rhombus mirror, which was made of the same material as the rhombus crystals she used to collect the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. This mirror seemed to be able to contact the other crystals.

A flow of icy breath was spread on the mirror. A white-metal halo expanded and projected something blurry.

She pulled the mirror close to her face to see. Her beautiful eyes brightened as she sneered. "Well well well, you're having bad luck that you're undergoing the Ethereal Kalpa at this moment."

Just like a cold light, she quietly flew out of this place and headed in Shi Yan's direction. The murderous aura diffused from her soft body.

One hour later.

Shang Ying Yue wore a long water blue dress. Her cold face gazed at a murky puddle under her feet. She made an ice cube to be her foothold so she didn't need to step on the dirty water.

Her picturesque brows twitched. A white ring on her wrist shook for a while. Then, many ice sheets were generated as thin as a blade. They were gloomy and cold with flashes of lightning. All of a sudden, they plunged down to the muddy pond.

Swoosh!

A barrier exploded. An ice blade was smashed and it caused an explosion.

There was a barrier!

Shang Ying Yue's eyes sparkled. More feather-thin icy blades appeared. They all thrust into the ground with a chilling aura.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Countless thunderbolts exploded. Under her energy, they all got underground and stirred up the entire area.

Deep underground, Shi Yan was covered inside a big chunk of dried mud. He shivered all of a sudden.

The co-soul flew out of his soul altar and floated up over the muddy puddle.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The co-soul looked like a peculiar spirit flame. It was a multicolor fireball with magnificent life energy fluctuation.

Abruptly, scorching flames flew out and moved in the sky, making a seething sea of fire. The fire of the Origin burned all the

wetland and mud around, causing them to crack. The thick earth and heaven energy of the ancient continent had become the body of that flame. It all congregated in a significant amount.

Within seconds, the water-like dense earth and heaven energy gathered and created a misty body that covered the flaming soul.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The block of energy as big as half a leaf fan with incredibly dense energy flowed towards Shang Ying Yue.

Lightning and the blocks of energy impacted and exploded. The ground was bombarded by shockwaves of the impacts.

Shang Ying Yue was frightened.

The flaming soul that had flown out of Shi Yan's body could use the energy of this ancient continent at ease. With this power, it could create different violent attacks that had made Shang Ying Yue struggle a lot.

Shang Ying Yue suddenly felt wrong: this man was the owner of the ancient continent!

If he wasn't the Master of the ancient continent, he wouldn't be able to mobilize the energy of the ancient continent and attack anyone as he pleased like this, right?

Her fear made Shi Yan excited in thrill.

His co-soul was the fused form of the Origin and the heaven flames. It was the core of Grace Mainland and Grace Mainland was one of the ancient continents, which came from the same origin as this ancient continent called Desolate.

It was the reason why when his co-soul got out of his body, it had also got rid of the invisible shackles and was able to control the immense energy of this area. The co-soul could use the energy in his area to create mighty attacks and lock Shang Ying Yue's commotion.

Without the restraint of the body, Shi Yan let his co-soul fly out. It felt like a blind man had just got his sight back.

When the host soul and the co-soul were still in his body, he couldn't sense the life energy around. It was like an invisible barrier that restricted him from using his Soul Consciousness to detect the others' commotions.

—— It was a tough headache that everyone entered the ancient continent had to face.

However, when his co-soul detached from his body, it seemed to break those shackles. It seemed like the co-soul was part of this ancient continent. Through the co-soul, he could simply sense the commotion of the surrounding ten thousand miles.

The ten thousand miles around still consisted of immense swamps with many incredible existences. It wasn't like what he had observed before. Those life energy fluctuations were hiding in many corners or gathering in hordes. Shi Yan sensed for a while and had a conclusion: A part of warriors who had entered this ancient continent had joined hands!

This finding astounded him. As they were all outstanding Ethereal God Realm warriors of the great star areas, facing even one was already a headache. If they joined hands, it would be a huge struggle for him.

Boom!

An earth and heaven energy punch, which was one thousand meters big, forcefully struck Shang Ying Yue and smashed her lightning power.

The energy of the co-soul was reduced. Shi Yan immediately knew that the co-soul couldn't control the earth and heaven energy endlessly. It required Soul Consciousness and Essence Qi of the soul. Shi Yan knew that he couldn't use the relationship between the co-soul and the ancient continent to be invincible.

"Don't be noisy anymore! Are you done yet?" The co-soul released the furious soul energy and focused on Shang Ying Yue.

"I am noisy? It's you who is causing me trouble!" Shang Ying Yue said with a cold countenance. "You took the Guiding Fruit that belongs to us. You peeped on me when I was in the pond. You robbed my Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread. Who is making noise here?"

"Your father shoved the Guiding Fruit at me. I heard you screaming so I came to check your situation. I was worried that something bad would happen to you. Don't you see that? Why did I take your Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread? If you didn't let Sha Zhao know about my whereabouts, should I have risked my life against him? You were right in everything that happened? What kind of logic is that?"

Shi Yan took a deep breath and then said, "This is the last time I will remind you. The experts around here are joining hands. Only death awaits you and me. Moreover, a team is heading to us. Our fighting will be a prominent landmark to guide them. If you don't want to die, please stay quiet!"

"Someone is coming?" Shang Ying Yue smiled faintly and mocked. "Don't tell me you can sense the surroundings. As far as I know, no one could sense the auras of the experts on this planet. Can you do that? What kind of realm do you have?"

"Believe it or not, it's up to you." Shi Yan sent her the message impatiently. "Around five hundred miles away, someone is coming. If we don't fight, they can't locate us. You can go there to check. I need to cultivate more so I'll stay here."

Then, his co-soul slowly lowered and disappeared into the muddy puddle.

Shang Ying Yue hesitated for a while. She snorted and left to check his information.

Table of Contents

[God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 1001: Eat Meat](#)

[Chapter 1002: The Blood Blade Comes Out of its Sheath](#)

[Chapter 1003: Better Not to Meet](#)

[Chapter 1004: Giving Energy](#)

[Chapter 1005: The Thunder God Spear](#)

[Chapter 1006: Who Can Endure a Battle?](#)

[Chapter 1007: The Giant Blood Shield](#)

[Chapter 1008: Receive Help From a Savior](#)

[Chapter 1009: The Shield has Become Heavier...](#)

[Chapter 1010: When Words Get Sore, Adding More Words is Useless](#)

[Chapter 1011: Shadow Ghostly Prison](#)

[Chapter 1012: Dark Shadow Clan](#)

[Chapter 1013: Proactively Kill!](#)

[Chapter 1014: A Youngster of the Dark Clan](#)

[Chapter 1015: We Seem to Have Some Relations...](#)

[Chapter 1016: Break the Ice!](#)

[Chapter 1017: The Shocking Secrets!](#)

[Chapter 1018: Traceable to the Same Stock](#)

[Chapter 1019: Destruction Power Upanishad](#)

[Chapter 1020: Women's Intuition](#)

[Chapter 1021: The First Generation](#)

[Chapter 1022: Caning the passionate couple?](#)

[Chapter 1023: You look like my lady, who has been missing for years...](#)

[Chapter 1024: A kiss for one hundred years](#)

[Chapter 1025: Play to the gallery?](#)

[Chapter 1026: Frantic!](#)

[Chapter 1027: Come with me!](#)

[Chapter 1028: Renovator](#)

[Chapter 1029: Crystal Eater](#)

[Chapter 1030: Protect the Territory](#)

[Chapter 1031: A Bloody Battle](#)

[Chapter 1032: That Blood Shield Again...](#)

[Chapter 1033: I Can Deal With Him!](#)
[Chapter 1034: A Delighted Fight!](#)
[Chapter 1035: The Perfect Shape](#)
[Chapter 1036: The Bloody Massacre](#)
[Chapter 1037: A Great Ruckus](#)
[Chapter 1038: The Shadow Ghostly Prison is Boiling!](#)
[Chapter 1039: Accumulating Energy](#)
[Chapter 1040: Allied forces](#)
[Chapter 1041: Ethereal Extent](#)
[Chapter 1042: Going Out](#)
[Chapter 1043: Shoulder the responsibility](#)
[Chapter 1044: The remains of the Holy Beast](#)
[Chapter 1045: The change of the co-soul](#)
[Chapter 1046: Cutting space](#)
[Chapter 1047: Poisonous Sea](#)
[Chapter 1048: Departed Spirit Jellyfish](#)
[Chapter 1049: The Fountainhead of Powers Upanishad](#)
[Chapter 1050: Reverse in Just a Flash](#)
[Chapter 1051: The Talkative Woman](#)
[Chapter 1052: A Whole Entity](#)
[Chapter 1053: Able to Break Any Unyielding Thing!](#)
[Chapter 1054: The Ones Who Cross the Border](#)
[Chapter 1055: Refine the Sea](#)
[Chapter 1056: See the Sunlight Again](#)
[Chapter 1057: Meeting the Enemy Head-on](#)
[Chapter 1058: Her Graceful Bearing](#)
[Chapter 1059: Battling](#)
[Chapter 1060: Leona's Spearhead!](#)
[Chapter 1061: I Say You Can Do it so You Can Do it!](#)
[Chapter 1062: Really... I Didn't do it Intentionally...](#)
[Chapter 1063: Burn Your Hand, Feel the Heat](#)
[Chapter 1064: I'm Not Resigned to That!](#)
[Chapter 1065: Divine Light](#)
[Chapter 1066: A Divine Crystal Mineral Lode](#)
[Chapter 1067: Holding Hostage](#)
[Chapter 1068: The Two Women](#)
[Chapter 1069: Poison-dipped Cold Bead](#)
[Chapter 1070: Dispel the Former Hatred](#)
[Chapter 1071: Spreading](#)

[Chapter 1072: Dissolve](#)
[Chapter 1073: Old friends](#)
[Chapter 1074: The dream they once had](#)
[Chapter 1075: A competition of envy](#)
[Chapter 1076: Three flames unite](#)
[Chapter 1077: Build the formation](#)
[Chapter 1078: Pressure-resistant](#)
[Chapter 1079: Better to fight once!](#)
[Chapter 1080: Topple the beliefs](#)
[Chapter 1081: Link Up](#)
[Chapter 1082: Talented Field Commander!](#)
[Chapter 1083: Meditate and calm the soul](#)
[Chapter 1084: Gu He](#)
[Chapter 1085: Soul Incantations](#)
[Chapter 1086: The Fate Traveler](#)
[Chapter 1087: Great Sage](#)
[Chapter 1088: Soul Rotting Aphids](#)
[Chapter 1089: Desolate](#)
[Chapter 1090: Outstanding Talents](#)
[Chapter 1091: Ancient Continent](#)
[Chapter 1092: Refine Blood](#)
[Chapter 1093: Hundred Kalpa Ghost Hand Rattan](#)
[Chapter 1094: The Gu God Sect](#)
[Chapter 1095: Do You Have Some More?](#)
[Chapter 1096: A Sudden Fatal Attack!](#)
[Chapter 1097: Panic and Upheaval!](#)
[Chapter 1098: Forcefully Seize](#)
[Chapter 1099: Soul Kalpa](#)
[Chapter 1100: Break the Shackles](#)